



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 12

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1101 – Dragon Sword's Storm

Jiang Chen was too powerful, it had gone beyond their expectation, but that didn't scare them. After all, their forces outnumbered them and their attacks weren't the strongest of all. They believed that as long as they sent the most powerful attack together, Jiang Chen wouldn't stand a chance and would end up dead eventually.

However, such thoughts would be very soon crushed by the reality.

“Everyone , listen up, kill them. Eradicate Huang Family!”

Naturally, Yan Dongliu couldn't stay stunned for long. Today was the final battle between the Prefecture and Huang Family, which was going to decide the ruler of Yan City. Even though Jiang Chen was keeping the three Heaven Immortals busy, they couldn't underestimate the overall strength of Huang Family's forces. A bloodshed was inevitable tonight. So, they might as well play along in this intense battle.

While it was true that Huang Family's force was more powerful than the Prefecture's, it wasn't a match for the Prefecture's forces because of a Heaven Immortal expert, Yan Dongliu was with them. Although Yan Dongliu had been affected psychologically earlier on, he wasn't the enemy that the other Huang Family experts could handle.

“Kill them!!!”

Screams reverberated through the night. The cruelest battle had finally begun in this rainy night after so many years of conflict. There would be a clear winner today. Whether it was in Saint Origin World or Immortal World, a battle such as this would always be the cruelest. In this battle, either it was the enemy die or you die. Jiang Chen had already experienced this kind of battle too many times, and comparing those battles that he had encountered

to this – it was nothing at all.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Both sides clashed with one another and wails were heard immediately. Red blood was gushing out from the wounds continuously. It combined with the rain water, becoming the saddest and most beautiful color in this darkness. It was bloody and cold.

The forces of Huang Family lacked fighting spirit because Jiang Chen was able to handle three Heaven Immortal experts. It had brought them tremendous pressure dealing with an expert like Yan Dongliu. Therefore, it was hard for them to fully exert their power under such condition.

As for the Prefecture’s side, they were all prepared to die in this battle. A moment ago, Jiang Chen had given them great hope, boosting their fighting spirit enormously. Comparing them to Huang Family’s forces, it was like the difference between north and south.

Additionally, Yan Dongliu was just too strong. He was able to kill the enemy’s half-step Heaven Immortal experts as easily as slaughtering chickens.

Above the sky, another intense battle was going on. Huang Ying and the other two had struck out their most powerful attack. They had already tried this for several times, however, all of their attacks were blocked by Jiang Chen. No, they weren’t blocked, they were deflected by Jiang Chen’s attack instead.

That’s right. The fact remained that even with the three of them combining, it didn’t give them any advantage over Jiang Chen, even until now, no scratches were found on Jiang Chen’s body, they were the ones who got shoved backwards by their enemy’s attack instead, causing their blood and Qi to roll disorderly. They were now feeling very unpleasant which they couldn’t put into words.

“I will not play with you guys anymore.”

Jiang Chen’s killing intent was stifling. With a sound of ‘Hua La’, the dazzling Heavenly Saint Sword materialized. Dragon marks rippled on the surface of the metal and howled continuously, making it look like a true dragon.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen moved, his Flaming Wings fluttered at maximum speed, so fast that he seemed to have bent the time dimension. He appeared before Huang Second in a blink and slashed forward.

“Not good.”

Huang Second knew the danger, he could feel Jiang Chen’s power. This strike carried more power than he could ever imagine. This was Jiang Chen’s full-force strike. It contained the power of 320 000 dragon marks and the Heavenly Saint Sword.

As Jiang Chen was moving too fast, Huang Ying and Yuan Hong didn’t have the time to respond. After all, this was their first time cooperating. There wasn’t much tacit understanding among them. If the three of them perfectly understood each other, three early Heaven Immortal experts could surely fight against Jiang Chen.

Clang!

In this desperate moment, Huang Second raised his combat weapon and defended the attack, colliding with the Heavenly Saint Sword hard. The collision of the two metals created huge sparks that not even the rain could extinguish.

Barf!

Huang Second was sent flying a hundred meters away and threw up blood. To him, the strike just now was like a meteorite crashing down on him. He couldn’t bear the force at all.

In this instant, he had suffered severe injuries and half of his combat power had been expended.

However, before he could even regain his senses, Jiang Chen appeared before him like a shadow and made a hack at him once more. This time, it seemed like this strike was much stronger than the previous.

“Save me Big Brother!”

Huang Second exclaimed. He could feel the threat coming from Jiang Chen. That was the threat of death. All of his escape routes were eliminated by Jiang Chen. There was no way for him to flee. This time, he wouldn't be able to defend against this sword strike even with all of his power. He would be killed instantly.

“Not even the Gods can save you now.”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly. There was no way for Huang Ying to be faster than him. Huang Second would already be dead the moment Huang Ying reached here.

“Argh.....”

A mournful cry echoed through the long stretch of sky. Huang Second was no match for Jiang Chen. His body was slashed into two. Blood was spurting out from all directions as his body fell from the sky.

“Second Brother!”

Seeing what had happened, Huang Ying let out forceful and angry roars that made him look like a barbaric beast. He had now fallen into a frenzied state. His brother, son and nephew were all killed by Jiang Chen. This young man's emergence had changed Huang Family entirely. He had thrown their entire family into an irrecoverable state.

Huang Ying wanted to rush forward very much and shred him into a million pieces, but the rationality inside of him developed fear towards Jiang Chen. Even if he refused to accept it, none of them could change the fact that Jiang Chen was stronger than them now.

Both Huang Ying and Yuan Hong were feeling remorseful right now. They regretted not killing Jiang Chen when he first arrived in Yan City, he was just a puny late Human Immortal expert at that time. If they insisted in killing this man, today's disaster wouldn't have taken place.

However, the fact was that they didn't think that a person could grow this fast. Jiang Chen had only been in the Prefecture for a very short period of time, but he was still able to advance from late Human Immortal to early Earth Immortal. Two advancement had taken place within this short period of time. Is this Jiang Chen still human? not even those monstrous geniuses were this abnormal.

“Good! Alchemist Jiang is truly ferocious. Even Huang Second is killed by him. It seems like the other two won't be his opponents as well. Alchemist Jiang has truly become the savior of our Prefecture.”

Huang Second's death almost made Yan Dongliu cry because of over-excitement. They were supposed to meet their end, but Jiang Chen had created a miracle for them, all by himself. It made him feel that it was the wisest decision ever that Yan Qingcheng had tried all efforts to get Jiang Chen to join their Prefecture.

“Master Jiang is no doubt a monstrous talent amongst the monstrous talents, the genius of the geniuses. Killing an early Heaven Immortal expert while only having an early Earth Immortal cultivation base. This is the fortune of our Prefecture!”

“Big Miss really has a sharp eyesight. If it wasn't for her efforts of getting Master Jiang into our Prefecture, we would have perished tonight.”

“That's right. Master Jiang is also a great alchemist. Our purpose of letting him join our Prefecture was to work for the Prefecture, but none of us thought that Master Jiang would be our savior as well.”

.....

The experts of the Prefecture were getting extremely excited. The following battles were almost reaching its end. None of them could stand Yan Dongliu's single blow. After the death of Huang Second, Jiang Chen immediately gained the upper hand. It was conceivable that Huang Ying and Yuan Hong were no longer a match for Jiang Chen. The conclusion had already been decided.

Each and every expert left in Huang Family's forces looked deathly pale. They initially thought that the joint attack of the three Heaven Immortal experts would eliminate Jiang Chen first, then helped them kill the remaining forces of the prefecture, but the real situation obviously happened in the opposite way. Now, even Huang Ying and Yuan Hong were facing a life-threatening situation, let alone talking about helping them.

Above the void, after killing Huang Second, Jiang Chen thrust at Huang Ying with his Heavenly Saint Sword without saying another word. After killing a Heaven Immortal; the sword trembled more intensely, as if it thirsted for another bloody killing.

"Brother Yuan, we must work closely together, otherwise we will be finished today."

Huang Ying said to Yuan Hong who wasn't very far away.

"Okay."

Yuan Hong nodded forcefully. He wasn't a fool. Huang Second's death had already rung a warning bell to them. Jiang Chen was too strong to defeat. A single carelessness would cause them to die like Huang Second.

"Haha! What's the point of you two combining together? With your current combat power, you have already lost the qualification to fight me. You will certainly die when I kill you. Dragon Sword's Storm."

Jiang Chen bellowed and swiped the Heavenly Saint Sword. For a moment, countless of sword Qi soared up to the sky. Every sword

Qi was coiling like a true dragon.

The Dragon Sword's Storm was a technique invented by Jiang Chen using the dragon transformation art and Heavenly Saint Sword. Today was his first time using this skill, although he didn't know how powerful it was. This skill wasn't any weaker than the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. Because this skill was combined with the power of the Heavenly Saint Sword, it was imaginable how destructive it was be.

Roar... Roar...

Dragon roars trembled the sky. Everyone could see the innumerable dragon images swirling around. The vicinity was completely filled with the sword Qi, turning it into a sword domain and an enormous cage that could imprison everything. Huang Ying and Yuan Hong were now trapped inside this sword domain.

Chapter 1102 – The Fate of Yi Yuan Association

“What?”

Huang Ying and Yuan Hong yelled simultaneously. Jiang Chen was getting stronger and stronger, so strong that felt powerless and defenseless. With their mind in disarray, counteracting was now impossible. After receiving some backlashes from their previous bouts, they simply couldn't cope up with the scary technique Jiang Chen just unleashed.

Swoosh... Swoosh... Swoosh...

The sword Qis had turned into images of dragons and wreaked havoc in all places. Huang Ying and Yuan Hong used all their might to defend it but discovered that it was irresistible. Countless of wounds started to appear on their bodies.

“Argh...” Yuan Hong wailed in agony when his arm was ripped off by the sword Qi. The arm wasn't just detached from his body but was then crushed into powder and vanished in the rain.

Huang Ying's condition wasn't any better. Every part of his body was damaged by the sword Qi, turning him into a bloody man. At this moment, Jiang Chen appeared in front of him like a fierce tiger. The chilling and emotionless long sword was swiped like a wave and cut off Huang Ying's head.

At this point, two Heaven Immortal experts of Huang Family had all died. The heyday of Huang Family was destined to become the history of Yan City. From here on, Huang Family would cease to exist in Yan City.

Jiang Chen didn't kill Yuan Hong. He approached the senior who currently looked like a spent force with no power. If it wasn't because of Jiang Chen's control, Yuan Hong wouldn't still be hovering in the sky.

Watching Jiang Chen approaching him, Yuan Hong's body couldn't help trembling in fear. It was the fear that came from the bottom of his heart.

"I won't kill you. Your life should be decided by Yan Dongliu," said Jiang Chen plainly, then he grabbed Yuan Hong and lifted him like a dog to Yan Dongliu.

The people of the Prefecture hadn't woken up from their trance due to the previous scenes. Each of them was looking at Jiang Chen like a wooden block. The current Jiang Chen had already returned to his usual kind-looking human-form, but neither of them would forget his ferociousness and ruthlessness.

Yan Qingcheng stared at Jiang Chen, still in an obsessed way. A man like him would always fascinate women.

"City Lord, I think his life belong to you," said Jiang Chen.

"Kneel down, animal!"

A member of the Prefecture went to Yuan Hong's side and stamped his knee. Yuan Hong couldn't stand the force and fell to his knees with a puff, and faced Yan Dongliu. Yuan Hong's eyes were filled with shame and did not dare meet the City Lord's eyes.

Looking at the grieving Yuan Hong, Yan Dongliu was in pain. This was a scene that he did not wish to happen, but it had been concluded and he had to accept the truth. He knew very clearly that he would be in Yuan Hong's situation if it wasn't for Jiang Chen today.

"Brother Yuan, how did I, Yan Dongliu, treat you normally?" asked Yan Dongliu.

"Why are you talking so much for? I have already done it anyway."

Yuan Hong smiled. He didn't want to explain any more about it. There were some mistakes which needed a heavy price—the worst price one had to pay, his son's and his death.. Though he felt guilty

to Yan Dongliu, it was pointless to say any more about it. If he pleaded for mercy, it would only show how cowardly he was. He knew that he was going to die for sure today, so he had to keep some dignity before his death. He didn't want to beg Yan Dongliu and Jiang Chen like a dog before he died.

"But I can't kill you with my own hands. You can be cruel to me, but I don't want to be ruthless to you."

Yan Dongliu let out a sigh and turned away, looking painful.

Having understood what the City Lord meant, the person beside the City Lord neared Yuan Hong.

"City Lord doesn't want to know an animal like you and killing you will only dirty his hands. What you did is unforgivable. Old man will send you to reunite with you son now," said that man. Then, a long sword stabbed at Yuan Hong's glabella.

Yuan Hong died instantly. His body flopped to the ground. The battle was finally over. The traitors had gotten what they deserved and the enemies were being wiped out. Apart from losing the experts who were with Yan Qingcheng earlier on, the Prefecture had suffered no other losses. So to speak, today was a great victory to them.

But Yan Dongliu couldn't feel happy about it. His mood was bound to sink after being betrayed by his sworn brother. The people was afraid that this trauma wouldn't heal itself in the matter of one or two days.

A while later, he began to regain his senses, but his red eyes showed that he had shed tears a moment ago. Men would never drop tears unless they were touched to the core. It seemed that this incident had made Yan Dongliu really sad.

Under the lead of Yan Dongliu and Yan Qingcheng, every one of them saluted Jiang Chen, not wanting to get up for a long time.

They were grateful for Jiang Chen's life-saving kindness. There

was no other things the people of the Prefecture could think of to express their gratitude other than this way.

“Alright, alright. There are still things undone here.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, signaling them to rise. There was no doubt that Jiang Chen’s demeanor was imposing and superior.

“Our Prefecture can’t repay the kindness Alchemist Jiang has done for us. So Alchemist Jiang is free to take as much percentage of the ore mine as Alchemist Jiang wants,” said Yan Dongliu solemnly.

“Like what we agreed, 30 percent of it. The others will belong to the Prefecture’s,” replied Jiang Chen.

The fact was that these Immortal Meta Stones here weren’t a big deal to him anymore. Ouyang He had given him a huge fortune, but he was afraid he wouldn’t be able to make good use of all these stones. Plus, his cultivation base was still low which he still needed low grade and medium grade Immortal Meta Stones. He knew his own how many he would consume and the fortune given by Ouyang He was just enough for him to advance to Great Luo Golden Immortal.

At this time, several experts of Yi Yuan Association who had been watching the battle walked forward. The leader, Wu Chang, was having an incomparably grim face. The way he looked at Jiang Chen was filled with fear and shock. Like the other people, none of them had ever put Jiang Chen in their eyes. In their point of view, the Prefecture was supposed to be finished today, but never had they thought that Jiang Chen had become the greatest variable in the critical juncture.

Now that the Prefecture had defeated its enemy, Yi Yuan Association naturally must find a way to get along with the Prefecture.

“Congratulations on City Lord for eliminating the great enemy

today!”

Wu Chang squeezed his face into a smile and held his fists at Yan Dongliu.

Whoosh!

Yet, before he could reach Yan Dongliu, a flash of cold light flicked. Then, before he could even react, he died on the spot when his head was severed. The attacker wasn't a stranger, it was Jiang Chen.

Wah!

The scene immediately caused an uproar. Not only were the people of Yi Yuan Association stunned, but also were the people of the Prefecture. Everyone was looking at Jiang Chen in disbelief, not knowing why Jiang Chen would suddenly attack the leader of Yi Yuan Association's group.

“Jiang Chen, y-y-you, why did you kill our people? Our association has never interfered with Prefecture's business.”

A man said angrily, but didn't dare to attack. He had no courage in front of Jiang Chen, because that would be seeking death.

“Yes for last time, but that doesn't mean you won't in the future. Yi Yuan Association will face the same outcome as Huang Family tomorrow. For all of you here, either you yield to us or die immediately.”

Jiang Chen glared at them unemotionally.

“Jiang Chen, you...”

That man was more infuriated, but before he could finish his words, Jiang Chen swiped his sword ruthlessly.

This had frightened the rest of them. In their eyes, Jiang Chen was no longer a man. He was a demon, a frenzied and cruel demon.

“I...we yield.”

A few of them exchanged glances and decided to surrender. Otherwise, they were afraid that death would only be the way. They wouldn't dare to regard Jiang Chen's words as a joke because an incisive and ruthless killer didn't seem like a joker at all.

"Alchemist Jiang, why did you attack the people of Yi Yuan Association?" asked Yan Dongliu, puzzled.

"Foolish question. Isn't this obvious? Now that Huang Family is eradicated, it may seem like the Prefecture is dominating Yan City, but I can't protect the Prefecture for a lifetime. I will leave Yan City in the near future and head to One-Line-Sky. If I leave, the greatest major power will not be the Prefecture but Yi Yuan Association. Although they focus on business, you should know how wild Nie Yiyuan's desires are. He is a very smart person. The reason he didn't take part in the competition between you two major powers because he always liked to sit on the fence and get profits at the expense of the other party. Now that Yuan Hong was killed, it meant both the Prefecture and Huang Family have suffered great losses. Once I leave this place, Nie Yiyuan will launch an attack to the Prefecture and become the greatest ruler of Yan City."

Jiang Chen darted a glare at Yan Dongliu. The City Lord might have some mental issues for not being able to understand this simple reason despite his intelligence.

Hiss!

Listening to Jiang Chen's explanation, Yan Dongliu and the members of the Prefecture couldn't help but inhaled in a breath of cold air. Everybody suddenly felt enlightened. Yi Yuan Association had always been in the neutral position all these years, but it was hard to guarantee that they wouldn't attack the Prefecture when the chance presented itself. Besides, the emergence of this ore mine would definitely motivate them to take down the Prefecture to gain more profits.

Moreover, for a figure like Jiang Chen, he definitely wouldn't stay in Yan City because this city was just too small for such a great figure.

It explained why Jiang Chen would attack the people of Yi Yuan Association. This was an act of rooting out the potential threat of the future before he left. Now, the people of Prefecture didn't know what else to do besides feeling grateful to Jiang Chen again.

Yan Qingcheng's smile disappeared. Most of the details didn't enter her ears except for the line when Jiang Chen said he would leave in the near future. This had made her heart sink.

"City Lord, if one wants to survive, one needs to be ruthless. The same applies to a major power. If you aren't cruel enough, you will become other people's prey and stepping stones. Eradicating Yi Yuan Association will be the last thing I will do for the Prefecture., said Jiang Chen.

"Alchemist Jiang is right. My foolishness has almost caused me to make a big mistake again. In which case, we will return to Yan City immediately and annihilate Yi Yuan Association once and for all."

Ruthlessness flashed past Yan Dongliu's eyes. What Jiang Chen said strongly reminded him something which he had forgotten. Being merciful in the law of the jungle would only bring harm upon himself.

Chapter 1103 – Trample on the Front Gate

The main forces of Huang Family had been completely destroyed. All Heaven Immortal experts and most of the half-step Heaven Immortal experts were all killed tragically. Every one of them who were still alive had basically all surrendered. That was to say, from now on, Huang Family would only be a history and would never appear in Yan City anymore.

Yi Yuan Association's fate would end up just like Huang Family's as well. Jiang Chen would never let them go even though they weren't involved in this fight. In order for the Prefecture to truly call itself the only ruler of Yan City, it had to eliminate any major power that existed in Yan City. Looking at it from a different angle, the Prefecture must get rid of all the potential threat once and for all.

The rain stopped, but the night was still cloudy. The blood stench weren't as revolting after being washed away by the rain water, but the bodies that laid disorderly on the ground still gave people the creeps, it was as if this place became a human hell. It was hard for one to stay cheerful in such a place.

"The few of you stay back to lead them on the mining operations. The rest of you follow me back to Yan City. After tonight, Yan City will become the Prefecture's."

Yan Dongliu said to the people next to him. After being influenced by Jiang Chen's words, his decision and demeanor became sharper.

"Yes, City Lord."

Everyone was extremely exhilarated. There was no way they couldn't, they had longed for this day to come for so long. As for the battle against Yi Yuan Association, they wouldn't worry about it at all. With Jiang Chen's presence, it was already imaginable what their outcome would be.

The combat strength capable of killing three Heaven Immortal experts was something that they could only admire from afar. In that case, this wouldn't give Yi Yuan Association a chance of surviving the battle.

"Father, Big Brother Jiang, I will go along with you two." Said Yan Qingcheng.

"Alright."

Yan Dongliu nodded. He glanced at Yan Qingcheng and Jiang Chen, and couldn't help but sigh. How could he not see what his daughter's intention was? He believed that even an idiot could discern it.

It was indeed worthy of his daughter to love a peerless genius like Jiang Chen, but this young man didn't seem to have any romantic feelings for her. It was obvious when he said that he would leave Yan City in no time. This had certainly hurt Yan Qingcheng a little.

But what else he could do about his daughter's relationship? All he could do was to let nature take its course. The future achievements of someone like Jiang Chen was bound to be limitless. It would be the Prefecture's great fortune to have a son-in-law like Jiang Chen, but there was nothing that they could do if this young man didn't have any feelings for his daughter. A matter like this couldn't be solved by force.

Besides, the Prefecture didn't have the right and power to ask Jiang Chen do such a thing for them.

Jiang Chen casted the Flaming Wings. Under his and Yan Dongliu's lead, every remaining expert travelled back to Yan City.

There weren't many of them that returned to the city this time. There were only around ten of them. Most of them were left behind. As Jiang Chen was the strongest force in the team, they didn't need many experts to deal with Yi Yuan Association.

Therefore, whoever stayed behind had to quicken the mining process because that was a real deal. As for the bodies of Huang Family and Yi Yuan Association, the people who were left behind naturally know what to do with them.

Yan City!

The wind was calm as usual and the situation in the city didn't seem any strange, it was like the intense confrontation in the ore mine didn't affect here at all. The people of Huang Family must be expecting the news of their victory from the higher-ups, while the Yi Yuan Association was doing its usual business activities.

Standing listlessly outside the front gate of Yi Yuan Association were two lazy-looking guards. At this second, a group of experts suddenly landed from the sky, appearing before the gate.

“Who are you people?”

The two guards immediately turned alert and shouted.

“Get lost, if you don't want to die.”

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated as he strode forward. This Qi alone oppressed the guards hard until their bodies trembled uncontrollably. They could not muster any courage to fight Jiang Chen. All they could do was to watch Jiang Chen pulverize the front gate with his leg.

Those who followed behind Jiang Chen were looking very excited. They had to admit that fighting alongside Jiang Chen was definitely blood-boiling. That dominance and aggressiveness of his ignited every one of their enthusiasm.

The sound of the gate being crushed was undeniably a very loud sound. Instantly, the experts of Yi Yuan Association got out of their rooms to check what was going on. The first one was no doubt the chairman of Yi Yuan Association. Standing next to Nie Yiyuan was an elder that looked sixtyish, with white beard, exceptional eye expression that made him look good and had the

same cultivation base as Nie Yi Yuan – early Heaven Immortal realm.

Behind the front gate was a vast open space. Both sides stopped in their tracks. Nie Yiyuan was shocked when he saw clearly the faces of the intruders. He had seen all of these people before. They were the higher ups of the Prefecture. He had even seen Jiang Chen before, but what baffled him was that why would they break the front gate in the middle of the night. One should know that Yi Yuan Association had never been involved in any fights with the Prefecture and there was basically not a single conflict between them during normal days.

“What are all these about, brother Yan? Breaking into Yi Yuan Association in the middle of the night? And with so much killing intent?”

Nie Yiyuan’s remark contained dissatisfaction and anger. There was no way that he wouldn’t be angry. No one would feel good when someone destroyed your property in the middle of the night.

Additionally, Yan Dongliu must provide him an explanation for such action. Yi Yuan Association was considered as the third major power in Yan City. They didn’t fear the Prefecture at all when it comes to fighting.

“Chairman Nie, our intention is obvious – we are here to eradicate Yi Yuan Association. After tonight, there will no longer be Yi Yuan Association in Yan City anymore. There will be only the Prefecture ruling this city.”

Yan Dongliu didn’t speak. It was spoken by the one who stood at the front most, Jiang Chen.

“What? Who do you think you are? How dare you come here and behave atrociously?”

“Do you all think that you have enough strength to wipe out our association? Jiang Chen, do you think being able to kill Huang

Haoran makes you capable enough to deal with our association? This is a joke. A puny Earth Immortal like you dares to speak so wildly in front of me and destroyed my front gate. Who gave you the audacity to do so?”

“It seems like the Prefecture is tired of living. An ignorant kid who doesn’t even know who he is has come here to eradicate us. Chairman, we must teach them a good lesson today.”

.....

All the higher ups of Yi Yuan Association were instantly angered by Jiang Chen’s words. For so many years that the Yi Yuan Association had been established in Yan City, it was already considered an old major power. No one would dare to break into their compound in the middle of the night. This kind of behavior was a great disrespect itself.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, what rights do you have to speak?”

Nie Yiyuan harrumphed coldly, totally not putting Jiang Chen in his eyes.

Of course, he was still clueless about what had happened in the ore mine. If he was informed about that, his first response upon seeing Jiang Chen would be to run. This was also why Jiang Chen wanted to eradicate Yi Yuan Association so quickly.

Once Nie Yiyuan found out about the status in the ore mine and given his intelligence, he would definitely flee for his life and hid himself somewhere where the others couldn’t find him. After that, he would rebuild his forces and take revenge on the Prefecture in the future. In that case, Nie Yiyuan would reappear after Jiang Chen left Yan City. At that time, the Prefecture would surely fall into a real crisis.

“Nie Yiyuan, Jiang Chen’s right and he has the right to speak about it. The three major powers of Yan City had been fighting for so long. It’s time to put an end to this. My Prefecture will become

the only ruler in Yan City and Yi Yuan Association must be erased from the map.”

Yan Dongliu said in an incomparably solemn tone. Currently, he had all the right in the world to speak in such a manner because Jiang Chen’s presence had given him so much confidence.

“Yan Dongliu, are you mad? Why are you dealing with us instead of dealing with the Huang Family? When did the Prefecture have the ability to deal with two major powers at the same time?”

Nie Yiyuan laughed sneeringly. To him, Yan Dongliu must be completely out of his mind to do so. One Huang Family was enough to put the Prefecture into misery. Weren’t they courting death by making Yi Yuan Association their enemy too?

“Haha! I don’t mind telling you this. Huang Family has already been eradicated by us. Huang Ying and Huang Second were all killed by Jiang Chen. Therefore, your fate will not be an exception.”

Yan Dongliu laughed loudly. By now, there was nothing to hide anymore. In addition, he was very confident in Jiang Chen’s power. Nie Yiyuan and that old man would certainly not be able to escape from Jiang Chen now.

“What?”

As soon as this remark came out, everyone in Yi Yuan Association exclaimed. Nie Yiyuan’s facial expression changed dramatically. He would never believe it if such news wasn’t said by Yan Dongliu. And judging from Yan Dongliu’s tone, he didn’t seem to be lying. Yan Dongliu wouldn’t have such courage to confront them if they hadn’t really annihilated Huang Family’s forces.

Hong.....

As soon as Yan Dongliu’s voice faded, Jiang Chen unleashed his powerful Qi and turned into his half-dragon form. The Heavenly Saint Sword materialized in his hand. His murderous intent was

soaring up to the sky.

He didn't want to waste any time, so the first strike was an all-out attack. As long as Nie Yiyuan and the elder were killed, Yi Yuan Association would become a heap of loose and vulnerable sand, totally helpless.

“Nie Yiyuan, the two of you fight me together.”

Jiang Chen raised his sword, and pointed at the two heads.

“I don't believe that a puny little Earth Immortal expert has the power to kill Heaven Immortal experts. It's just an exaggeration to claim that he has killed Huang Ying. Let this old man destroy this ignorant little brat, then I will fight with Yan Dongliu to see who's stronger.”

The old man's anger pierced through the sky. Given his status, how could he be disdained by a brat? That was totally shameful and he could never accept that. If he didn't kill this Jiang Chen himself, he wouldn't be able to express the anger and grievance in his heart.

Hu... Hu...

Strong wind whistled. The Immortal Qi caused the elder's robe to rustle uncontrollably. He struck out both of his hands, condensing a light pillar that looked like a golden stick with golden illumination and divine appearance. With a light yell, the old man charged at Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1104 – Make the Choice to Death

The full-fledged attack of an early Heaven Immortal expert was frenzied. Its earth-shaking Qi forced the onlookers to move backwards involuntarily, fearing that they would suffer any kind of damages from it. Not everyone could withstand the energy waves of a Heaven Immortal expert.

The experts of Yi Yuan Association revealed a cold smile. They knew how strong the elder was. He wasn't an opponent that a puny Earth Immortal expert could handle. In their point of view, Jiang Chen was already half-dead the moment the elder attacked him personally. After this strike, Jiang Chen would lie dead on the ground.

However, Nie Yiyuan frowned instead of thinking the same way as the others did. The rest of them focused all of their attention on Jiang Chen and the elder, while Nie Yiyuan was focused on Yan Dongliu and his experts. He saw that none of them seemed to be nervous just by looking at their faces. That was the confidence they had in Jiang Chen. It was the confidence that wasn't just a facade.

In other words, it was highly likely that Jiang Chen had really killed Huang Ying and this made him feel somewhat gloomy.

The elder had collided with Jiang Chen, the situation did not allow Nie Yiyuan to consider further. Jiang Chen remained indifferent while confronting the elder's powerful attack. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand gave out dragon roars. Then, he raised the sword high and slashed at the golden pillar in lightning speed.

Hong Long.....

The powerful impact shook everyone's heart. Under the attack of the sharp Heavenly Saint Sword, the golden pillar was pulverized easily, turning into a dazzling fireworks of energy, turning the

dark night into a fascinating scene, but one must be cautious while watching this scene because of its danger. Besides, no one had the mood to appreciate it.

The elder felt like he had been impacted by a giant mountain. He was sent flying away. Nie Yiyuan's facial expression changed drastically when he caught of the elder from behind.

Barf.....

The elder was badly wounded. He opened his mouth and spurted out a mouthful of blood. His face turned extremely pale as he stared at Jiang Chen in fear. There was no other word that he could use to describe his current mood besides shock.

“Not possible. This is absolutely impossible.”

The elder couldn't accept the fact. No one could understand the scariness of Jiang Chen until they fought him themselves. That kind of power wasn't bearable to anyone. The attack that the elder received wasn't the strongest, but the current circumstance was enough to show that he was no match for Jiang Chen even after he used his most powerful attack. Whatever outcome that awaited him would never change.

It was disastrous defeat. There's no doubt about it. It was definitely a crushing defeat.

Nie Yiyuan's expression as well as his people drastically changed. There was no more relaxing expression on their faces. Their current eyes displayed fear. Up until now, no one would doubt Yan Dongliu's words anymore. It seemed like Huang Ying and Huang Second really died under Jiang Chen's hands, Jiang Chen had the capability to kill them.

“Haha! People of Yi Yuan Association. Weren't you very arrogant before this? I dare you to show your arrogance once more. Alchemist Jiang alone is enough to handle all of you.”

“That's right. All of you won't be able to withstand even one

blow from Master Jiang. There is no room for you to resist at all.”

.....

Every expert of the Prefecture was enjoying the feeling of great importance. To them, this scene was just like a show and they didn't have to worry because nothing was a big deal anymore.

On the other hand, the experts of Yi Yuan Association felt oppressed and pressured. They shifted their gazes to Nie Yiyuan, waiting for their leader to give them the next command, but every one of them was incomparably clear that they wouldn't gain anything from today's battle, they would surely end up just like the Huang Family.

“Chairman, what should we do now?”

The elder asked with a frown. After learning Jiang Chen's power, there was no chance of victory in this battle anymore. He wouldn't stand a chance against Jiang Chen even if he fought with Nie Yiyuan together.

Nie Yiyuan knitted his eyebrows hard. This was a scene that he had never anticipated. No one would have thought that a monster like Jiang Chen would appear in Yan City. It was hard to imagine that the prosperous Yi Yuan Association would fall to the point of extinction today.

There had always been three great major powers in Yan City. Who would have thought that two of the major powers would vanish in just one night?

Nie Yiyuan was an intelligent man. It was impossible for him not to discern the situation in front of him. Therefore, he made a decision. A cold light flashed past his eyes and vanished. He cupped his fists at Jiang Chen and said. “Alchemist Jiang does have extraordinary combat power. Yi Yuan Association is certainly no match for you. From now on, our association will submit ourselves to the Prefecture and pledge our service to the Prefecture.”

Each and every expert of Yi Yuan Association sighed and was down-spirited like a frozen eggplant after hearing what their chairman said. This was the outcome that they didn't wish to see, but what else they could do besides yielding to them? Otherwise, they would certainly die. Everyone on the scene had seen Jiang Chen's means, especially when he killed Huang Haoran without even blinking.

“So, you are looking for a compromise?”

Jiang Chen smiled sneeringly. Nie Yiyuan was a person who was even scarier than Huang Ying. This man was cunning and smart, like an old fox. A fox with wild desire. Perhaps the others wouldn't be able to read what Nie Yiyuan was thinking, but Jiang Chen was able to discern it clearly. The cold light that flashed past Nie Yiyuan's eyes didn't escape Jiang Chen's eyes.

What Nie Yiyuan was thinking was just like Jiang Chen expected. He was a very clever man, there was no stupid businessman in this world. In his point of view, a figure like Jiang Chen would certainly not stay in a small place like Yan City for a long time. This true dragon would leave the city sooner or later.

As for Yan Dongliu, he didn't fear him at all. The only person he feared right now was Jiang Chen. In that case, he might as well surrender temporarily and reach a compromise with the Prefecture. After Jiang Chen left, he would rally his forces to kill Yan Dongliu and overturn the entire Prefecture. At that time, the whole Yan City would become his and they had to thank Jiang Chen for helping them get rid of the troublesome Huang Family.

Too bad, Nie Yiyuan's plot couldn't get past Jiang Chen.

“You can yield, but I have one condition.” Said Jiang Chen plainly.

“What condition, Master Jiang? Please say.” Nie Yiyuan said.

“The two of you must cripple your cultivation. After that, I

guarantee that I won't hurt any of your people.”

Jiang Chen pointed at Nie Yiyuan and the elder.

“What did you just say?”

Nie Yiyuan and the elder raged. What Jiang Chen said was too much. They had volunteered to surrender. How could they destroy their cultivation base as well? This was absurd. To a Heaven Immortal expert, crippling one's cultivation was even crueller than being killed.

“Jiang Chen, don't go too far. We already have agreed to surrender voluntarily. Why do you still want to push us to our end?” Nie Yiyuan spoke angrily.

“Humph! Nie Yiyuan, do you think you can hide your pretense from me? You have already concluded that I will leave Yan City sooner or later that's why you surrendered willingly. After I left, you will certainly launch an attack on the Prefecture. This kind of trick is very naïve in my eyes. I will only give you two choices now, one is to cripple your cultivation, and the second is to die in my hands.”

Jiang Chen snorted coldly. He would never leave a source of potential trouble behind every time he did things.

Hiss!

After hearing what he said, everyone in the Prefecture's group couldn't help but suck in a cold breath of air. They glared at Nie Yiyuan and at the same time, had more respect for Jiang Chen. This was the most critical moment, but they failed to recognize this plot. Many of them only began to realize it after Jiang Chen's reminder. If Nie Yiyuan really submitted himself to the Prefecture; after Jiang Chen left, no one would be able to suppress this cunning fox anymore. At that time, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“Nie Yiyuan, never thought that you have such a cunning mind.

Humph! In that case, there's nothing that we can talk about anymore. Just like what Alchemist Jiang said, you only have two choices to select from." Yan Dongliu said coldly.

"Haha! Jiang Chen, I have to say that you are the most capable person that I have ever seen. You can even see through my plot. Then, there's no more that I can say. I, Nie Yiyuan will rather die in battle than cripple my cultivation. I would like to see how powerful a puny Earth Immortal like you is. Elder Yu, let's fight Jiang Chen together."

Nie Yiyuan's hidden agenda was discovered by Jiang Chen. Madness and ferociousness began to reveal on his face. He yelled at the elder and flew up to the sky. A sharp combat weapon appeared in his hand all of a sudden. All of his Qi had been unleashed. His current cultivation base had already reached the peak of early Heaven Immortal realm, which was slightly stronger than the elder.

Since there was no way to avoid it, they couldn't just stand there and wait to be killed. Additionally, it was impossible for them to destroy their own cultivation because that was no different than being killed. They probably still had a chance if they fought Jiang Chen to the end. Jiang Chen was after all, just an Earth Immortal expert. He believed that as long as he went all-out, there would be chances of victory.

Swoosh!

The elder flew to Nie Yiyuan's side.

"Big Brother Jiang, you must be careful." Yan Qingcheng reminded Jiang Chen.

"No worries. They aren't my opponents."

Jiang Chen smiled, then fluttered the Flaming Wings at maximum speed, turning him into a red flame in the darkness as he flew to the opposite of Nie Yiyuan. He had never intended to let

Nie Yiyuan go today. In order for the Prefecture to hold their ground firmly in Yan City, they had to eliminate any potential threat that could jeopardize their position. And the best way to eliminate this potential threat was to kill the source mercilessly.

“Come and attack me together.”

Jiang Chen said arrogantly, absolutely not putting the two in his eyes.

“Jiang Chen, it’s you who forced us to do this.”

Nie Yiyuan turned frenzied. The combat weapon in his hands illuminated unlimited brilliance. The elder had also summoned another combat weapon. It was a Heaven Rank Immortal Weapon. Both of their killing intent rushed up to the sky as they lunged at Jiang Chen. The whole sky above instantly turned bright.

Chapter 1105 – Oppressive Internal Feelings

Hong Long.....

Jiang Chen exerted his combat power to the extreme. The 320 000 dragon marks pushed his combat strength to an unimaginable extent. The Heavenly Saint Sword had turned into a dragon that danced across the sky.

Both Nie Yiyuan and the elder's attack collided with one another. It wasn't an exaggeration to describe it as earth-shattering. The darkness of the night cracked and countless of colors appeared simultaneously, it caused the people around to palpitate.

Roar.....

Jiang Chen let out a shocking dragon roar that echoed across the whole sky, totally interrupting the tranquility of the city. Many people had no idea what was going on. They quickly stepped out of the buildings and saw a dragonman wreaking havoc in the sky above Yi Yuan Association. Nie Yiyuan and the elder were forced back under Jiang Chen powerful attacks. Their Qi and blood surged chaotically inside of them. It gave them an unpleasant feeling which they couldn't describe in words.

“Dammit! Why is this bastard so strong?”

Nie Yiyuan couldn't help but curse. Jiang Chen's power gave him the urge to spurt out blood. Although there were lots of Immortals who had the same combat strength as Jiang Chen, there was absolutely no early Earth Immortal who was as powerful as Jiang Chen.

The experts of Yi Yuan Association sank. It was imaginable what the result would be if even the combined force of two Heaven Immortal experts couldn't even fight against Jiang Chen. It seemed like their final fate would befall Yi Yuan Association in no time. They would all end up just like the Huang Family.

Even though the experts of the Prefecture had already witnessed Jiang Chen's power before, they couldn't help but exclaim in shock because he was just too powerful. They had never seen such a young man before. It was a great blessing that they have befriended a person like Jiang Chen.

"I'm done playing with you two. Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal."

Jiang Chen bellowed and struck out the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. As this skill was struck with the Heavenly Saint Sword, its power was simply unimaginable.

Roar... Roar...

For an instant, the whole sky was filled with the images of dragons. Both Jiang Chen and the Heavenly Saint Sword fused into a true dragon. The terrifying energy emitted from it instantly flooded the area where Nie Yiyuan and the elder were at. The only thing that the two of them could do now was to defend with whatever skills they had.

Unfortunately, it had become impossible for them to defend against Jiang Chen with their current condition. When the dragon image disappeared, Nie Yiyuan and the elder emerged from the scene. Both of them looked like they've been through hell. Blood was all over their bodies and wounds were everywhere. The Immortal Weapon that they held in their hands were trembling intensely.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen made another move. He wouldn't give them any chance to react. He appeared in front of the elder like a specter, swiped his sword across the elder's neck and the head flew skywards. The elder died instantly. His body then fell to the ground.

After seeing what just happened, Nie Yiyuan's expression

changed drastically. Boundless fear was surging inside of him. How could he have the courage to continue fighting? Immediately, he turned into a ray of golden light and escaped. However, he hadn't gained the full mastery of the Spatial Law yet, and he was also seriously injured, therefore his speed was slow. Jiang Chen was able to catch up with him in just a few blinks.

Nie Yiyuan was really scared to death. Even after so many years of ruling Yan City, he had never seen such a scary person. Jiang Chen was simply too astounding and monstrous.

By now, he couldn't care much about it anymore. He was going to die anyway if he stayed behind. The only way to keep his life was to flee. So that in the future, he would have the chance to rebuild his empire.

Unfortunately, he already didn't have the chance to do so. After fleeing for two to three miles, Jiang Chen caught up with him. His robust dragon body blocked in front of Nie Yiyuan. His ruthless red and devilish eyes made Nie Yiyuan shiver in fear.

"Jiang Chen, don't, don't kill me. We can discuss anything you want, just don't kill me..."

Nie Yiyuan's voice was quivering. He knew that there was no way that he could escape Jiang Chen's grip today. He would face his death with no dignity, but he didn't want to die yet. No one wanted to die, especially when one was at the edge of death. That kind of feeling was beyond most people's comprehension.

"I have already given you the chance, but you didn't take it. So, go and die now!"

Jiang Chen would never give his enemy a second chance. Nie Yiyuan's fate had already been decided from the moment he decided to fight Jiang Chen.

Pu Chi!

The sword stabbed through Nie Yiyuan's chest. This overlord of

Yan City died with unwillingness and despair. All his ambitious plan and prosperous empire had now turned into an illusion and had cease to exist.

“Chairman.”

An expert of Yi Yuan Association cried out in alarm and started shedding tears. Yi Yuan Association had always been at its peak. No one had thought that this association would suddenly turn into ash in just one night, a speck of dust in Yan City.

After killing Nie Yiyuan and the elder, Jiang Chen flew directly towards the Prefecture without returning to the scene. He didn't have to worry about the rest of the matters. He believed that Yan Dongliu would be able to handle everything. He had done the things that he needed to do for the Prefecture. Soon, he would be leaving Yan City for One-Line-Sky. From now on, the life and death of Yan City was no longer his concern. He was currently bearing another responsibility, a mission. He had to imprint these two names in his head for the rest of his life, Ouyang He and Tian Muyun.

The next day!

The news spread across Yan City fast, causing a commotion all over the city. They all happened in just one night. First, it was the experts of Huang Family being killed at the ore mine. Despite the traitor, Yuan Hong joining the Huang Family, all of the Heaven Immortal experts including Yi Yuan Association were eradicated by Jiang Chen. The two major powers then vanished from Yan City in just one night. Incidents like these were no doubt an earth-shattering news.

Everyone knew that everything in Yan City had changed. The Prefecture had become the only conqueror in Yan City and there wouldn't be any more battles among different major powers.

“That's too awesome! Could it be that Jiang Chen is the reincarnation of a Heavenly God? How could he be this powerful?

Eradicating early Heaven Immortal experts while only having an early Earth Immortal expert? I would never believe it if this wasn't the truth."

"That's right. He's too terrifying. How could such a monstrous genius emerge in a small city like ours? The Prefecture must have some great fortune to get the help of such a rare genius.

"Agreed. Rumor has it that Yuan Hong betrayed Yan Dongliu and conspired with the Huang Family to annihilate the prefecture. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen's interference, it was imaginable what the would be. Now that they had made a turnaround by eliminating the other two major powers, they have already laid a good foundation for its future growth. From today onwards, all the cultivation resources will be owned by the Prefecture."

.....

Everybody on the streets and alleys were talking about yesterday's big event. Jiang Chen had undoubtedly become the most important topic and figure. A super-cultivator like Jiang Chen was destined to create waves in every place he went.

Two days later, Yan Dongliu and Yan Qingcheng went to the courtyard where Jiang Chen lived with a spatial ring.

"Alchemist Jiang, these are the Immortal Meta Stones from the ore mine. There are roughly 30 percent of total amount in here."

Yan Dongliu handed the spatial ring to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen smiled and kept the spatial ring like it was the most common thing in the world. The amount of stones inside the ring was no longer his concern. Since he had so much fortune with him before this, these stones weren't important at all.

"City Lord, Miss Qingcheng, I have been wanting to look for you two for something."

Jiang Chen spoke all of a sudden.

After hearing this, Yan Qingcheng's heart started to pound faster because she had guessed what Jiang Chen would say next. This was the moment that she didn't wish to see.

"Is Big Brother Jiang leaving?"

Yan Qingcheng raised his head to look at Jiang Chen with her touching eyes.

Ai!

Jiang Chen let out a sigh in his heart. How could he not feel the affection that Yan Qingcheng had for him? However, he couldn't accept this kind of relationship. He still had a long path awaiting him in the future. He couldn't be delayed by any unnecessary relationship. Besides, he already had Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu. He would never regret putting down this relationship.

"Yes. I will leave tomorrow to One-Line-Sky. Perhaps we will meet again one day."

Said Jiang Chen. He wasn't an indecisive man. It was a fact that there was nothing in Yan City that could make him stay any longer.

Yan Qingcheng wanted to say something but she stopped herself. Yan Dongliu shook his head, turned and left. This was the last time that they would meet each other. If Jiang Chen wanted to go, there was no way to make him stay. To a monstrous genius like Jiang Chen, Yan City was no doubt too small.

Under the moonlight, Jiang Chen and Yan Qingcheng stood opposite each other silently, making the atmosphere dull and stifling.

"I suppose that Big Brother Jiang already know what Qingcheng's thoughts."

Yan Qingcheng broke the icy silence.

"I know."

Jiang Chen nodded then said. “Qingcheng, I’m not the person that you deserve to have. I already have two women in my life. Both of them are excellent women, though they aren’t by my side now. Plus, I will travel every single place in the Immortal World. There will be danger, mistrust and evil everywhere.”

“I don’t care. I just want to be with you. Qingcheng will feel happy as long as Qingcheng is with Big Brother Jiang.”

Yan Qingcheng shook her head. She didn’t care how many girls Jiang Chen had. A man like him would naturally be loved by many women.

Ai!

Jiang Chen sighed once more. He turned and looked at Yan Qingcheng grimly. He didn’t want to deceive her anymore as that would be unfair to Yan Qingcheng.

“Qingcheng, forget about me. I’m just a passerby.”

Jiang Chen placed his hands on Yan Qingcheng’s shoulders. He knew how painful this sentence was, but he had to say it no matter what.

He turned and vanished in the dark night. He had left Yan City.

“Big Brother Jiang.”

Yan Qingcheng shouted for him. Tears trickled down her face as Jiang Chen disappeared like a green smoke, it was like he had never appeared in her life before. However, she knew that the image of this man would forever be imprinted in her heart. At this moment, she looked as if she was suffering from a mental breakdown as she stood alone under the bleak icy moonlight.

Chapter 1106 – The Unyielding Slave

Jiang Chen's departure was quiet and unnoticeable. As for Yan Qingcheng, she had to try her best not to think about this man anymore. Jiang Chen knew his own path very well. Besides, he already had Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu in his heart. There was no more space in his heart to fit another woman.

Therefore, he needed to cut the Gordian knot. He had always been a decisive person. It was inevitable to hurt Yan Qingcheng as he was merely a passerby. As for the scar that would be left in her heart, only time could help her heal the wound.

When it came to relationship, decisiveness could stop the matter from getting out of control. The more hesitant he became, the deeper the scar would be left in Yan Qingcheng's heart. So, Jiang Chen knew what he was doing.

Yan City was the first stop and a temporary station for Jiang Chen ever since he arrived in the Immortal World. This place would only be his past. But to Yan City, Jiang Chen's existence was extremely meaningful. This young man had changed everything in Yan City. He had caused a huge storm in Yan City in just a short period of time.

Jiang Chen had left an eternal mark in the Prefecture. His name would become an example for all. Even if Jiang Chen had already left, the Prefecture had enjoyed the noblest treatment from him, like the treatment provided by some old ancestor.

Jiang Chen's next objective was very clear. The One-Line-Sky was where he would go next. The real exciting event would begin in this region which consisted of 100 000 huge mountains, totally incomparable to the tiny Yan City.

Yan City was merely one of the remote areas in One-Line-Sky. There were countless of insignificant places like Yan City in One-Line-Sky.

Two days later, Jiang Chen stood on a mountain summit, overlooking the endless mountain range that connected the horizon. It seemed like One-Line-Sky was a very suitable name for it after all. Although he had lost count of how many miles he had travelled in these past two days, he had at least reached the region which consisted true Immortal cultivators in One-Line-Sky. If he flew along the way, he could have reached here in half-a-day's time, but he didn't choose that means of travelling.

As an Earth Immortal, his flying ability was the greatest trump card. There were dangers everywhere in this world. It was crucial to keep this trump card hidden because it was equivalent to his life if ever he encountered some danger. This was something which Jiang Chen was well aware of.

Moreover, his speed on land was just like a cheetah, totally incomparable to ordinary Immortals. If he was to be compared to a person with the same cultivation as his, Jiang Chen's speed was like lightning bolt sliding on the ground.

“Skycloud Pavilion, Tian Muyun, I'm coming for you.”

Jiang Chen gazed at the boundless range of mountains enshrouded by blurry mist. His eyes glittered with resoluteness. There was no doubt about it, Tian Muyun and the Skycloud Pavilion was his top priority in One-Line-Sky, his main goal for coming here. The Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd that was kept in his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda represented the responsibility that he was bearing right now.

“I must have Senior Ouyang's revenge. Someone like Tian Muyun isn't supposed to be in this Heaven and Earth from the very beginning.”

Said Jiang Chen lightly. What Ouyang He experienced gave him a heartache. Although he and Ouyang He had only met once, the impression he had for that senior wasn't bad, however, his impression of Tian Muyun wasn't good after hearing all of his

misconduct.

But then again, Jiang Chen understood that this revenge couldn't be done in one day. At that time, Ouyang He was breaking through to the Immortal King realm, which meant that he was already a half-step Immortal King expert, a grade higher than a Great Luo Golden Immortal. So, Tian Muyun was naturally also a half-step Immortal King expert.

One had to go through Human Immortal, Earth Immortal, Heaven Immortal, Divine Immortal, and the Great Luo Golden Immortal first before becoming the King, the Immortal King realm. Presently, Jiang Chen was merely a puny early Earth Immortal expert. He was able to kill early Heaven Immortal expert with his full strength, but he stood no chance against midHeaven Immortal expert, let alone fighting a powerful half-step Immortal King. The difference between him and Tian Muyun right now was like Heaven and Earth. Both of them weren't comparable at all.

Furthermore, Tian Muyun was the pavilion master of Skycloud Pavilion and a top figure in One-Line-Sky. Therefore, he still had a long way to go in One-Line-Sky.

“Kill when there are people. Compete when there are other major powers. Skycloud Pavilion won't be the only major power in One-Line-Sky. I still know nothing about it. I have to gather some information to understand all the major powers in One-Line-Sky.”

Muttered Jiang Chen. This was his first time coming to One-Line-Sky. To put it another way, he was no different than an idiot. Saint Origin World was his old home, which gave him the advantage over plenty of people and there was basically nothing that he didn't know back in that world, but in this world, he was just like a newbie, like a young fledgling.

However, that didn't scare him. After being reincarnated into this life, his disposition was beyond ordinary. He would never become a weakling wherever he went.

He kept his Qi and walked forward leisurely.

“Quick, you fools! If we can’t reach the destination before the day turns dark, one of your eyes will be gouged out!”

A harsh voice entered Jiang Chen’s ears. It came from the mountains ahead. If it wasn’t for his keen sense of hearing, he wouldn’t be able to hear it.

“Some people are just ahead. Let’s see what’s going on there.”

Said Jiang Chen. Then, he strode towards the source of the voice.

Below the mountain was a rugged pathway lined with stones and trees on both sides. There were roughly 20 of them on the road. There were four of them who wore the same clothes – pale yellow robes, and had the same arrogant expression on their faces. Two were on the left and right side while the other two were at front and back, guarding the twenty plus people in the middle who looked either badly or slightly injured. Blood was flowing out of their wounds. There was a man whose arm had been cut off, but he didn’t stop to move forward.

These people looked like slaves that had been held captive. They were constantly being reprimanded by the four men who were holding saw-toothed whips in their hands. These guards would whip whenever they found any of these people annoying and not following orders. The damage caused by this whip was tremendous. It was already imaginable what kind of damage it would do to the victim.

Pa!

A whip was lashed on a man’s back from behind. His flesh burst open and blood spatter outwards. The attacker was only a mid Earth Immortal expert, but the whip wasn’t bearable by ordinary people.

“It’s an honor for you lowly people to become the Profound Sun Sect’s slaves.”

One of the disciples of the sect kept on lashing and shouted loudly.

These guards were the disciples of Profound Sun Sect which was a major power like the Skycloud Pavilion in One-Line-Sky. The cultivation of these four disciples weren't weak either. The strongest amongst them was a late Earth Immortal realm and the weakest was a mid Earth Immortal realm. However, the servants that were walking in the middle, their cultivation varied greatly. The highest cultivation was a mid Earth Immortal expert and the weakest was merely an early Human Immortal expert. In One-Line-Sky, Human Immortal experts were considered and regarded as the lowest ranked Immortals.

The one who was being whipped had already suffered severe injuries. Despite the fact that he was only a late Human Immortal expert, he still couldn't bear such continuous torture. This whip that was lashed on him cause him to stagger, fortunately, someone caught him in time to prevent him from falling down.”

“Who asks you to help him up, brat?”

The disciple of the Profound Sun Sect was irritated. He shifted his attention to the youth who held the other person up. This youth seemed to be twentyish years old. He had a handsome face, a head full of white hair and clothes stained with so much blood that it had already lost its color. What was more striking was that this young man's left arm had already vanished entirely.

Hua La.....

Everyone turned their heads to the white-haired youth. Their eyes were filled with pity. This youth was merely a mid Human Immortal expert, but he had been incomparably persistent which naturally brought him more torture compared to the others. The disciples of Profound Sun Sect had been treating him as a pleasure along the way. As long as they had the time, they would torture this youth. One of his arm had already been cut off. If this youth

was replaced by an ordinary man, he certainly couldn't bear it and would die due to extreme pain, however, this youth's extraordinary perseverance still kept him alive.

“Humph!”

The white-haired youth ignored the disciple of Profound Sun Sect.

Seeing what happened, the disciple revealed a cold smirk. Clearly, he had grown accustomed to this youth's attitude. Immediately, he raced forth, grabbed the youth's shoulder and slammed him against a big rock.

Bang!

The white-haired youth was smashed against the big rock. The rock was crushed but the youth seemed fine. It showed how strong this youth's physique was.

“Brat, you think that I won't dare to kill you?”

The disciple stared at the youth like he enjoyed torturing this slave.

“Kill me if you have the guts. Or else, I will kill you sooner or later.”

The white-haired youth didn't have the slightest hint of fear. His eyes were filled with pride that came from the core of his bones.

“This brat is extremely stubborn. Why don't I cut off another arm of his? I would like to see how long he can last after that.”

Another disciple said with a smile, then he came to the youth's side.

“I think this will do.”

Both of them exchanged a smile. It had become a pleasure for them to torture this white-haired youth along the way.

The disciple raised his whip and was going to lash at the youth's

other arm. It was imaginable that this arm absolutely wouldn't remain intact after this lash.

Meanwhile, everything that happened was seen by Jiang Chen clearly. When he saw the appearance of the white-haired youth, his facial expression changed drastically.

“Ah Yan.”

Jiang Chen yelled. He hadn't dreamt of meeting Han Yan here. One should know that since his ascension until now, it has been merely twenty days and Han Yan's cultivation was still far away from ascending to this world. Despite Han Yan having an extraordinary talent, it was impossible for him to ascend to this world in such a short period of time, but who else could it be if this white-haired youth wasn't Han Yan?

Jiang Chen might not be able to recognize the other people, but absolutely not Han Yan, his sworn brother.

“Stop!”

As the long whip was about to lash down on the arm, Jiang Chen yelled loudly and rushed forward like a ray of light.

Chapter 1107 – Kill Unblinkingly

The hand of the disciple stopped in mid-air along with the whip when he heard the sudden yell. Everybody turned towards the source of sound. Due to Jiang Chen moving too fast, the others could only see the afterimage of a man flashing by. In the next moment, Jiang Chen appeared in front of the disciple who was holding the whip.

“Little Chen.”

Han Yan exclaimed when he saw Jiang Chen. His despairing eyes immediately lit up with hope and joy that it made him forgot about his injuries, including the insult and tortures that he had experienced, it was as if seeing Jiang Chen was the happiest thing in this world.

Furthermore, the instant that Jiang Chen appeared, his tensed emotion settled down, he knew that he would be saved as long as this man was around. No matter how difficult the situation was, Jiang Chen would always have a way to deal with it.

“Ah Yan, it’s really you.”

Similarly, Jiang Chen was pleasantly surprised. At this moment, he had totally ignored the disciples of Profound Sun Sect. He bent over quickly to hold Han Yan up. Seeing Han Yan’s present state, his bloody wounds and his chopped shoulder, his eyes turned slightly red all of a sudden. He could feel a tug from his heart because this was his own brother, his brother’s arm.

Although Jiang Chen had no idea what had happened here, he could imagine already what Han Yan faced before this.

Hong!

A surge of fury rushed out of Jiang Chen’s body. This was the first time that he had ever gotten so angry since he arrived in the Immortal World. That was the true fury that came from the

bottom of his heart. The moment this fury burned inside of him, somebody would definitely get incinerated as well.

Meeting his brother or sister in this unfamiliar world was supposed to be a very delightful thing, however, the scene in front was really revolting. Initially, he had tons of questions to ask Han Yan, however, it had to wait until he avenged his brother first.

“Get lost! Who the hell are you brat! How dare you block me?”

The disciple was stunned for a while before regained his senses. Anyone should know how powerful the Profound Sun Sect was in One-Line-Sky. Every disciple of this sect had high status and no one dared to provoke them. However, this youth who came out of nowhere suddenly interrupted their business? Was he asking for death?

“Senior Brother Liu, it seems like both of them know each other.” The other disciple said.

“Humph! That’s even better. This brat is an Earth Immortal expert and seems quite talented. However, he has offended me, which only left him a single route – death.”

The man who was called Senior Brother Liu already prepared his long whip, however, his target wasn’t Han Yan this time. He was aiming at Jiang Chen. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was only an early Earth Immortal expert, while he was a mid Earth Immortal expert. He would never put this weakling in his eyes.

Pa!

A crisp sound was heard, but that wasn’t the sound that came from whipping Jiang Chen, it came from Jiang Chen grabbing his whip.

Jiang Chen whirled abruptly. Both of his eyes were so red that it seemed as if blood was about to flow out from the sockets of his eyes. Looking at such a beast-like expression, Senior Brother Liu couldn’t help but shiver internally because of fear.

Dammit! How could I be afraid of a puny early Earth Immortal?

Senior Brother Liu swore in his heart, then he yelled at Jiang Chen. “What a good brat! You are definitely courting death to counter my lash!”

He was enraged; he channeled all of his energy in his hands and pulled it hard, trying to seize the whip back from Jiang Chen’s hand, but to his surprise, no matter how hard he tried, the long whip was stuck in Jiang Chen’s hand.

“Awesome.”

Han Yan’s eyes sparkled when he saw this. It relieved his worries when he sensed Jiang Chen’s cultivation base.

Jiang Chen exerted strength in his hand. Senior Brother Liu couldn’t hold it anymore, and the long whip was seized away from him. Then, he waved the whip into a snake-like circle and curled it around Senior Brother Liu’s neck, then pulled the man towards him.

The saw-tooth on the long whip went deep into Senior Brother Liu’s flesh, and blood was trickling out. A surge of powerful energy rushed out of his body, trying to deflect the whip off, only to find it useless.

At this time, he was feeling really scared. It was rare for someone to be this scared; he could feel the threat of death.

“Bastard, you dare to harm me?” Senior Brother Liu scolded.

Hua La!

Upon seeing what had happened, the two disciples who were walking at the front quickly came to their comrade’s aid. The leader was a late Earth Immortal expert.

“Stop! Who are you? How dare you harm the people of Profound Sun Sect! Is it because you are tired of living?”

That late Earth Immortal disciple snarled.

“Anyone who hurts my brother should DIE.”

Jiang Chen didn't bother to look at the other arrogant disciple. He exerted force on the whip. With a mournful cry and sawing sound, Senior Brother Liu's head was detached from his body, flying high up in the sky.

In the last moment before his death, his eyes were still wide open, as if he had just experienced the scariest thing in this world. That was a shock that he had never felt before. Even in his dreams, he had never imagined that Jiang Chen would really kill him.

To Jiang Chen, he wouldn't put the Profound Sun Sect in his eyes, he didn't even have the time to think who they were. What he only saw was Han Yan's injuries and severed arm that was caused by these few bastards. Therefore, they must pay the price with their lives in order to quell Jiang Chen's fury.

Hua La.....

The scene immediately caused a hurricane, not only amongst the three remaining disciples of Profound Sun Sect, but also the slaves who had been held captive. Each and every one of them looked incomparably shocked. The Earth Immortal experts within them could see Jiang Chen's cultivation, but none of them thought that this white-robed youth would be this powerful.

However, Jiang Chen's power was not the only thing that shocked them. But his audacity as well. Frankly, there weren't many people in One-Line-Sky who dared to kill the disciple of Profound Sun Sect.

Of course, there were also many servants who had expectant eyes, especially those who were tortured by Senior Brother Liu. This helped all of them express the stifling grievance in their hearts. Furthermore, Jiang Chen's power had given them a glimmer of hope, the hope of survival.

“Son of a b*tch! You audacious maniac! How dare you kill a

disciple of Profound Sun Sect! You are truly courting death!”

The late Earth Immortal disciple was infuriated. Three of the disciples changed their way of looking at Jiang Chen. They could never believe it. Who gave Jiang Chen the courage to kill the disciple of Profound Sun Sect; it was no different than digging one's own grave?

“The three of you will have to die as well. If you don't want to die, kneel down and kowtow to my brother. Perhaps I will reconsider whether to kill you all after that.”

Jiang Chen stared at the three of them coldly. His current strength was already capable of killing a half-step Heaven Immortal. In his half-dragon form, he could kill an early Heaven Immortal. Two out of the three were mid Earth Immortal and one was a late Earth Immortal. Jiang Chen would never place them in his eyes. Killing any of them would be as easy as lifting his hand.

“Courting death!”

The two midEarth Immortal disciples were the first to charge. As disciples of Profound Sun Sect, they had never experienced this kind of threat before, and it was always them who threatened the others around. No one would dare to act wildly in front of them, especially after hearing the name of their sect. In One-Line-Sky, Profound Sun Sect was a golden name that drew fear from anyone.

Pa! Pa!

However, as soon as the two disciples reached Jiang Chen, they were lashed by Jiang Chen from right to left. Both of their heads were severed, blood gushed out, insanely turning the whole scene violent. In the blink of an eye, three out of four disciples of Profound Sun Sect were killed.

The scene was silent, but a lot of people were gaping at it. It was too cruel. No one knew where this ruthless youth came from. He was certainly a hundred times more violent than the four bastards

of Profound Sun Sect.

Gulp!

The last disciple gulped nervously. Although he was a late Earth Immortal expert, all he had right now was fear while standing in front of Jiang Chen. He saw it very clearly how Jiang Chen killed those mid Earth Immortal comrades of his; it was as simple as slaughtering dogs.

If Jiang Chen was replaced by him, he wouldn't be able to kill those three junior brothers of his so easily. If one look at it from another angle, he was definitely no match for Jiang Chen.

“You-what is your name?”

The disciple's voice was quivering.

“You don't need to know about that.” Jiang Chen shook his head.

“Do you have any idea what you have done? In One-Line-Sky, no one dared to kill the people of Profound Sun Sect. Now that you have killed the disciples of our sect, there is no place for you to hide in One-Line-Sky anymore.”

The disciple threatened.

“Seems like the Profound Sun Sect has too much importance in your heart. Unfortunately, it's nothing in my heart at all. I will kill you now and you don't have to resist, because it will only be pointless. Killing you is just as easy as killing them.”

Jiang Chen showed a cruel smile at the corner of his mouth. The long whip was lashed forth like a venomous snake.

It seemed like the disciple had been prepared for this. He charged forward with the sword in his hand which he had already summoned moments ago.

Although his reaction wasn't slow, his strength was no match for Jiang Chen. His sword was deflected from his grip the moment it touched the whip.

Pu Chi!

The whip was pulled straight like a sharp sword. It penetrated through the disciple's chest with a 'Pu Chi' Sound.

“You, you, you.....”

He could feel that the vital force in his body was diminishing. His eyes began to blur. This was a lethal strike. The attack made by Jiang Chen had always been deadly, he would never give his enemy a chance \.

“There are things that have to be done at all cost. Even if it cost you a hundred lives, it won't be as important as my brother's arm.”

Jiang Chen said coldly. His eyes had never blinked once from the beginning until now.

Chapter 1108 – The Experience

The four disciples of Profound Sun Sect were killed in a casual way. Jiang Chen's expression remained unchanged. He helped the badly injured Han Yan to one direction, ignoring the other people around.

“May I ask what young master's name is? We have to thank young master for saving all of us today. We will certainly remember young master's name and kindness.”

At this time, an Earth Immortal expert cupped his fists at Jiang Chen's back and said. In their hearts, Jiang Chen was their savior and that was no ordinary kindness. If it wasn't because of Jiang Chen's sudden emergence today, it was imaginable what they would face next. They would become the lower class slaves of the Profound Sun Sect until they die.

“Just run for your lives.”

Jiang Chen said without turning his head, then vanished with Han Yan in their line of sight. The reason Jiang Chen did this wasn't to save them. He wouldn't risk offending a big sect like Profound Sun Sect because of several people that he didn't know. He wasn't a fool. There were cruelty everywhere in the Immortal World. Compassion wouldn't solve everything as there were too many people who needed help. Even the true savior of the world wouldn't be able to save everyone. This was the law of the jungle. People would die every day and many were dying currently.

The main reason that Jiang Chen interfered was because of Han Yan who was his life-and-death brother. He was even willing to offend all the major powers in One-Line-Sky for his sworn brother.

In a valley a few hundred miles away.

The scenery of the mountains was captivating. Birds were singing. The fragrance of flowers filled the air and streams were

flowing back to the sea incessantly. It was no doubt a nice place. Jiang Chen had brought Han Yan to this remote place to treat his injuries.

He had given Han Yan a set of clean clothes, then took out some vulnerary pills and channeled as much wood spiritual energy into Han Yan as he could.

Han Yan had been injured badly. Not only was one of his arms cut off, his origin had also been damaged slightly. But of course, his injuries were considered nothing compared to Ouyang He's. At least, Jiang Chen was able to heal such injuries in a short period of time.

However, it was incomparably hard for the arm to regrow. If it was back in Saint Origin World, it wasn't a problem for Han Yan to regrow his arm at all even if he was still a peak Great Saint at that time. In the Immortal World, due to the restriction of the world's law, Human Immortal couldn't even fly, let alone regrow an arm.

Hiss!

As the wood essence surged through Han Yan's body, he couldn't help but let out sighs of relief due to comfort, like a river that had dried up for a long time suddenly meeting the rainfall. Knowing that Jiang Chen was healing his body, he quickly circulated his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline to the maximum.

Han Yan's physique was extraordinary and powerful. It was the physique of an Ancient Divine Devil which he inherited from an existence who was on par with the Heavenly God experts in ancient times. If he was replaced by an ordinary person, he would've already died from the horrendous torture earlier on.

With Jiang Chen's pills and wood spiritual Qi and the power of his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, it wasn't hard for him to achieve full recovery.

Two hours later, Jiang Chen stopped the channeling. Han Yan

took a deep breath and opened his eyes. His eyes had returned to its usual vigorous expression. Although he still seemed a little weak, it was many times better than before.

“Little Chen, I had never thought of meeting you here. If it wasn’t for you, I’m afraid that I would’ve been played to death by those bastards of Profound Sun Sect.” Said Han Yan in a surprised tone.

“It’s good that you are alright. Your injuries will heal itself gradually. I’m thrilled that we were able to meet in this Immortal World so quickly. Oh ya, Ah Yan, was it because you had some rare encounter that helped you to ascend so quickly?” Jiang Chen asked.

“There was no rare encounter. After you and Big Yellow ascended, Tyrant, Xiao Yu, Sister Ning and I have put all of our attention in advancement. At the last moment, my Ancient Divine Devil bloodline had a great effect. Eventually, it took me three years to reach the peak of the realm, and then ascended.”

Said Han Yan. “Little Chen, how have you been in these past three years?”

“What? Three years? I have ascended to this world for merely twenty days. Are you mistaken?”

Jiang Chen eyes went wide all of a sudden after hearing what Han Yan said. It gave him the urge to spurt out blood. He was sure that he had only been in this new world for twenty days. So, where did the three years come from?

“How could that be? I have already ascended to this world roughly half-a-month ago. How could you be here for only twenty days?”

Han Yan was dumbfounded. Both of them tried to calculate the time and found out that the difference was only three days. How could that be possible? Han Yan knew that he had practiced hard

in those three years.

“I know now. It seems like there is a huge difference between the Immortal World and the world beneath. The law of this world is very different than the Mortal World, including the law of time. Some fundamental changes must have taken place once one ascends to this world from Saint Origin World.” Jiang Chen realized what was happening now.

“You mean one day in the Immortal World is equivalent to one year in Saint Origin World?” Han Yan started to comprehend the situation as well.

“That’s right. It has to be it. It’s because of the difference in the law of time. This can be the only explanation for our situation.”

Jiang Chen nodded. Only the difference in the laws of time could cause this sort of variation.

“If it is what you said, then it has already been nearly twenty years in Saint Origin World. In other words, Tyrant, Xiao Yu and Sister Ning should have ascended into this world too.” Han Yan got a clear picture of it now.

“It must be so. It seems like the day of us uniting again is getting nearer, but the Immortal World is just too large to know which corner they have arrived at after their ascension.”

Said Jiang Chen delightfully and somewhat worriedly. After all, the Immortal World was way more dangerous compared to Saint Origin World. Perhaps they were the famous figure in Saint Origin World. However, they had to start from scratch the moment they arrived in this new world. Han Yan’s encounter was a clear example for this. This was also what made Jiang Chen worried for Yan Chenyu and the others now.

“Little Chen, weren’t you together with Big Yellow when you ascended? Why isn’t he with you now?” Asked Han Yan.

“The two of us were forcefully separated at the end of the

passageway. At that time, I was attacked inexplicably by some expert in the Immortal World. If it wasn't for the protection of the Immortal Mark, I would've died."

Jiang Chen shook his head, he had no idea where Big Yellow was at now.

"What? You have just ascended to the Immortal World and knew nothing in this world. How could some expert try to kill you?"

Han Yan was astounded. This wasn't his first or second day of being here. He also knew that Human Immortals were nothing in this world. No experts would put any Human Immortal in their eyes. Plus, Jiang Chen was just an ascendant at that time. Who would dare plan to kill an ascendant even before he arrived here?

"I have already guessed who that expert was. Do you still remember Nan Bei Chao?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"You mean there is a Nan Bei Chao in the Immortal World?"

Han Yan's expression was tensed. He would never forget someone like Nan Bei Chao. Back in Qi Province until the Void Triangular Domain, they had met this man. He was Jiang Chen's sworn enemy, his arch-enemy.

"That's right. Those Nan Bei Chaos' were just clones of the original. If I'm not mistaken, the real Nan Bei Chao is in this Immortal World. The degree of his strength is beyond your imagination. I'm afraid that he also has a certain status in this world, but that's fine. The conflict that hasn't been resolved in Saint Origin World will be resolved here. It's only a matter of time. With such a powerful enemy in this world, I won't be lonely anymore."

Jiang Chen revealed a hint of a smile. His heart was full of anticipation while thinking about the real Nan Bei Chao.

"Ah Yan, it seems like your Ancient Divine Devil bloodline is doing great. You have already advanced to the mid Human

Immortal realm in roughly half-a-month's time. However, mid Human Immortal experts are nothing but more than a fart in this world."

Jiang Chen patted Han Yan's shoulder and said. Han Yan's ability to advance to the mid Human Immortal realm from early Human Immortal realm proved that he had a powerful bloodline, but Human Immortal was just too weak in One-Line-Sky.

After listening to what Jiang Chen said, Han Yan forced a smile. How could he not know how weak Human Immortal was? Otherwise, he wouldn't have encountered those incidents earlier.

"Little Chen, you are truly the scary one. I initially thought that you were somewhat slow in advancing to the Earth Immortal realm in three years' time. However, I have only found out that you are merely three days ahead of me. Plus, you can already kill late Earth Immortals with ease. Comparing you with me, I'm just too far away from your current level."

Han Yan shook his head, but he understood Jiang Chen incomparably well. He wouldn't feel extremely surprised no matter how high Jiang Chen had reached or how fast he had grown, Jiang Chen had created too many miracles back in Saint Origin World.

When these two brothers reunited again, naturally they have lots to talk about. Jiang Chen asked plenty of things about his family. Now that Martial Saint Dynasty had already conquered the entire Saint Origin World, it had been as stable as Mount Tai, in other words, Jiang Chen could worry less about the situation of his family.

Subsequently, he told Han Yan everything that he had encountered since his ascension. Most were related to the matters in Yan City. He didn't say anything about Ouyang He and Tian Muyun, it was not because he didn't trust Han Yan. He just felt that it wasn't necessary to tell Han Yan those things.

“By the way, Ah Yan. How did you fall into Profound Sun Sect’s hands? What has actually happened?” Asked Jiang Chen curiously.

“I heard that the Profound Sun Sect has opened up several mines. So they have been looking for rogue cultivators from remote areas to be taken as slaves for the mines. Unfortunately, I was captured by them. Given my cultivation, I was totally no match for them. I won’t talk about the process. If it wasn’t because I have encountered you today, the repercussion would be unimaginable.” Han Yan smiled wryly.

Chapter 1109 – Night Invasion of the Ore Mine (1)

Thinking about the encounters of the past few days gave Han Yan the feeling of going through hell. It was a kind of inhuman devastation. He could never imagine that a first class existence of Saint Origin World would receive this kind of treatment after he had just arrived. Fortunately, he had met Jiang Chen, otherwise, he would've already lost his life.

“Is Profound Sun Sect very strong?” Asked Jiang Chen with a frown.

“Of course, the Profound Sun Sect is one of the four major powers in One-Line-Sky. No one will dare to offend this tyrant.”

Said Han Yan. He had been in One-Line-Sky all these days. Although he had been treated like a slave, he had gained quite a lot of information about One-Line-Sky. Putting the other things aside, he had no doubt about the four major powers that symbolized One-Line-Sky.

“Four major powers? Ah Yan, I have just arrived in One-Line-Sky. Tell me more about the situation here.” Said Jiang Chen.

“There are four major powers in One-Line-Sky. They are the two big sects and two aristocratic families. The two big sects are Skycloud Pavilion and Profound Sun Sect while the two aristocratic families are Huangfu Family and Yun Family. You know that there will be fierce competition when there are different powers. Naturally, the four major powers aren't getting along with each other. Among them, Skycloud Pavilion and Profound Sun Sect don't have good relationship with one another, whereas the Huangfu Family and Yun Family are the enemy of each other. The four that tortured me earlier were just outer disciples of Profound Sun Sect.” Said Han Yan.

“So those Earth Immortals were only outer disciples. Sure enough, the major powers of One-Line-Sky isn’t comparable to a small place like Yan City. I have come here for the Skycloud Pavilion, but didn’t expect to offend Profound Sun Sect first.”

Jiang Chen smiled. Those major powers didn’t concern him at all. There was only one target in the Skycloud Pavilion-Tian Muyun. He never had any grudge against the pavilion. Plus, it was the major power built by Ouyang He’s blood, sweat and tears. He could never destroy the empire that belonged to that old man.

Since he had already offended the Profound Sun Sect, he had to change his plan, find ways to approach Skycloud Pavilion and borrow their strength to fight against Profound Sun Sect. Furthermore, he had to eliminate Tian Muyun. After that, Skycloud Pavilion would prosper under his management, which would allow Ouyang He to finally rest in peace.

“You have enemies in Skycloud Pavilion?” Asked Han Yan.

“Sort of. We have to find a way to get into Skycloud Pavilion. Said Jiang Chen.

“Do you have any plans?”

Asked Han Yan. He had no idea what kind of enmity he had within him, but he would always support whatever Jiang Chen decided to do unconditionally.

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled with wisdom.

“Today, I have killed four Profound Sun Sect disciples. This matter won’t stay silent for long. It is very simple for Profound Sun Sect to find information about me because a lot of people had seen my face. You mentioned that Skycloud Pavilion has the worst relationship with Profound Sun Sect. Both of them are hostile to each other. So, killing the people of Profound Sun Sect will make me a friend of Skycloud Pavilion. As soon as this matter is spread, some people will start to notice us, but this is not enough yet. We

still have to do a lot more. We can't let this matter go just like this after all the torture they had used on you."

Jiang Chen revealed a trace of a cold smile. New plans began to race in his mind.

"I'll proceed with whatever your plan is. My current cultivation base is just too weak. Plus, I have injuries and I'm short of one arm now. It is impossible for me to survive in this world with this kind of state. I'm afraid that I will only be a burden for you."

Han Yan forced a smile. He desired to fight alongside Jiang Chen, but the reality made him feel helpless.

Seeing Han Yan's somewhat despairing face slightly saddened Jiang Chen. He patted Han Yan's shoulder. "Ah Yan, you are the true inheritor of the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline. Even the geniuses of those super major powers in the Immortal World may not necessarily outperform you in talent. Regarding your injuries, I will find a way to help you recover it. There is no end to cultivation. At least for us, there is still a very long, long way to go, and inevitably, there will be various setbacks in the process that we must confront with a strong heart. No matter what difficulties we encounter, our minds should never be shaken."

Jiang Chen's words ignited the hope in Han Yan's heart once more. The despair in his eyes vanished in a flash. Then, he looked towards Jiang Chen and nodded solemnly. "Little Chen, what you said is true. This setback is nothing to me. I'm the inheritor of the Ancient Divine Devil. It doesn't matter whether it's in One-Line-Sky or in the Immortal World, we'll create our own glorious empire just like what we did back in Saint Origin World."

"Haha! That's right brother!"

Jiang Chen laughed aloud and gave a high five to each other. Although they were still very weak, this boundless Immortal World was destined to be thrown into chaos because of their presence.

“Ah Yan, you said that Profound Sun Sect have opened up some ore mines and have you guys be the slaves of these mines. Do you know where the location of any of the mines is?” Asked Jiang Chen.

“I don’t have a clue about it, but according to what they said, we were supposed to arrive there before nightfall. I estimate that it shouldn’t be very far from where we are at just now and I know the general direction of it. Little Chen, you are not thinking of invading their ore mine, are you?”

Han Yan stared at Jiang Chen in surprise. His brother’s audacity might have gone a little too far.

“Of course, since we are already their enemies, we should initiate some bloodshed, isn’t that right?” Said Jiang Chen casually.

“It will be a great pleasure to get rid of their ore mine, but this is just too dangerous. To any major power in the Immortal World, an ore mine is their lifeblood. They will certainly have a great deal of defense and high level experts guarding the mines. With our current strength, I’m afraid that going there is no different than sending ourselves to hell.”

Said Han Yan. Although it was very exciting to eradicate their enemy’s ore mine, the danger of such an act was imaginable. A single carelessness would put them in eternal damnation.

“Don’t worry. I know what to do. Didn’t you say that Profound Sun Sect has opened a few ore mines instead one? I believe that those ore mines have different grades just like the Immortal Meta Stones. Of all the ore mines, we will pick the lowest grade, that means that the defense won’t be as tight as the others. Additionally, we will observe it secretly, strike when there’s a chance, stay put and wait if there isn’t.”

Said Jiang Chen with a smile. His face was overflowing with confidence.

“Well then, we will execute our plan after nightfall.”

Han Yan nodded. He could use the remaining time to get a full recovery.

“Anyway little Chen, what’s your current cultivation now? I saw that the late Earth Immortal expert couldn’t even stand a single blow of yours.” Asked Han Yan with curiosity.

“My current cultivation is early Earth Immortal realm. With my combat strength, I can kill any opponent who is two levels above me, which means that I can easily kill any mid Earth Immortal, late Earth Immortal and even half-step Heaven Immortal expert. If I use my half-dragon form, I can even kill an early Heaven Immortal expert. Plus, I have my Flaming and dragon wings as my trump card. With my flying ability, it’s very simple for me to kill any early Heaven Immortal expert.”

Said Jiang Chen. He had nothing to hide before Han Yan.

Killing an early Heaven Immortal while only being an early Earth Immortal? Han Yan would never believe it if this didn’t come from Jiang Chen’s own mouth. He was a little shocked because he had known Jiang Chen not only for one or two days. Back in Saint Origin World, Jiang Chen’s power and fame was unsurpassed.

“You are truly abnormal. Any place you go will never have peace. It seems like One-Line-Sky was destined to become bustling because of your arrival.”

Han Yan said with a smile. This was no prediction, it was the fact.

Chapter 1110 – Night Invasion of the Ore Mine (2)

The night curtain blotted out the sky very quickly. There wasn't a single starlight in the dark sky. This was a night where a big event would take place.

Apart from the lost arm, Han Yan's other injuries have already fully recovered. Furthermore, he had gained tremendous benefits from this injury, pushing his cultivation to the peak of mid Human Immortal realm, only a step away towards the late Human Immortal realm. If it wasn't because of his missing arm, he would have advanced to the late Human Immortal realm by now.

Jiang Chen felt incomparably distressed about Han Yan's arm. This was after all the Immortal World. If it was back in Saint Origin World, he would have tens of thousands of way of regrowing Han Yan's arm. Due to the limitations of the world's law and his mere Earth Immortal cultivation, it was extremely hard for him to regrow any arm even with the help of the wood essence.

However, he wasn't discouraged by it. There would be a solution regardless of how difficult the situation was as long as he doesn't give up. He was sure that he would find a way to help Han Yan regrow his arm.

Right now, there was an important task that needed his attention – invading an ore mine of Profound Sun Sect. Since he had arrived at One-Line-Sky, he had to do something big. Otherwise, his trip here would be in vain. This was the right time to use Profound Sun Sect to draw Skycloud Pavilion's attention. Subsequently, he would become a member of the pavilion, bringing him a step closer to his target.

This was his purpose of coming to One-Line-Sky. Although it wasn't a perfect plan, it was the most effective at the moment.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan exchanged a glance and smiled. Then, they turned into two shadows and vanished in the valley. It had always been cool to do illegal things together with his brother. Too bad, Big Yellow wasn't with them. Or else, this endeavour would be a lot more fun.

Jiang Chen was travelling extremely fast. He had already reached a few thousand miles within an hour. And this included the fact that he was carrying Han Yan along. Under to Han Yan's lead, they saw a miniature ore mine ahead. Many tents had been set up outside the hill mine. The inside of the mine was brightly lit, giving a sense of life and vitality to this desolate place.

"Little Chen, we are already close to the territory of Profound Sun Sect now. That hill ahead should be the smallest ore mine of Profound Sun Sect. However, I don't know whether there are any high-level experts guarding this place." Said Han Yan softly.

"Ah Yan, I will open the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda for you. And then we will head over there to find out."

Said Jiang Chen. He then tore an opening on the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. To him, this pagoda was simply a divine weapon. Under the limit of the world's law, The spatial force was solidified. No one below the Immortal King realm would be able to rip the void open. These cultivators couldn't even open their Qi Sea. Therefore most of the Immortals still required spatial rings to store items. What surprised Jiang Chen was that the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda wasn't the least bit affected by the world's law. It could be opened any time which provided him a great deal of advantage over the others.

"Alright."

Han Yan went into it without hesitation. He had already known about this divine item of Jiang Chen before, but he also didn't imagine that this item was still useable in the Immortal World. It was best for him to enter the pagoda as his cultivation was still too

weak; he would be easily detected by the enemies.

Even from afar, they could already hear the sound coming inside of the ore mine. That was the sound of the mining activities. Although this was not a huge ore mine, it was incomparably big compared to the tiny ore mine near Yan City. Otherwise, the Profound Sun Sect wouldn't select this ore mine.

Outside the mine stood many disciples in Profound Sun Sect's uniform. Those who were mining inside the mine were the slaves they had captured. All the disciples were Earth Immortal experts as Earth Immortal realm was the basic requirement for one to become a disciple of Profound Sun Sect. These outer disciples had basically no status in the sect.

Currently, in the middle of several tents was an empty land occupied by plenty of disciples. Each and every one of their faces were overflowing with anger as they looked at the four dead bodies lying on the ground. These four people died a tragic death. Three out of the four had their heads and necks detached from their bodies.

“Audacious to the extreme! How dare someone in One-Line-Sky used this means to kill our people?”

“Who did this?!”

“Senior Brother Luo, we can't leave this matter as it is. I guess that it has to be the doing of the Skycloud Pavilion.”

The leader amongst them was an ordinary-looking youth with very robust physique and had the highest cultivation – early Heaven Immortal realm. Standing next to him was also another early Heaven Immortal expert.

Disciples who reached the Heaven Immortal realm would become inner sect disciples of Profound Sun Sect. In addition, his age indicated that he had a very good talent which was incomparable to experts like Yan Dongliu. Because this wasn't a very big ore

mine, the Profound Sun Sect only sent two early Heaven Immortal disciples to guard this place.

“It is not the doing of Skycloud Pavilion. It’s true that we are constantly fighting with Skycloud Pavilion and most of them were direct conflicts. Additionally, Skycloud Pavilion also enslaves rogue cultivators just like us, but we never had a feud regarding this matter. Besides, both major powers would never act so ruthlessly despite the incessant competition between the two. These injuries clearly showed that it was done by a single person. All of them died in a single blow. The attacker’s cultivation and power is definitely above them.”

Senior Brother Luo spoke. His name was Luo Xiang, an inner sect disciple of Profound Sun Sect. Although he didn’t have a very high status in the sect, he was a lot more respectable than any outer sect disciple.

“Then who could it be?”

Most of them were confused. Anyone should know that except for Skycloud Pavilion, no one in One-Line-Sky has the audacity to offend Profound Sun Sect directly. Huangfu Family and Yun Family had already been competing against each other. It would be strange for them to point their spearhead to Profound Sun Sect. Even if they had really decided to attack our sect, they wouldn’t be interested with only a few outer disciples.

“This case must be resolved regardless of whoever it was. No one should easily touch the people of Profound Sun Sect. Those who offended our sect will only have one outcome – death.”

Luo Xiang said in an incomparably harsh tone. In One-Line-Sky, Profound Sun Sect was indeed qualified to speak in such a manner.

“Move on! Faster!”

At this time, two disciples of Profound Sun Sect were pulling two wounded cultivators towards their group.

“Get on your knees.”

One disciple was incomparably strong. With an exertion of force, he pressed the two people to the ground. Apparently, the two of them had been scared to death. All they could do was to kneel down as the disciple ordered.

“Senior Brother Luo, these two men were the slaves rescued by that mysterious person, however, they were recaptured by us when we were searching for them.” Another disciple spoke.

This was clearly seen by Jiang Chen. These two slaves were no doubt the people who were with Han Yan earlier. After killing the four disciples, all of them were free to flee. Unfortunately, these two failed to escape from the evil drip. However, this was quite normal. In One-Line-Sky, whenever Profound Sun Sect was determined to find someone, they would eventually find it.

“Little Chen, it seems like they are looking for us.” Said Han Yan.

“It doesn’t matter. I’m going to let them know anyway.”

Jiang Chen smiled, seemingly unconcerned.

Every disciple on the scene zeroed in on the two slaves, causing them to tremble in fear and didn’t dare lift up their heads. They were already very clear about their fate. They had heard the means used by Profound Sun Sect. There would be no chance for them to live the moment they fell into the hands of this sect.

“Tell me, who was the one that saved you two and killed the disciples of our Profound Sun Sect?” Asked Luo Xiang.

“He-he’s a youth in white robe.”

A man spoke in a quivering voice. He wouldn’t dare show the slightest bit of carelessness while speaking to Luo Xiang.

“What kind of youth? What’s his name? Someone asked.

“I don’t know. I have asked for his name, but he didn’t say.”

That man answered, his forehead was already covered with beads

of sweat.

Pa!

A foot was stomped on that man's face, pressing him so hard to the ground that he spurted out blood.

"Spare my life, spare my life..."

That man was extremely frightened. He had been suffering the torture of Profound Sun Sect all this while. After being granted the chance to escape, he was captured by them once again. His current mental state was already on the brink of collapse.

"Describe everything that has happened during the day. Or else, I will make you bear a suffering that is worse than death." Another disciple said maliciously.

"Okay. I will tell you. There was a white-haired youth amongst our group. He was merely a mid Human Immortal expert, but he continuously scuffled with the geniuses of Profound Sun Sect along the way, which caused him to suffer tremendous torture and lose one of his arms. Before we reached that valley, a white-robed youth emerged all of a sudden and saved that white-haired youth. In other words, he knew that white-haired youth. He seemed twentyish and had a cultivation of an early Earth Immortal."

The man was trying hard to recall the scene, fearing that one wrong word would bring him endless torture.

"Bullsh*t! How could an early Earth Immortal expert kill a late Earth Immortal disciple of our sect? It seems like what you said is completely not true."

Someone shouted. They would never believe that the four outer sect disciples of their Profound Sun Sect were killed by an early Earth Immortal youth.

"Geniuses, what I said is true. I won't dare tell something that isn't true. That man was no doubt an early Earth Immortal expert, however, his means was incomparably violent. None of the four

disciples was a match for him. If you don't believe me, you can try and ask him."

He pointed to another slave.

"That's right. This was exactly what happened earlier. After killing the geniuses of Profound Sun Sect, he left with the white-haired youth without leaving his name. We have already told you all that we know. We hope that you all can spare our lives. We are willing to stay as slaves and mine Immortal Meta Stones." The other man spoke hastily.

"Senior Brother Luo, what do you think?"

A disciple of Profound Sun Sect looked over at Luo Xiang who was the leader here. Logically, these two men wouldn't dare lie to them, however, it was extremely rare for someone to kill a late Earth Immortal expert while only having an early Earth Immortal cultivation.

Chapter 1111 – Leaving the Name after the Matter

Luo Xiang's facial expression seemed somewhat unpleasant. According to what the two said, the attacker was a top-class genius who had the power to kill late Earth Immortal expert while being only an early Earth Immortal expert. Plus, it was a one-hit-kill. A talent like him wouldn't be a nobody in One-Line-Sky, but after searching his memories, he couldn't find a genius amongst the four major powers that matched this attacker. In other words, this white-robed youth didn't belong to any of the four major powers.

“It doesn't matter who the attacker was. The point is he has killed the people of Profound Sun Sect openly, which made us his life-and-death enemy. How far can an early Earth Immortal expert and a cripple go? Spread the word now. Given the ability of Profound Sun Sect, it won't be difficult to find them.”

Luo Xiang spoke. He still had some doubts about that attacker. If these two were telling the truth, a genius like him is truly too rare. But in any case, the fact remained that this man had already become an enemy of Profound Sun Sect. There would be only one outcome after offending the Profound Sun Sect in One-Line-Sky.

“Don't worry. Neither of them will be able to flee away from us. By the way, what do you think should we do to these two people, Senior Brother Luo?” One disciple asked.

“Kill them.”

Luo Xiang said casually without even giving them a glance, like their lives were as worthless as ants.

“Do-don't kill us. We have already told you what we know. We can stay here and help you mine Immortal Meta Stones.”

“I am begging you to spare our lives.”

The two of them cried in alarm, knocking their heads to the

ground begging for mercy. Although they knew that there was only a slim chance of survival, they were still reluctant to die.

“Humph!”

Another disciple harrumphed coldly, he drew out an icy cold sword, and darted a hateful glance at them and slashed at their direction.

Xiu!

At this moment, a burst of sound suddenly came out of the darkness. It was just an air current in the gloom, it was incorporeal and impartial, it struck right at the long sword held by that disciple.

Clang!

It sounded like two metals had collided with one another. The impact created a spark. The disciple was merely an early Earth Immortal expert, he couldn't bear the force that originated from the aircurrent. His arm was numb and the long sword flew away from his hand.

“Who is it?”

Luo Xiang was the first to regain his senses, and abruptly turned to his back. All of the disciples of Profound Sun Sect were tensed as they looked at the exact same direction. The person who attacked the disciple of Profound Sun Sect must have had too much guts.

The two cultivators who were kneeling for mercy wiped off the sweat on their foreheads and couldn't help but heave a long sigh. It was like they had survived a disaster. Although they had no idea what their following fate would be, at least they didn't have to die now. Then, they looked at the same direction as the others did, not knowing who provided aid to the two of them at this moment.

“Haha! You a bunch of trash. Do you think you can catch me just by yourself? I'm afraid that you won't be able to find a single trace of me even if you aged to death.”

A voice sounded from the darkness. The volume of the voice was random, it was as if it didn't come from a living thing. Everyone's eyes went wide because they couldn't see a person there. They were all frightened when they could only hear the voice.

"Who is acting like a ghost behind there?" Luo Xiang clamored loudly.

An illumination flickered ahead before a man appeared in the sky. Then the man descended from the air. It made the heart of every Profound Sun Sect disciple twitch because what the mysterious man did could only be done by an Immortal King expert. There wasn't a single Immortal King in the entire One-Line-Sky, so how could they not be surprised by it?

The person who appeared was a white-clothed youth with good-looking face and an unusual demeanor. After discovering this youth's cultivation, all of them couldn't help but sigh in relief. They had no idea what the youth did just now, but since this youth was merely an early Earth Immortal expert, they would never put him in their eyes.

"Savior."

The two cultivators kneeling down exclaimed when they saw Jiang Chen. Their face were full of tears. In their point of view, Jiang Chen had taken the risk this time to rescue them. Thinking about how they were saved by a total stranger twice moved their hearts so much that they couldn't put it into words.

"You are the man who killed our people earlier?"

Luo Xiang's eyes were staring at the newly-emerged Jiang Chen.

"That's right. They were all killed by me. They have harmed my brother and they only got what they deserved." Said Jiang Chen flatly.

"Haha! You have a bragging mouth, early Earth Immortal brat! I have to say that I'm impressed by your courage of coming here and

behave wildly. Tell me, what's your name? I, Luo Xiang will never kill a ghost without knowing its name.”

Luo Xiang uttered two laughs, totally not putting Jiang Chen in his eyes. The gap between the two of them was too great. One was an early Earth Immortal while the other was an early Heaven Immortal. He felt that he had overestimated the opponent which was a humiliation to him, however, he wouldn't underestimate this opponent because he was told that this man had the ability to kill late Earth Immortal expert.

Jiang Chen's purpose of revealing himself wasn't to rescue those two cultivators. It was just a coincidence that they were captured by the disciples of Profound Sun Sect. Jiang Chen had been disgusted by the conduct of Profound Sun Sect.

“Listen up. I will never change my surname or whatever, my name is Jiang Chen. Since I have decided to come here, I will never be a kind person. I have already gotten information about this place. There is only two early Heaven Immortal experts guarding here, however, the two of you are no match for me. I will give you all one chance – pack all the Immortal Meta Stones and give them to me now – perhaps you may have the chance to live after doing so.”

Jiang Chen said very arrogantly and revealed his name without hesitation. It was going to be a direct confrontation anyway, there was no need for him to hide anymore.

“Dammit! He's even more arrogant than us.”

“What kind of bonehead is this man? It seems like he has come here to rob our Immortal Meta Stones. He's truly courting death.”

“Senior Brother Luo, no need to trash-talk with this brat. Kill him right away.”

.....

The disciples of Profound Sun Sect were about to cough up blood

after listening to what Jiang Chen said. Anyone should know that these were the arrogant disciples of Profound Sun Sect who thought that they were high and mighty compared to most of the people. However, none of them expected that a brat who was even more arrogant than them would suddenly appear.

“Senior Brother Luo, let me handle him. This puny figure doesn’t need your personal involvement.”

A half-step Heaven Immortal disciple stood out and strode towards Jiang Chen.

“Brat, if you kneel down and kowtow now, grandfather may consider leaving you a full corpse.”

That disciple said and glared at Jiang Chen. He was incomparably proud.

Jiang Chen didn’t waste anymore time talking to him. A wave of Qi rushed out of his body. In his hand – a giant blood-red dragon claw – thrust forward, slapping at the target.

“He’s very strong.”

That half-step Heaven Immortal disciple’s facial expression changed slightly. He never thought that Jiang Chen would be this powerful. That giant dragon claw had given him a sense of tremendous pressure. He wouldn’t dare show any negligence in this fight.

This man’s reaction was fast. Both of his hands made a gesture and struck out a brilliant wave of energy that then formed the shape of a sabre, lunging at Jiang Chen’s dragon claw.

Hong Long!

The sound of the impact rippled and the land below trembled. Even though he was a half-step Heaven Immortal expert, Jiang Chen’s present strength was on par with a half-step Heaven Immortal. One should know that the True Dragon Palm was incomparable to any ordinary combat skills.

The sabre-shape wave couldn't resist the True Dragon Palm at all. It was instantly pulverized, as easy as tearing away a withered stump.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

That disciple retreated three steps back before he could regain his balance. He felt a stifling sensation on his chest, his blood and Qi were running wild. He couldn't put this unpleasant feeling into words.

Wah!

Immediately, the scene caused a commotion. Luo Xiang and the other early Heaven Immortal expert widened their eyes, staring at Jiang Chen in disbelief. What they saw was an early Earth Immortal expert forcing a half-step Heaven Immortal backwards. They would never believe it if they didn't see it with their own eyes.

"Impossible. This is absolutely impossible."

The disciple who was repelled by Jiang Chen's attack couldn't accept the fact.

"I won't believe that you are this strong."

Both the disciple's eyes went red. An Immortal Weapon appeared in his hand with a clatter. The weapon was similar to a wolf-tooth club. It radiated rays of Immortal light. Anyone could see at first glance that it could deal an incredible amount of damage. Being defeated by an early Earth Immortal brat in front of so many senior and junior brothers was an insult to him. If he couldn't regain his dignity in this battle, he wouldn't be able to continue his career in Profound Sun Sect. He would become a laughing stock for all.

Hong!

Strong Qi waves drifted on the surface of the disciple's body like a silk sash. The wolf-tooth club was jumping in his hand

continuously, producing ear-splitting and buzzing sound. As he bellowed, his entire body thrust forward like an arrow and reached Jiang Chen in a blink. He swiped the indestructible weapon on Jiang Chen's head. No one could tell how much force this swipe contained. If Jiang Chen was replaced by an ordinary person, that person would most likely be turned into a meat paste. Too bad, his opponent wasn't an ordinary man.

“I'm done playing with you. Dragon Transformation.”

With a sway, powerful dragon Qi spread out like tidal wave. His whole body transformed into a half-dragon. His combat strength was immediately boosted by ten times. He didn't wish to delay today's raid as this was the territory of Profound Sun Sect after all. He would get himself in trouble the moment he drew the attention of some powerful experts here.

Ka Cha!

Jiang Chen clenched his dragon fist, creating a cracking sound. With incredible speed, he smashed the wolf-tooth club with his fist.

Bang!

The club was sent away by Jiang Chen's punch, including the half-step Heaven Immortal disciple. It was imaginable how fast he was flying away if you could imagine how fast Jiang Chen had made that strike.

Without giving his opponent a chance, the surface under his feet turned black, he caught up to that disciple in a blink. He struck out his sharp dragon claw, penetrating through his opponent's neck.

A half-step Heaven Immortal outer sect disciple who was about to become an inner sect disciple died tragically in Jiang Chen's hands before he could even utter a cry.

Chapter 1112 – The Untraceable Trace

Watching the half-step Heaven Immortal genius being killed so casually, many disciples had yet to regain their senses. In their point of view, even if Jiang Chen was really powerful, the two of them would need at least a few hundred rounds of intense battle to determine the victor. Who would have thought that one of the expert of Profound Sun Sect would be killed in the matter of seconds?

What really surprised them was Jiang Chen's current appearance and state. The difference between before and after he transformed into his dragon form was too great. He currently looked bloody and brutal, like a true barbaric wild beast. His combat strength had increased by tenfold. Therefore, there was no way that any disciple of Profound Sun Sect was a match for him. It was an undeniable fact that he would be instantly killed by Jiang Chen.

“Truly powerful. How could this guy be this terrifying? Have you all find out that his combat strength has increased by many times? It has increased by at least tenfold.”

“Dammit! This is a Forbidden Technique. It's a rare secret art that can increase one's combat strength. Not even our sect has this kind of secret art. How did this guy acquire it?”

“It is too scary to kill a half-step Heaven Immortal with the strength of merely an early Earth Immortal realm. When did such a monstrous genius like him appear in One-Line-Sky? And why didn't any of us know about him before? For an unusual genius like him, despite him only being an early Earth Immortal expert, his name should have already spread all over the region.”

“Don't worry. Forbidden Art generally requires the caster to pay a high price for it. So anyone who has this secret art won't use it unless the person has no other choice. Although this brat can kill a half-step Heaven Immortal expert, he surely isn't an opponent to Heaven Immortal expert. There is a great difference between an

Earth Immortal realm and Heaven Immortal realm. One was the Heaven and the other was the Earth. Regardless of how powerful this brat can be, he will never be a match for Senior Brother Luo. This man has a great potential and must be eliminated quickly.”

.....

The disciples of Profound Sun Sect were shocked, there was no way that they wouldn't be. Many of them hadn't put Jiang Chen in their eyes in the very beginning. The way that they looked at Jiang Chen now was filled with a trace of fear. Not even the half-step Heaven Immortal could stand his single blow. If they charged at him right now, they would most likely end up dead. In that case, they had no more reason to look down on Jiang Chen anymore.

“Never thought that there is such a rare genius in One-Line-Sky. Jiang Chen, I have to admit that you are truly a genius of the geniuses. If it was before, I would've probably tried all my best to invite you into Profound Sun Sect, but too bad, you have chosen the wrong path.”

Said Luo Xiang. What he said was the truth. When a genius like Jiang Chen appear in this world, all four major powers would've fought for him. Having a genius with great future was really important to a sect.

Unfortunately, the relationship between Jiang Chen and the Profound Sun Sect had already deteriorated. There was no more chance of recovering it. Since he was an enemy now, they must destroy him at all cost to prevent him from growing. Otherwise, they would leave behind future troubles and threats.

“I'll try him out.”

An incomparably cold voice sounded from Luo Xiang's side. This man was called Wang Ying, an inner sect disciple of the sect. He had the same cultivation as Luo Xiang, early Heaven Immortal realm. This man didn't like to speak much, but he had high cultivation and special cultivation technique. The energy that was

exuded from his body was cold and chilly. Although it wasn't comparable to Yan Chenyu's Nine Yin Divine Physique, he must have a very powerful destructive force. He was probably more powerful than Luo Xiang in a real battle.

"Little Chen, can you handle him?"

Han Yan, who was currently in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda right now asked concernedly. After all, Jiang Chen's opponent was an early Heaven Immortal expert. The gap between them was just too great.

"No worries."

Said Jiang Chen casually. Someone like Wang Ying was no doubt more powerful than Yan Dongliu and Huang Ying. Although he could kill Huang Ying in his dragon form, it didn't mean that he could kill Wang Ying. Of course, if he used all of the techniques he had, he might be able to kill Wang Ying, but he had just arrived One-Line-Sky and had to keep his trump card a secret. He didn't want to expose them yet.

However, if the cultivation technique that Wang Ying practiced was of cold attribute, Jiang Chen certainly had the ability to kill him. His flames was the natural enemy of any cold attribute technique.

Compared to an Earth Immortal expert, the greatest advantage that a Heaven Immortal had was the flying ability. However, Wang Ying didn't maximize this advantage because he thought that it was unnecessary while fighting Jiang Chen.

Pu Chi!

Wang Ying casted his cultivation law and strode forward. The air around him produced a shrill sound. Layers of white cold fog drifted around him, causing the surrounding temperature to drop all of a sudden.

"Senior Brother Wang's Cold Frost Technique has already

reached such a powerful extent. His Qi alone causes me to shiver involuntarily.”

“That’s right. Although Senior Brother Wang has been a silent and cold person, his cultivation isn’t any weaker than senior brother Lou. In a one-to-one fight, I don’t think that Senior Brother Luo could rival him.”

“Do you all think that this Jiang Chen is an opponent of Senior Brother Wang?”

“You think too much. There is a huge difference between an Earth Immortal and Heaven Immortal. He would never stand a chance against a Heaven Immortal opponent no matter how powerful he is.”

.....

The disciples of Profound Sun Sect was very confident in Wang Ying.

Wang Ying came to the opposite side of Jiang Chen. Because of his incomparably cold Qi, it gave those who were around them a freezing sensation. Without saying a word, ice started to condense between his palms.

Ka Ka.....

The ice grew larger and larger. It was a cold and solid ice with destructive and freezing ability.

“Cold Ice Palm.”

Wang Ying bellowed in a low tone, pushing both of his palms forward. A giant Cold Ice Palm Seal was struck out. This icy palm could almost froze any void that it passed. It had locked on Jiang Chen, eliminating all of his chances to escape. In the blink of an eye, it reached Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen’s expression turned grim. This attack was indeed more powerful than Yan Dongliu’s and Huang Ying’s, especially

because his technique was of cold attribute. It had a natural effect of suppressing one's opponent, which made it incomparable to any ordinary technique.

However, it didn't concern Jiang Chen. With his dragon form, his combat power was at its peak.

Jiang Chen pointed his finger like a sword, shooting out a fiery light to Wang Ying's Cold Ice Palm.

It was the Profound Nine Solar Finger!

At this current moment, using the Profound Nine Solar Finger was as easy as moving his finger. With just a casual point of his finger, a Profound Nine Solar Finger was struck out. After hearing a bang sound, a large golden finger covered with steaming flames emerged. The flames was the fusion of True Dragon Fire and true Lightning Fire, it could incinerate everything in the Heaven and Earth. The Cold Ice Palm still seemed very scary, however, there was a huge difference between the cold attribute and the attribute of the Lightning Flame. Even before both of their attacks collided, the Cold Ice Palm was already affected by the heat and began to melt.

Hong Long.....

The terrifying Profound Nine Solar Finger collided hard with the Cold Ice Palm, creating a temporary dazzle in the sky. The night sky was torn apart, making the scene seem like daytime. The Cold Ice Palm was pulverized by the Profound Nine Solar Finger completely and was turned into steam.

The essence of the Cold Ice Palm laid on the icy cold Qi that originated from a cold attribute cultivation technique, however, such an attack lost its function and became vulnerable of being pulverized after its foundation was incinerated by the Lightning Flame.

“What?”

Wang Ying couldn't help but exclaim under this circumstance. Not just him, Luo Xiang who was behind him also widened his eyes. They couldn't believe this was real. The early Heaven Immortal Wang Ying was widely recognized as a powerful expert, one of the promising inner sect disciple of the sect. But now, he wasn't even a match for Jiang Chen who seemed excessively powerful.

"Little Chen, don't delay it anymore. This is the territory of the Profound Sun Sect. It won't be in our favor if we attracted the true experts here." Warned Han Yan.

"Alright."

Jiang Chen nodded and drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword. Then, he turned into a light ray, rushing forward. His target wasn't Wang Ying nor Luo Xiang, but those other outer sect disciples.

He understood the purpose of this trip very much, which was to create a big commotion by killing people, a commotion that could shake the entire One-Line-Sky and let Skycloud Pavilion know about him. So that it would create an advantage for him in the future.

Therefore, it wasn't important for him to kill Luo Xiang or Wang Ying. What was more important was to kill these people, to send blows to Profound Sun Sect.

"Argh..." "Argh..."

Several wails were heard at the same time. In just a few blinks, several outer sect disciples died under Jiang Chen's sword. Luo Xiang and Wang Ying were shocked until they were woken by the screams.

"Son of a b*tch! Stop!"

Luo Xiang raged and lunged at Jiang Chen. It was no different than letting a tiger into a flock of sheep. To the outer sect disciples

of Profound Sun Sect, it was a devastating disaster.

Wang Ying joined him. Their objective was very simple – Jiang Chen. These two Heaven Immortals could move at incomparably quick speed as they could control the air current around. As such, it was very easy for them to besiege Jiang Chen.

However, it wasn't as simple as they thought. A brilliant fiery wings sprouted out of Jiang Chen's back. With a flutter of the wings, he moved faster compared to the two Heaven Immortals. Plus, Jiang Chen's strange movement skill made him an untraceable and unpredictable. None of them could follow his tracks.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Wails were continued to be heard as Jiang Chen flashed across the area, totally ignoring a direct confrontation with Luo Xiang and Wang Ying. He didn't stop killing those outer sect disciples who were now fleeing for their lives and shouting like crazy.

They were scared to death. It was too terrifying. They had never seen such a scary figure who looked like a devil king that killed unblinkingly.

“Dammit!”

Luo Xiang had an impulse to cough up blood while watching his juniors dying tragically one after another in Jiang Chen's hands. In another few blinks of time, a dozen more were dead. However, they still couldn't get ahold of Jiang Chen's tracks, which was a great irony to them.

Chapter 1113 – Leave after the Kill

Wails were heard incessantly. After killing a dozen outer sect disciples of Profound Sun Sect, he stopped the massacre. The remaining outer sect disciples were fleeing in all directions for their lives. His objective had been met after killing this much people.

“Wang Ying, we will besiege him from the front and back. We have to capture him today.”

Luo Xiang’s eyes had already turned red. By controlling the airflow around him, he flew skywards with a swoosh. Wang Ying also flew up to the sky. Since they couldn’t catch Jiang Chen on the ground, then they should catch him in the sky.

Hong Long.....

Both of them were holding Immortal Weapons, sending out extremely strong and fierce attack at their target – Jiang Chen.

Seeing what happened, Jiang Chen revealed a hint of a cold smile. He knew that killing Luo Xiang and Wang Ying would require specific means, however, it was also virtually impossible for these two opponents to harm him. In the aspect of speed alone, he certainly has the upper hand.

The Heaven Saint Sword rippled, slashing out countless rays of sword light at Luo Xiang and Wang Ying’s attack. At the same time, his Flaming Wings fluttered and rose to the sky, but instead of fleeing away, he went towards the ore mine.

“What?”

Luo Xiang and Wang Ying exclaimed once more, their eyes widened. They felt a violent twitch in their hearts when Jiang Chen soared up to the air abruptly. How could an Earth Immortal fly? What kind of joke was this? How could that be possible?

“Not good, he’s entering the ore mine.”

Luo Xiang regained his senses from the shock very quickly. There was no more time to ponder about how Jiang Chen was able to fly now. As this intruder had locked onto the ore mine, they had to stop him immediately. Otherwise, their sect would surely suffer a massive loss.

Both of them rushed towards the ore mine like a mad man. They had witnessed the destructive force of Jiang Chen. If this intruder was allowed to wreck havoc inside the ore mine, the entire hill would most likely be destroyed. That was a loss which two of them couldn't bear.

Jiang Chen flew into the mine. The interior wasn't a small one. It was equivalent to the size of an average square. Many cultivators were trying hard to mine the Immortal Meta Stones. There were heaps of small-hill-like ores on the ground. Most of them were low grade Immortal Meta Stones, and some middle grade Immortal Meta Stones but there were no high grade Immortal Meta Stones. High grade Immortal Meta Stones could only be found in those high grade ore mines. As these ore mines had high importance to the sect, they would send true experts to guard the place.

“Little Chen, there are plenty of Immortal Meta Stones here.”

Han Yan yelled inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. This was his first time seeing so many Immortal Meta Stones. There was no way that he wouldn't be excited about it. Anyone who came from the Mortal World was basically broke. Han Yan naturally was one of them.

“It will be a waste not to grab them.”

Jiang Chen would never be polite with Profound Sun Sect. With a wave of his hand, gust of winds swept up the piled of Immortal Meta Stones into his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Han Yan also didn't show any politeness, he immediately took a handful of Immortal Meta Stones and began refining it. Refining these stones would bring great benefits to him, he would probably

break through to the late Human Immortal realm after the refinement.

“Bastard, stop!”

A loud yell was heard from behind. Luo Xiang and Wang Ying were rushing inside. Looking at Jiang Chen’s actions, it instantly gave them the impulse to spurt out blood. This fortune belonged to the Profound Sun Sect. They knew very well how hard it took to dig out these Immortal Meta Stones. Therefore, how could they keep their composure upon seeing these hard-earned fortune being robbed away by Jiang Chen just like that?

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Both of them struck two rays of brilliant light at Jiang Chen with their Immortal Weapons. Those were waves of destructive energy.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen harrumphed coldly and swiped the Heavenly Saint Sword. The Qi of the sword was domineering. The three attacks collided, creating powerful shockwave that spread in all direction, causing the entire ore mine to shake.

Luo Xiang and Wang Ying were even more annoyed after seeing what just happened. They could never use any attack skill in this ore mine. If the three of them use their full-fledge attack in this hill, this ore mine would certainly end up being destroyed. They couldn’t afford to let that happen.

Hua La!

Jiang Chen couldn’t care less about the ore mine. He made another wave, sweeping another pile of Immortal Meta Stones like a blue whale sucking in water. All the Immortal Meta Stones were instantly sucked into his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Puff!

Seeing this kind of situation made Luo Xiang spurt out blood. He

and Wang Ying were shouting like nuts, but there was nothing that they could do about it. Their speed was no match for Jiang Chen and they couldn't use their attack skills here. All they could do was to stay suffocated.

“Get lost if you don't want to die.”

Jiang Chen looked at those mine cultivators and clamored.

“Run, run!”

All the workers were running away from the work site. Most of them were held captive by Profound Sun Sect as slaves. So, they naturally wouldn't miss this great chance of escaping this eternal miserable fate. As for the dragonman who came out of nowhere, it was none of their concern.

“Jiang Chen, what are you doing?”

Luo Xiang glared daggers at Jiang Chen who was hovering in the air

“It's very simple, I want to destroy this entire ore mine.” Jiang Chen shrugged.

“You dare?” Luo Xiang demanded.

Hong Long.....

Jiang Chen used his action to answer Luo Xiang's question. The Heavenly Saint Sword swiped out a long dragon. It crashed into the crystal wall of the mine. No matter how solid this ore mine could be, it could never stand such a fierce attack from Jiang Chen. Immediately, a large hole was created. Lines of crack appeared from the other walls, implying that the hill would crumble at any time.

“Damn him! This bastard is a madman!”

Said Wang Ying depressingly. They had no idea that Jiang Chen would dare to do such a thing.

Hong Long.....

Jiang Chen didn't even pay attention to the two as his attention was solely focused on the ore mine now. Even if they combined their strength, they wouldn't be able to stop him. This was his purpose of coming here today. First was to kill a few people and second was to destroy the ore mine, he would certainly become famous in One-Line-Sky tomorrow.

"This man moves too fast. We can't even catch up to him. This ore mine is an enormous treasure. We can't afford to bear the consequences of the destruction of this ore mine. Senior Brother Luo, don't you have the signaling spirit talisman? Quickly inform the sect to send high-level experts here to deal with this Jiang Chen." Said Wang Ying with a glum face.

"Alright."

Luo Xiang finally thought of this signaling spirit talisman. He turned his palm and a golden spirit talisman appeared on it. After casting his divine sense into it, it turned into a ray of golden light and vanished.

"Not good, little Chen, they are calling for high-level reinforcements."

Han Yan who was in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could see anything that was happening outside clearly. His face immediately revealed concern. One should know that this place was the territory of Profound Sun Sect. It wouldn't be long for their experts to get over here. Even if Jiang Chen had powerful means, he was too weak and pathetic compared to the entire Profound Sun Sect.

Hong Long.....

Jiang Chen naturally saw what just happened. His Heavenly Saint Sword rippled once more, swiping countless of dragon-shaped sword Qi out. Under such heavy bombardment, the ore mine couldn't stand it anymore and crumbled into ruins.

“Let’s go.”

His Flaming Wings fluttered and zipped through the crumbling rocks and away from the scene. Luo Xiang and Wang Ying wanted to chase after him but were stopped by the fact that they couldn’t catch up to him. So they could only watch him flee. Their facial expression had already turned extremely unpleasant. The loss of losing an ore mine was too much for the sect. Plus, many outer disciples had been killed by Jiang Chen. The moment the sect investigated deeply into this matter, the two of them could never escape their responsibility.

At this time, a light flashed past from a distance. Then, an old man with fluttering clothes emerged. His face instantly turned angry when he saw the ruined ore mine below.

“What happened?”

The elder looked over at the two of them. Even without the signaling spirit talisman sent by Luo Xiang, the sect could still sense the commotion on this ore mine. As such, the elder had come here to check out the situation, but didn’t expect to see what he was seeing.

“Elder Xie, someone has raided our ore mine. He has killed more than a dozen outer sect disciples, robbed all of our Immortal Meta Stones and destroyed the mine. Two of us couldn’t stop him. That man has already gone that way.”

Seeing the arrival of the elder was like seeing a savior. Without delay, they told everything that happened just now to the elder and pointed to where Jiang Chen had left.

“He must be exceedingly audacious to mess up in our territory! This old man will shred him into a million pieces the moment this old man catches him.”

The elder snorted and widened his eyes, then turned into a ray of light, racing towards the direction where Jiang Chen had left.

“Senior Brother Luo, do you think Elder Xie can catch that brat? That brat is only an early Earth Immortal expert, but how can he have such a terrifying speed?”

Wang Ying still had some lingering fears. They had never seen such a terrifying Earth Immortal expert. They were totally helpless. It was imaginable how much this incident would affect the reputation of Profound Sun Sect if it was spread out. Their sect would probably become the laughing stock of everyone.

“Don’t worry. Elder Xie is a late Heaven Immortal expert. No matter how terrifying that Jiang Chen is, he will surely meet his death in front of Elder Xie. Furthermore, the speed of a late Heaven Immortal is extremely fast. Neither of us is a match to that kind of speed.”

Said Luo Xiang. He was pretty confident in Elder Xie’s capability.

Under the night sky, Jiang Chen was travelling at a swift speed. Every place he went would leave an afterimage of him. Today’s incident was going to be spread across the entire One-Line-Sky. At that time, his name would certainly cause a commotion amongst the people and major powers. There would only be two situations that would happen after that. Profound Sun Sect would definitely hunt him down. As for the Skycloud Pavilion, they would surely try their best to recruit a rare genius like him. Therefore, he had decided that once this news was spread out, he would head over to the Skycloud Pavilion and try to mix into them. Additionally, he had already shown his talent and potential, he was sure that he would be treasured and nurtured the moment he arrived at Skycloud Pavilion. This was his first step of getting closer to Tian Muyun and the most important step of all.

“Little Chen, today is really exhilarating. Ha-ha! Profound Sun Sect suffered a tremendous loss today. I assume that they are already jumping in anger right now.”

Han Yan laughed delightfully. After being humiliated by the

people of Profound Sun Sect for so long, he hadn't had the slightest sentiments for this sect.

Chapter 1114 – The Divine Ancestral Dragon Pagoda

“Not good, someone’s coming. It’s fast.”

Han Yan’s facial expression changed all of a sudden. A powerful Qi was approaching them at high speed from behind. He could sense that the Qi was extremely strong, incomparable to Luo Xiang and Wang Ying.

“It should be the expert of Profound Sun Sect, judging from the Qi, he must be at least a late Heaven Immortal expert.”

Said Jiang Chen with a frown. With his current ability, he stood no chance against a late Heaven Immortal expert even if he expended all of his skills. After all, the gap between them was just too great.

Swoosh!

He casted the dragon wings without delay. With Dragon Wings pairing with Flaming Wings, his speed was increased by a big notch. He turned into a green smoke and vanished speedily.

From behind, Elder Xie who was about to catch up to his target changed his expression dramatically.

“Impossible. He’s merely an Earth Immortal. How can he move so fast?”

As a late Heaven Immortal expert, he understood the gap between Heaven Immortal and Earth Immortal too well. It was already astounding that an Earth Immortal expert had the ability to fly, but it was even more shocking and unprecedented when this Earth Immortal expert could fly at such speed as well.

Elder Xie was thinking of punishing the two leaders, Luo Xiang and Wang Ying when he returned, but after witnessing Jiang Chen’s speed, he perished such thoughts. With such a difference in

speed, it was only logical that the two of them couldn't capture Jiang Chen. They couldn't be blamed for the incident.

“Humph! A puny Earth Immortal is trying to run away from this old man's grip? It's absolutely delusional.”

Elder Xie harrumphed coldly. The aircurrent around him churned. His speed was suddenly doubled. As a late Heaven Immortal expert, he naturally had much stronger means. After increasing his speed, the distance between him and Jiang Chen began to shorten once again.

“Not good. That late Heaven Immortal expert surely isn't easy to deal with. They can manipulate the airflow skillfully. Their speed definitely is incomparable to those early Heaven Immortals. Although I can move in quick speed, my cultivation base is still too weak. That bastard behind me has already locked on my Qi. At this rate, I won't be able to escape from him. It's going to be bad for us.”

Jiang Chen's facial expression turned slightly ugly. With his current state, if he was tangled with the high-level expert of Profound Sun Sect, that expert surely wouldn't let him go until he died. This wouldn't do him any good at all. Thus, he needed to find a way to escape.

“What do we do now?”

Asked Han Yan. If Jiang Chen didn't have a solution for this, Han Yan would be worse than him. All he could do now was to stay in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda like an obedient kid.

As Jiang Chen was flying, his mind was racing for solution. Soon, his eyes lit up. He shifted his attention to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a very valuable treasure of the dragon race, a supreme divine treasure that even the Immortal World's law can't control it. I suspect that those Heaven Immortals won't

be able to feel the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda's existence as well. I will now fuse my bloodline and Qi with the pagoda, fully concealing my existence with it.

Muttered Jiang Chen in his heart. Although there were twelve levels in the pagoda, there was still a long way before reaching its peak – 99 levels, but Jiang Chen was incomparably confident in his pagoda. One should know that the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could even stay unaffected in the Immortal World. In other words, such a divine weapon must possess some very powerful origin. Thus, there shouldn't be a problem of using it to conceal himself.

When his thought reached here, he turned and plunged into the pagoda. Then it turned into a tiny dust and drifted in the air.

Shortly after hiding in the pagoda, Elder Xie emerged at the scene where Jiang Chen was at. He stopped in his tracks when he discovered that Jiang Chen's Qi has disappeared all of a sudden.

“How did he vanish all of a sudden? I have already locked on his Qi. He shouldn't be able to escape from me. Could he be using some kind of means to conceal himself?”

Elder Xie knitted his brows tightly. This is the first time that such a strange thing happened to him, but he didn't believe that an Earth Immortal could disappear under his eyes unnoticeably, it would be ironic if he thought so.

Hu Hu.....

Elder Xie unleashed his divine sense and swept across the surrounding void thoroughly without missing a single thing. He believed that the person must have used some kind of camouflage technique which he thought wouldn't work on him. The moment he found that person, he would surely tear that person to pieces. He would let the person know how tragic the consequences were to offend the Profound Sun Sect.

His divine sense swept through every place like blades, causing a

rustling sound in the void. Elder Xie's divine sense covered a very large area and it was very dense. Not even a fly could escape from his perception a few dozen miles away.

When his divine sense passed through the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he discovered nothing unusual. Every place his divine sense went was empty and no cultivator's Qi was found. After searching for roughly 15 minutes, he lost his patience and almost spurted out blood.

“Dammit! It's an evil technique. Could this bastard even ascend to become God?”

Elder Xie was infuriated. He had never encountered this kind of situation before. Jiang Chen's unnoticeable disappearance was too absurd, as if he was never here. He finally understood what the feeling of being powerless and helpless was.

“Little Chen, what kind of treasure is this? It's so powerful. Not even Heaven Immortal expert can sense it.”

In the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Han Yan said, feeling surprised. There was no way that he wouldn't be surprised. He could clearly feel Elder Xie's divine sense passing over the pagoda just now, but this old man didn't even sense the least bit of their Qi. The elder's incompetence couldn't be explained through this. It was the divinity of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

“This Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a supreme divine weapon. I have condensed it using my dragon transformation art. But it is still far from completion. I was also astonished by its' divinity before. If I'm not mistaken, only those Immortal King experts who had fully mastered the spatial law could find me hiding in this pagoda.

Said Jiang Chen. What he saw from Elder Xie made him even more confident in the pagoda. It would be impossible for any ordinary divine sense to find the pagoda's existence as it could fully integrate with the spatial law. He was sure that any expert

below the Immortal King wouldn't be able to locate such a weapon.

“What the hell? So cool? Does that mean that as long as the pagoda is here, we will be invincible in One-Line-Sky?”

Han Yan widened his eyes and stared at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

“That's not entirely true. My pagoda has only twelve floors. If the trace of our activity was too obvious, the powerful Great Luo Golden Immortal expert would still be able to find some clue. Besides, there are half-step Immortal King experts in One-Line-Sky. Although these experts have yet to fully master the spatial law, they can also be a very dangerous threat to us as they already have half of the mastery.”

Said Jiang Chen. At least with this divine pagoda, he wouldn't worry of being killed by any Heaven and Divine Immortal experts. This would be his greatest trump card and amulet.

“That's still very terrifying though. Look at that old man. He has already made a dozen of circles here. Haha!”

Han Yan laughed loudly. Elder Xie had been going around in circle in the area, but still found no clue about Jiang Chen's movement.

“Son of a b*tch!”

Elder Xie swore abruptly. Being in such a situation, even a very courteous person would lose its patience. The elder came to catch the enemy for destroying the ore mine and killing his people, but now, he couldn't even find a hair of his target.

Eventually, Elder Xie had no other choice. He could only return with dissatisfaction and failure.

“That old man is gone. We can go out now.” Said Han Yan.

“Don't be hasty. This is an old cunning fox. He won't let this go so easily.”

Said Jiang Chen. The two of them continued to stay in the

pagoda for another dozen of minutes. Sure enough, the elder returned and made another circle before he really left for good.

Looking at the situation, Han Yan had to give a thumbs up to Jiang Chen. This was wisdom and experience. If that old man was an old fox, Jiang Chen would be a wise fox.

“Well, here we go.”

Jiang Chen smiled, came out of the pagoda together with Han Yan. Then, he vanished into the darkness along with Han Yan.

Jiang Chen had just arrived in One-Line-Sky, so he still hadn't found a place to reside. After leaving the zone that was in Profound Sun Sect's control, they decided to head towards the direction where the Skycloud Pavilion was located.

Except for gaining an advantage in that battle, Jiang Chen normally wouldn't use flying to travel. Also, it wouldn't do Han Yan any good by bringing him through the air. Han Yan needed time to break through the higher realm. So he needed to practice on his own instead of depending on an external force in travelling.

After a day and night of running, they finally reached the edge of a city in third day's morning. Han Yan had been cultivating along the way. Not only was his injuries had fully recovered, his cultivation base had also improved by leaps and bounds, advancing to the late Human Immortal realm. Because of the help of the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, his improvement couldn't be describe with rationality. Plus, his current state had been stable. At this rate, it would take him roughly a few days' time to reach the peak of late Human Immortal realm, leaving him only a step away from the half-step Earth Immortal realm.

Apart from his cultivation base, he also had a very powerful combat strength. Now not even ordinary half-step Earth Immortal expert was a match for him.

“Ah Yan, you improve very fast.”

Jiang Chen smiled after noticing Han Yan's improvement.

“That's of course, I possess the body of the Divine Devil. It will be a humiliation to my bloodline if my advancement is too slow.”

Han Yan chuckled. His present mood was a lot better than a few days ago.

“In front should be the territory of Skycloud Pavilion and there's a city ahead. Let's go over and have a look to check out the latest information.”

Said Jiang Chen. He felt that he was getting a step closer to his objective after arriving here.

Chapter 1115 – The Eight Immortals of One-Line-Sky

Cloudmist City!

Seeing it from a distance, this towering city was shrouded in fog and it looked like a fairyland. Cloudmist City could be regarded as the barrier of Skycloud Pavilion. Once one arrived in Cloudmist City, one had truly entered the territory of Skycloud Pavilion. Whether it was in the aspect of its scale or its imposing manner, Cloudmist City could throw Yan City to the bottom of the comparison list.

In the Immortal World, every city would have their own major power. There was no exception to Cloudmist City and Yan City. Anyone who entered Cloudmist City must pay a tax – one low grade Immortal Meta Stone. It was the condition before one could step into the city.

To any ordinary expert, especially Earth Immortal experts, one low grade Immortal Meta Stone wasn't anything significant, but due to many people coming and going out of the city, the tax had become a hefty sum of income for the city. In other words, whoever had the control of the city had control over its wealth.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan paid two low grade Immortal Meta Stones and were granted permission to enter the internal part of the city. They were wealthy people now. There was nothing much to talk about Jiang Chen after he received the inheritance of Ouyang He. His fortune would dominate lots of things. Han Yan on the other hand had also become wealthy. Most of the Immortal Meta Stones seized from the ore mine was kept in his bag of holding.

“Do you all know about this? It seems like something has happened to Profound Sun Sect.”

“Of course. Someone has raided a stronghold of theirs at night, killed more than a dozen outer sect disciples, robbed a large amount of Immortal Meta Stones and destroyed the ore mine. That man is too audacious. I think his name is called Jiang Chen. Profound Sun Sect has already given the order to kill. Anyone who can capture him or provide information about him, will be rewarded by the sect handsomely.”

“It isn’t as easy as it sounds. I heard that not even the elder of the inner sect, Elder Xie could catch up to this Jiang Chen. That man is too mystical. The news said that this man was only an early Earth Immortal expert, but he had a Forbidden Technique that allowed him to transform and tremendously enhance his combat power.”

“He’s very powerful, and audacious enough to have the nerve to even kill the people of Profound Sun Sect and destroy their ore mine, causing them to suffer a heavy loss. They will never let this matter go for sure, even the order to kill was issued. It only showed how much the Profound Sun Sect wanted Jiang Chen dead now.”

“Having the power to fight against Heaven Immortal while merely being an Earth Immortal, and he was also able to escape from a late Heaven Immortal expert’s pursuit? I have never heard of such a monstrous genius before. None of us have. When has such a figure emerged in One-Line-Sky?”

.....

As soon as they entered the city, their ears were filled with these news. Every place was discussing things about him. It seems like the commotion Jiang Chen made the day before yesterday wasn’t a small one. It had caused a stir in the whole One-Line-Sky.

“Little Chen, it seems like you have become famous again.”

Han Yan said with a light chuckle. This was Jiang Chen. Wherever he went, he would always get all of the attention.

“The news spreads faster than I expected. It seems like Profound

Sun Sect is truly infuriated this time. However, this is also fine as this is what I wanted.”

Jiang Chen revealed a slight smile at the corner of his mouth. The news of Profound Sun Sect issuing the order to kill had spread across the whole One-Line-Sky with the fastest speed. In this way, Jiang Chen’s name would be spread to everyone as well, and the people of Skycloud Pavilion would certainly notice his conduct.

“I heard that Skycloud Pavilion has shifted its attention to Jiang Chen. Someone is surely going to recruit this genius to join the pavilion.”

“I also heard that the Young Master of Cloudmist City, Fu Hui has already declared to befriend Jiang Chen. He is an inner sect disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. His cultivation has already reached a terrifying extent, intermediate Heaven Immortal realm.”

“That’s a normal thing. Skycloud Pavilion and Profound Sun Sect are both enemies to each other. Jiang Chen has caused the Profound Sun Sect to suffer a tragic loss, which is worth celebrating to the Skycloud Pavilion. Naturally, they will welcome an unusual genius like Jiang Chen. Therefore, it isn’t a surprising thing at all for Young Master Fu Hui to befriend Jiang Chen.”

“Tomorrow is the birthday of the City Lord. I suppose that Young Master Fu Hui is already in Cloudmist City now.”

.....

The noise of discussion was non-stop. All these news had been absorbed by Jiang Chen’s ears. The smile on his face intensified.

“Little Chen, it seems like everything that happened was just as you expected. Skycloud Pavilion is starting to notice you. I wonder if you can make friends with that Young Master Fu Hui?” Said Han Yan.

“Don’t worry. I will reach my goal in no time.”

Jiang Chen had a composed face. Regardless of what time it was,

his face always looked calm. Everything was under his control from the moment he raided the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect. The emergence of Fu Hui was just a springboard for him to get closer to Skycloud Pavilion.

“Ah Yan, let’s go over to that tavern in front and have some drinks. Perhaps we can learn more about the news of One-Line-Sky by eaves dropping on other people’s conversation.”

Said Jiang Chen. The two of them walked towards the tavern that was not far ahead. Both of them had just made it to the Immortal World and knew nothing about One-Line-Sky. Now that they had arrived at CloudmistCity, they could hear all kinds of news. Wherever there were people, there would be conversations and gossips about any big event that happened in One-Line-Sky.

In the tavern, both of them chose the seat beside a window and ordered two pots of Immortal World’s wine. They listened to the others’ gossip while enjoying the liquor.

Unsurprisingly, much of the gossip was related to him. They could hear things about Jiang Chen and the Profound Sun Sect from time to time.

“Right, there’s another big event that is going to happen in One-Line-Sky. It is a grand ceremony of One-Line-Sky. At that time, all the eight Immortals of One-Line-Sky will be present. This is a biannual big event.”

“Yes. How can I forget about this big event, the grand ceremony that is held once every two years? The Eight Immortals will converge on the Peak of One-Line-Sky Mountain for a competition to determine the strongest amongst them. Unfortunately, after so many years of holding this ceremony, neither victory nor defeat could be determined.”

“Unfortunately, the pavilion master, Ouyang He has already fallen two years ago, resulting in the loss of one Immortal amongst the Eight. Then, the vacancy was filled by the disciple of Ouyang

He, Tian Muyun. He has also become the new pavilion master. I wonder if he possesses the same momentum as Ouyang He.”

“He shouldn’t be as bad. Tian Muyun is a legendary figure in One-Line-Sky. He has outgrown his own master and his cultivation is no longer under Ouyang He’s. Under his leadership, Skycloud Pavilion has been thriving just like before.”

.....

The news about the Eight Immortals shook Jiang Chen’s soul. This was new to him. He had no idea what the Eight Immortals were like, but judging from those people’s respectful tone, these figure must be extraordinary.

Jiang Chen stood up from his seat, came to another table with three seats already occupied by three men. He found an empty seat and straightaway sat on it.

“Three brothers, this bill is on little brother today.” Said Jiang Chen in a forthright manner.

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, the three of them changed their view of Jiang Chen immediately. Every one of them was a rogue cultivator. They liked anyone who was forthright. Plus, this tavern was very popular here and not everyone could come in here. They would naturally be delighted if they were treated to a few drinks.

“Little brother is?” One man asked.

“Little brother has just arrived in One-Line-Sky and is unfamiliar with everything around here. I just heard three brothers talked about the One-Line Sky’s Eight Immortals and some grand ceremony, and I became very interested with the subject. I wonder who those Eight Immortals were that brothers are talking about.” Asked Jiang Chen.

“Haha! Little Brother doesn’t even know about the One-Line Sky’s Eight Immortals? It seems like you really have just arrived in

One-Line-Sky. In that case, old brother will tell you more about these Eight Immortals.”

One of them burst out into laughter. The One-Line Sky’s Eight Immortals wasn’t a secret and everyone was free to discuss about it.

“There are four major powers in One-Line-Sky. They are Skycloud Pavilion, Profound Sun Sect, Huangfu Family and Yun Family. The One-Line Sky’s Eight Immortals are the peak experts among the four major powers. There are two peak experts for every major power. The average cultivation of theirs has already reached the half-step Immortal King realm. They are Tian Muyun and Daoist Yufeng of Skycloud Pavilion, Xuan Yangyi and Dugu Sheng from Profound Sun Sect, Huangfu Yaotian and Huangfu Qun of Huangfu Family and Yun Zhonghe and Yun Zhonglong of Yun Family. These eight experts represent the highest existence in One-Line-Sky and are called the One-Line Sky’s Eight Immortals. The eight of them will compete to find out the number one expert in One-Line-Sky in a grand ceremony that is held once every two years. It’s a pity that the number one place has never been determined. The previous representative of Skycloud Pavilion was Ouyang He, but unfortunately, he had already fallen two years ago, so his position was replaced by Tian Muyun. Although Tian Muyun is still young, he has a powerful cultivation. At this grand ceremony, many of us will be re betting on this new representative.”

A middle-aged rogue cultivator spoke, telling everything about One-Line Sky’s Eight Immortals in detail.

“That’s right. Tian Muyun’s life is a legend. After being accepted by Ouyang He as a disciple, his path has been soaring. He has become a conqueror in One-Line-Sky from being a nameless person. He has created plenty of miracles. He truly makes other people admire him. If I can be like him, I will be able to rest in peace when I die.”

Another man said, his tone was full of admiration for Tian Muyun.

“Enough, why don’t you take a piss on yourself and look at yourself in the mirror. Take a look at your own conduct. You sure are shameless for comparing yourself to Master Tian.”

One man retorted unceremoniously.

“Damn! Can’t I imagine for a while?”

The man rolled his eyes.

“Master Ouyang really has gotten a good disciple.”

Jiang Chen shook his head, finished his cup of wine in one gulp and tossed twenty low grade Immortal Meta Stones and left with Han Yan.

So it turned out that Tian Muyun had done quite a good job here.

This had created a sad mood in Jiang Chen, but this was also the reality. No one would care about your past. In this world, the one who succeeds would always dominate. Despite Tian Muyun’s crooked and impudent act, he was the one who succeeded and he had received both fame and fortune because of that.

If Ouyang He knew about this, Jiang Chen was afraid that this old man’s soul wouldn’t be able to stay in peace even in the netherworld.

“Little Chen, where are we heading now?” Asked Han Yan.

“Let’s go directly to the Prefecture, I want to meet that Fu Hui.”

Said Jiang Chen, then he strode towards the direction of the Prefecture without turning his head.

Chapter 1116 – The Dog that Courted Hate

Ouyang He's unfinished matter had been Jiang Chen's worry ever since. The only way to get rid of this concern was to eliminate Tian Muyun, so that Ouyang He could rest in peace in the world of the dead. Besides, it made Jiang Chen feel unworthy and aggrieved for Ouyang He after learning how popular Tian Muyun had become and how he had been treated like a legend.

However, the only way to get close to Tian Muyun was to enter the Skycloud Pavilion. In front of him was the best springboard that he could ever have, Fu Hai, the Young Master of Cloudmist City.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan walked all the way to the Prefecture. Due to the large size of the city, they were afraid that would take them at least two hours to reach their destination at such a slow pace, but time wasn't Jiang Chen's concern anyway.

In the Cloudmist City, he didn't need to worry about Profound Sun Sect taking revenge on him. Although the Profound Sun Sect had a very big influence in One-Line-Sky and there had been disciples of Profound Sun Sect in Cloudmist City, they wouldn't dare act brazenly and arrogantly. After all, this was a hostile territory to them. A slight mistake could cost them their life.

The closer Jiang Chen and Han Yan got to the Prefecture, the denser the crowd. It seemed like they were heading for the Prefecture as well. When they reached the end, they saw some cultivators began to jog towards their destination, as if something big had happened there.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan couldn't help but be stunned. It seemed like not only had they obtained enormous amount of information in their first day of arrival in Cloudmists City, they could also watch some lively show.

“Could it be something big has happened in the Prefecture? We

have to catch up with them at the right time.” Said Han Yan with curiosity.

“Let’s go over there and find out.”

Jiang Chen strode forth with a quickened pace. He approached a running cultivator and asked. “Brother, do you know what is happening in front?”

“I have no idea. When I see the others running towards the Prefecture, I just followed them.”

That cultivator said solemnly.

“Uh...”

Both Jiang Chen and Han Yan were shocked. Such reason gave them no room to retort, because they were like those cultivators who knew nothing about it. They were just following the crowd, expecting to watch a show.

The Prefecture of Cloudmist City had the roughly the same scale as the Prefecture in Yan City. Similarly, in front of the gates was a large open square. Currently, this square had been occupied with a sea of people. Everyone’s attention was focused on the high platform at the center. Then they saw a big yellow dog the size of an elephant being tied up like loops of golden iron chain.

Beside the big yellow dog stood four powerful experts. Every one of them were early Heaven Immortal expert. Their hands were holding large sabre, seemingly ready to chop off the dog’s head at any time.

The crowd below pointed their fingers at the big yellow dog and were gossiping about him.

“For Heaven’s sake! What are you looking at? Is Master Dog really so handsome?”

The big yellow dog was baring his sharp teeth at the crowd. Although he had already been tied up pretty badly and his head

was aimed by the four big sabers that could end his life instantly, his face didn't have the slightest bit of nervousness, like all these sharp sabers were harmless to him.

“Damn! Where has this mangy dog come from? He still dares to act so arrogantly in the face of death.”

“That's right. This dog is too abhorrent. He dares to steal even the things of the Prefecture.”

“This dog has offended Young Master Fu Hui. It seems like he is going to be executed by means of Ling Chi* today.”

.....

Discussions were all over the place. These cultivators must have lots of leisure time to just come and watch a dog being executed.

At this time, Jiang Chen and Han Yan had already reached the scene. When they saw the big yellow dog being bundled up like a dumpling, both of them staggered backwards, and almost fell to the ground.

The two of them exchanged a glance. It went without saying that this dog had either eaten or stolen some people's things. It was all because of this dog that the Prefecture was so bustling today.

If Jiang Chen was described as the man who brought no peace to anywhere he went, Big Yellow was worse than that. He would never be Big Yellow if he didn't create a spotlight for himself with his conduct.

The both of them weaved into the crowd and saw a cultivator discussing about the current matter. It seemed like this man knew what was going on here.

“Brother, what has happened? Why is that dog over there tied up?” Asked Jiang Chen with a smile.

“Tied up? It's going to be beheaded soon. This dog has eaten something in the Prefecture.” The man said.

Sure enough!

Jiang Chen and Han Yan couldn't help but sigh. This had always been Big Yellow's style of action.

"Brother, the Prefecture is such a big place and is short of nothing. Even if that something inside the Prefecture has been eaten by the dog, can't they just put up with this dog once?" Said Han Yan.

"You know nothing about it. Tomorrow is the birthday of the City Lord. I heard that Young Master Fu Hui has paid a high price for the elder of Skycloud Pavilion to concoct a Transmogrification Pill. Not only could this pill lengthen one's lifespan, it could also increase one's strength. Young Master Fu Hui intended to give this pill as a birthday present for the City Lord, but he had never thought that it would be eaten by this dog yesterday night."

The man seemed to know exactly what had happened.

"Dammit! I can't believe that the highly precious Transmogrification Pill was eaten by a dog. This old man suddenly feels that a large part of my life is worse than a dog."

"No wonder Young Master Fu Hui has been so angry. This dog had the nerve to even eat the birthday gift of the City Lord. Flaying it alive won't be enough for its crime."

"I have no idea where this dog came from? Look at it, it's still baring its teeth at us even in the face of death, and seems like having a good time."

.....

Whatever Big Yellow did made Jiang Chen's and Han Yan's scalp tingle. This bastard really was a troublemaker. Jiang Chen intended to befriend Young Master Fu Hui in this trip to the Prefecture and get the chance to enter the Skycloud Pavilion. Presently, even if he hadn't seen Young Master Fu Hui yet, his reputation would already be affected by this dog.

“Little Chen, look at Big Yellow’s face. Despite being tied up so badly, he doesn’t show the slightest bit of fear. I somehow felt that he let himself got caught on purpose.” Said Han Yan.

“Apparently, this stupid dog is doing this on purpose. Given his capability, if he’s able to steal away the pill, he’s also able to run away. However, he was captured in the end and stayed in their custody for three days. There is only one explanation for this, he didn’t intend to leave.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. Others might not understand Big Yellow, but he understood him very well. This dog was a very divine one. He was born with a Dragon-Horse bloodline. He was also an expert in stealing things and running away. If he really wanted to flee after stealing, not even Young Master Fu Hui could stop him.

Judging by the present situation, the only way to explain this was that Big Yellow hadn’t planned to leave in the first place.

“Brother, since this dog has been caught yesterday night, why hasn’t he been executed until today?”

Someone asked, feeling confused. If Young Master Fu Hui really wanted to kill a dog, he wouldn’t need to make such a fuss about it and attract so many people.

“You should know about that rising star Jiang Chen these past two days right? Initially, Young Master Fu Hui intended to end this dog’s life, but this dog claimed that he’s a friend of Jiang Chen. As long as he was here, Jiang Chen would surely appear. The idea has intrigued the Young Master, but he was afraid that this dog was telling lies, so he had ordered to tie it up tightly and gave him three days worth of time. If Jiang Chen didn’t appear in three days’ time, this dog would be executed without a doubt.” The man said.

After listening to this, it relieved Jiang Chen’s concern. It seemed like the things hadn’t reached an irreparable state yet. Since Young Master Fu Hui was so interested in him, it would be in his favor.

“Hey! Where did you get all this information from?” Someone asked.

“I have a cousin who works in the Prefecture. He was the one who told me. He is absolutely right about it.” The man said proudly.

“What you said sounds pretty convincing. Young Master Fu Hui always liked to make friends with heroes. Additionally, that Jiang Chen has become the arch enemy of Profound Sun Sect and had even given the order to kill him on sight. There’s no place in One-Line-Sky for him to stay anymore, which is the perfect time for Skycloud Pavilion to recruit him.”

“It’s still unknown whether this dog is telling the truth. Although we haven’t seen that Jiang Chen before, what he did was really earth-shattering. How can a genius like him befriend a mangy dog?”

.....

For a moment, the topic had returned to Jiang Chen. The current situation had become clear. After Big Yellow stole the Transmogrification Pill of the Prefecture, he got himself caught on purpose to draw Jiang Chen out.

“Little Chen, it seems like everything is under Big Yellow’s control now. Has this bastard calculated that you will come to Cloudmist City?” Said Han Yan with a smile.

“This stupid dog knew me really well. He knows that after making the Profound Sun Sect my enemy, the first place that I would go to go to seek refuge was the territory of Profound Sun Sect’s enemy, the Skycloud Pavilion. Besides, Cloudmist City is the barrier of the territory of Skycloud Pavilion, a place that everyone needs to go through before reaching Skycloud Pavilion. That’s why he was being so unscrupulous.”

Jiang Chen shook his head with a smile. Big Yellow’s shrewdness

wasn't comparable to ordinary people.

As for Jiang Chen and Han Yan, it didn't matter what Big Yellow did. What was more important was that the three of them had finally met, especially for Jiang Chen. Ever since they parted from the spatial passageway, concerns had been troubling his heart. After seeing how intact and energetic this dog was, he naturally couldn't restrain himself from feeling happy.

"Shall we show ourselves now?" Han Yan asked.

"What are you panicking about? This stupid dog has eaten someone else's thing, we have to let him suffer for a bit. We will come again three days later. Let him be tied here for three more days." Jiang Chen chuckled.

"Yes."

Han Yan nodded solemnly, then whirled with Jiang Chen and walked towards the outside of the crowd.

Swoosh!

At this moment, both of Big Yellow's eyes lit up all of a sudden and fell upon Jiang Cheng and Han Yan who were drifting off the scene. Then, he clamored. "Jiang Chen, how dare you son of a b*tch turn and leave, letting master dog be tied up here?! Don't you know what shame is?"

Big Yellow had keen a perception. He has already been on the lookout for Jiang Chen all the while. Now that Jiang Chen and Han Yan had appeared, it naturally couldn't escape his eyes.

Ling Chi* - Death by a thousand cuts.

Chapter 1117 – Fu Hui

After being yelled by Big Yellow, everyone shifted their attention to Jiang Chen and Han Yan. Due to Jiang Chen's name having risen to fame, it easily caught everyone's attention.

“This stupid dog does have a keen perception for spotting us even in such a dense crowd.”

Han Yan shook his head helplessly.

Big Yellow who was tied up very tightly on the platform unleashed a surge of powerful force when he saw Jiang Cheng and Han Yan. The iron chains that were supposed to be indestructible were crushed like hemp ropes. The waves shook even the four experts who were armed with sabres.

Immediately, Big Yellow turned into a light and appeared before Jiang Chen and Han Yan with a swoosh.

This scene shocked many people, especially the four Heaven Immortal experts who had been besieging Big Yellow. It seemed like they couldn't stop this dog if it insisted to leave; they had totally underestimated this dog. “What the hell! This dog is actually this powerful? He broke free from the four Heaven Immortals!”

“That's right. It seems like we've all underestimated this dog. He had deceived us by getting himself tied up willingly.”

“So what if he's very powerful? This is the Prefecture. If Young Master Fu Hui is determined to get rid of him, he won't have a chance of escaping at all. As for that white-clothed youth, could he be the legendary Jiang Chen?”

.....

Many of them were shocked. Big Yellow's sudden burst of energy had exceeded everyone's expectation. They were afraid that not even Young Master Fu Hui had thought that this dog would be this

powerful.

“You two bastards! How could you turn and leave Master Dog here to suffer on his own? You two are truly shameless!”

Big Yellow bared his teeth at Jiang Chen and Han Yan while scolding them angrily. He was angry to learn that they didn't only refused to help, but also had the intention to leave.

As a matter of fact, he had been searching for traces of Jiang Chen these past few days, but he hadn't found a clue about him. He was restless and worried for his brother until yesterday, when he heard the news of Jiang Chen raiding the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect. After knowing that Fu Hui was interested in Jiang Chen, he directly broke into the Prefecture as he was sure that Jiang Chen would appear. He even ate the people's pill and deliberately got himself caught. It was all fun and games for him.

Since Jiang Chen was very good at solving problems, he might as well create some problems for him to solve.

What really surprised him was Han Yan. He never thought of seeing Han Yan together with Jiang Chen here because he still thought that it should've taken a long time before Han Yan could ascend.

But then again, all of these no longer mattered. The important thing was that they were reunited once more. Although he looked infuriated right now, he felt quite delighted in his heart, especially when he saw Jiang Chen. The bond between the two of them was incomprehensible to ordinary people. It was a bond that represented their life. At that time, at the end of the spatial passageway, Jiang Chen was attacked by some unknown expert. As a result, they were separated. He had been worrying for Jiang Chen all this while and was searching for him everywhere. Now that Jiang Chen was still intact in front of him, he couldn't help but feel happy.

“You've eaten other people's things. You deserve some

punishment,” said Jiang Chen with a smile. Both he and Han Yan were happy.

After checking Big Yellow’s cultivation, Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled with delight. He had to admit that Big Yellow really was the most extraordinary one. Although he had no idea what had Big Yellow experienced during these past few days, Big Yellow’s cultivation base was even higher than his—late Earth Immortal realm.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

At this time, the four Heaven Immortal experts flew over, besieging Big Yellow, Jiang Chen and Han Yan. The orders they got from Young Master Fu Hui was to contain this yellow dog. They couldn’t afford to bear the responsibility of letting this huge yellow dog escape under their vey nose.

“Quickly go and tell your Young Master that the one he was looking for is here. He’s no doubt the widely known Jiang Chen,” said Big Yellow proudly.

As soon as his voice faded, the crowd turned shocked. At this instant, Jiang Chen turned into a focal figure. Countless pairs of eyes fell upon him at the same time.

“My God! It turns out that he is Jiang Chen. He really is young, but he was able to cause so much of damage to Profound Sun Sect despite being only an early Earth Immortal expert. He is really the most monstrous genius I’ve ever seen. Plus, his audacity is beyond ordinary. He is the first man throughout One-Line-Sky who dared to do such a thing.”

“Ever since Profound Sun Sect issued the order to kill, this Jiang Chen has risen to fame. I never thought of seeing his true appearance today.”

“He’s too young, a real genius. It would really be a good thing if Skycloud Pavilion could get this talent.”

“Can’t believe that this stupid dog is a friend of Jiang Chen. Fortunately, Jiang Chen is here, otherwise, Young Master Fu Hui would flay this dog to death.”

.....

Comments and remarks filled the air and Jiang Chen had become the centre of attention. Anyone knew that Jiang Chen’s reputation had already spread across the entire One-Line-Sky like a gale the moment Profound Sun Sect issued the order to kill. Even this city was filled with gossips and topics about Jiang Chen. Naturally, it was a big thing to be able to see Jiang Chen’s true self here.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

One of the experts looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

“Yes, that’s me.”

Jiang Chen nodded. By now, he didn’t have to hide it anymore. This was the Prefecture. Even if some people of Profound Sun Sect were here, they wouldn’t dare to act according to the order unless they wanted to get themselves killed.

“You wait here.”

The man said, turned and raced towards the Prefecture.

Jiang Chen knew that that man must be going into the Prefecture to inform Young Master Fu Hui. Coincidentally, his purpose of coming here was also to meet Young Master Fu Hui. Although Big Yellow had created a grudge between them, it had also indirectly helped him and Young Master Fu Hui have a meeting.

Shortly after that, two figures walked out of the Prefecture. One of them was the expert who had raced into the Prefecture. The other was a man dressed in pale-yellow robe. He was stately, handsome, had bushy brows and big eyes. He might not seem very tall or strong, but he wasn’t thin either. He looked like a sturdy person.

Every step he made was imposing. The whole scene became quiet the moment he appeared. The people automatically made way for him as he passed. Innumerable pair of eyes fell upon him with awe.

He was Young Master Fu Hui, an inner sect disciple in Skycloud Pavilion. Perhaps that didn't make him any significant in Skycloud Pavilion, but in Cloudmist City, he was without a doubt a legendary existence. He had already reached mid Heaven Immortal realm at such a young age. A talent like this wasn't comparable to any average person.

Both Jiang Chen's and Fu Hui's eyes met when they looked up.

Fu Hui approached Jiang Chen and studied him thoroughly.

"You were the Jiang Chen who killed more than a dozen outer sect disciples of Profound Sun Sect, destroyed their ore mine and successfully escaped from the hunt of a late Heaven Immortal elder?" asked Fu Hui.

Shock was visible in his eyes. Apparently, this Jiang Chen wasn't similar to the Jiang Chen he imagined. This white-clothed youth seemed like a bright and approachable boy with no ferocity and ruthlessness. It was hard for anyone to believe that this young man could do such an earth-shattering matter.

"I'm Jiang Chen, greet Young Master Fu Hui."

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at Fu Hui. Without waiting for Fu Hui to speak, he continued, "Big Yellow is my brother. We were separated not long ago. I heard that he has eaten Young Master's Transmogrification Pill. Here's a million low grade Immortal Meta Stones as compensation," said Jiang Chen and handed over a storage pouch to Fu Hui.

Fu Hui was dumbfounded when he saw this. He had never expected Jiang Chen to be so heroic, quickly smoothing out the matter of Big Yellow stealing the pill. Furthermore, one million low grade Immortal Meta Stones was a tremendous wealth,

definitely exceeding the value of the Transmogrification Pill. Even he himself was rendered speechless.

Moreover, Fu Hui intended to befriend Jiang Chen and recruit him into Skycloud Pavilion. In their first meeting, he was already astounded by Jiang Chen's action. In other words, his impression of Jiang Chen was a pleasant one.

“Damn! This Jiang Chen is truly rich, giving one million worth of fortune. Although the Transmogrification Pill is precious, one million low grade Immortal Meta Stones are more than enough to compensate for one pill. In this way, the Prefecture wouldn't suffer any losses.”

“Of course, he's a rich guy. Don't forget that he has raided an ore mine of Profound Sun Sect. Although that ore mine hadn't been fully mined, the mining had already started there and an astronomical amount of fortune had already been mined out before the raid.”

“Rich people are always self-willed. He gives out one million of his fortune so easily like it is nothing to him and he did not even blink when he said that.”

.....

The people around were gossiping amongst each other. Even though those were only low grade Immortal Meta Stones, one million wasn't a small figure.

“Kaka! Young Master Fu Hui, although Master Dog has eaten your pill, I suppose this one million should be enough for that.”

Big Yellow laughed, not forgetting to dart a praising glance at Jiang Chen.

“Alright, Brother Jiang sure is a heroic person. I, Fu Hui, always like to make friends with people like you. I will keep this one million worth of fortune and the matter of Big Yellow's theft is settled today. I wonder if Brother Jiang wants to come to our

Prefecture and have a seat there.”

Young Master Fu Hui didn't try to be overly polite. After keeping the Immortal Meta Stones, he invited Jiang Chen to the Prefecture.

“Okay.”

Jiang Chen nodded. This was exactly the result he wanted in their first meeting, but this was better than what he expected. The reason he took out one million worth of fortune was to defuse the tension between Big Yellow and this young master. At the same time, he wanted to return the dignity to Fu Hui. The theft of the pill had been spread across the city. If this matter wasn't solved nicely, Fu Hui would lose his face.

Additionally, one million worth of fortune wasn't anything significant to a wealthy man like him.

Chapter 1118 – Regenerative Lotus

In the Prefecture, Jiang Chen was treated by Fu Hui nicely. Given Fu Hui's identity, he would never put an early Earth Immortal cultivator in his eyes. But Jiang Chen was different. Not only was Jiang Chen capable of killing half-step Heaven Immortal experts with ease, he could also run away from a late Heaven Immortal expert's hunt. It would be a lie if Fu Hui didn't admit that this young man was a unique one. Also, this was his first time seeing someone like Jiang Chen. There was no way he couldn't stay indifferent about it.

“Brother Jiang is truly young and has a promising future. I admire Brother Jiang for being able to do such a world-shaking thing at such a young age. But I wonder what are the conflicts between Brother Jiang and Profound Sun Sect.” Fu Hui asked.

In his perspective, Jiang Chen certainly wouldn't do a thing without a good reason. No one would wish to offend Profound Sun Sect if they had no feuds or grudges against each other. Furthermore, Jiang Chen was merely a rogue cultivator without any big forces backing him up.

“To be frank, Profound Sun Sect has captured a group of cultivators as slaves to work in their mine and my brother was one of them. He had been tortured and insulted, and they even cut one of his arms off. So how could I not take such deep revenge? They must pay for what they did,” said Jiang Chen.

There was nothing about Han Yan to hide anymore. After all, Han Yan was the center of all these events. Given Fu Hui's manpower and resources, it was impossible for him not to find anything about this.

“Good. Doing something by hook or by crook. You sure are ruthless. Now that Profound Sun Sect has ordered to kill you, does Brother Jiang have any plans for that?” asked Fu Hui in a tone full

of admiration.

He himself was regarded as a heroic figure. If his brother was insulted by someone, he surely would do the same thing by making the person pay for what he or she did. This was what he considered a courageous and upright person. Therefore, his impression of Jiang Chen was getting better.

“Naturally, I will seek refuge in Skycloud Pavilion. Given my current circumstances, I got no other choice than seeking refuge in Skycloud Pavilion,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

Jiang Chen’s words had dumbfounded Fu Hui. He initially thought that Jiang Chen would beat around the bush, waiting for him to take the initiative to recruit him. Jiang Chen’s forthrightness surprised him. This indicated that Jiang Chen was a smart man who had clear understanding of his present situation. In One-Line-Sky, only Skycloud Pavilion could protect him from Profound Sun Sect’s wrath.

Jiang Chen took the initiative to join Skycloud Pavilion by lowering himself and this had improved Fu Hui’s impression of him. A straightforward person would never stall on the topic and make people bored.

“Brother Jiang’s right. With you current situation, you have to get Skycloud Pavilion’s protection in order to survive in One-Line-Sky. Besides, Skycloud Pavilion will never refuse a genius like Brother Jiang.” Fu Hui said with a nod.

“Then, I will need Young Master Fu Hui to recommend me to the pavilion. Here’s ten thousand middle grade Immortal Meta Stones, I hope Young Master can keep them as an appreciation for recommending Jiang Chen and making Jiang Chen your friend.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, and a pale yellow storage pouch materialized. This time, he seemed even more generous than before. He was able to fork out ten thousand middle grade Immortal Meta Stones so easily like he was giving away invaluable

raw materials.

“The generosity of a rich man.”

Big Yellow and Han Yan exchanged a glance and smiled helplessly. The way rich men spend their fortune was always incomprehensible to ordinary people.

After being a cunning expert for two lives in the mortal world, Jiang Chen had mastered the code of conduct among humans. Putting it bluntly, he was now asking for Fu Hui’s help. What else in this world was better than real material rewards? Jiang Chen straightaway took out ten thousand middle grade Immortal Meta Stones without expressing any hesitation. Such action of his fully subdued the recipient.

Sure enough, Fu Hui couldn’t help but be shocked when he saw Jiang Chen taking out another storage pouch for him despite his composed disposition. One should know that Immortal Meta Stones were the most basic and indispensable resources in cultivation for a cultivator in this world.

Fu Hui knew very well how much ten thousand middle grade Immortal Meta Stone represent. That was an impressive and rare fortune even to Heaven Immortal cultivators. Who would give away this much of fortune to other people so casually? And Jiang Chen even compensated Big Yellow’s misconduct with one million worth of fortune! One should know that ten thousand middle grade Immortal Meta Stones were equivalent to one million low grade Immortal Meta Stones, but no one would be willing to trade ten thousand middle grade stones for one million low grade stones. The Immortal Qi inside a middle grade Immortal Meta Stone couldn’t be compensated by the amount of low grade stones. Moreover, the quality of a middle grade stone was obviously higher than a low grade one.

“Brother Jiang, given your talent, I can unconditionally recommend you to Skycloud Pavilion. You don’t have to bribe me

with these,” said Fu Hui.

“Brother Fu must be joking. This is not a bribe, this is what you deserve. Plus, as long as you and I are in good terms, you will get more in the future. Whether it is wealth or status, you will get it.”

Jiang Chen looked at Fu Hui and said with a faint smile. Although Jiang Chen’s eyes were narrowed, the brilliant light his eyes were radiating couldn’t be concealed. His calm eyes were sharp and incomparably dazzling. The confidence that he exuded was beyond the reach of ordinary people.

Fu Hui felt a tremble in his heart and a boundless shock arose inside of him. In that instant, he was subconsciously subdued by Jiang Chen’s invisible charisma, the aura of a superior being, like Jiang Chen was born to be a conqueror.

What Jiang Chen said gave no doubts to his followers. Despite him being merely an early Earth Immortal expert, Fu Hui truly believed in what he said.

This man is an extraordinary and monstrous talent. Judging from his Qi, his future achievement is immeasurable. I must build a good rapport with him. Like he said, it’s likely that I will obtain more from him. Those things wouldn’t be just these Immortal Meta Stones, it might even include advancement and status.

Fu Hui had made up his mind. Although this was their first time meeting, he had already regarded Jiang Chen as an important person in his life. Skycloud Pavilion was one of the major powers in One-Line-Sky and he knew very well how intense the competition inside the pavilion was. Although he was an inner sect disciple, he was considered the most ordinary amongst his peers. He was too insignificant to be compared to those monstrous geniuses. If it wasn’t because of his uprightness, pleasant style of action and ability in making friends, he was afraid that he couldn’t get to what he was now in Skycloud Pavilion.

“Okay, since Brother Jiang is being so forthright, I won’t refuse

these Immortal Meta Stones anymore. I will bring Brother Jiang to Skycloud Pavilion after my father's birthday tomorrow."

Fu Hui skipped the formality, kept the stones, and said.

After hearing what he said, Jiang Chen felt a relief. Since his departure from Yan City, arriving in One-Line-Sky was his first objective and using Profound Sun Sect to join Skycloud Pavilion was his second objective. The following goal would be to improve his cultivation as much as possible so that he could get closer and closer to Tian Muyun.

"There's no need to rush it. I heard that there will be a grand ceremony that's held every two years in One-Line-Sky half a month later. At that time, the One-Line Eight Immortals will converge on the peak of One-Line Mountain to have a battle and decide who the final winner is. This will be a great opportunity to witness the best experts in the world. Naturally, I can't miss that. I think we'll only head over to the Skycloud Pavilion after this event ends," said Jiang Chen.

These One-Line Eight Immortals caught his interest. After all, the eight of them represented the strongest in One-Line-Sky. Tian Muyun was the one who piqued Jiang Chen's interest the most. He would like to see what Tian Muyun looked like and what kind of demeanor this so-called legendary pavilion master had.

"That's also fine. The grand ceremony is open to all. Countless of experts would be attracted to attend the event every time and witness the power of the Eight Immortals. Anyway, there's no need to rush until the event. But does Brother Jiang know that the grand ceremony this time is different from all the previous times?" said Fu Hui.

"Oh? How is it different?" inquired Jiang Chen.

"In the previous grand ceremonies, the Eight Immortals would compete to become the number one in One-Line-Sky. So, it's just an intense battle within them every two years, but there was no

particular reward for the winner except the title. In this grand ceremony, there will be a grand prize. Whoever gets the first place will win this grand prize.”

Fu Hui lowered his tone as if he was afraid to reveal this to anyone else besides Jiang Chen.

“What’s the grand prize?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up and immediately, he became interested in it. A prize that could attract the Eight Immortals must be something very special.

“There are only very few people who know about this. I heard this from an elder in the pavilion, but this matter will be disclosed sooner or later. Despite the icy and cold environment above the mountain, a supreme treasure named Regenerative Lotus is grown in the summit. According to them, it will take ten more days for it to mature and grow the true core of the lotus. Currently, the four major powers have already sent their peerless experts to guard that treasure on the mountain. Without a doubt, the grand prize for this grand ceremony will be that Regenerative Lotus. Whoever can suppress all opponents in the battle, that person will obtain that treasure. Our pavilion master, Master Tian, is also determined to obtain this prize. I think that their battle will be very exciting!” said Fu Hui. His eyes were glittering when he mentioned about the Regenerative Lotus.

“For God’s sake! How can such an unparalleled and divine herb grow on the mountain by itself? This is truly astounding!”

Big Yellow was filled with excitement. He was a person who was very susceptible against true treasures. He couldn’t stand it when others mentioned a great treasure.

Jiang Chen also felt similarly shocked just like Big Yellow. He knew exactly what the Regenerative Lotus was. As a renowned alchemist in his past life, he had learned about almost every herb. The Regenerative Lotus was a peerless divine herb that existed

only in legends. Apart from the harsh condition for it to grow, one needed a certain extent of luck. In other words, depending merely on the condition of the environment wasn't enough. The most important thing was still one's fortune. Every birth of a Regenerative Lotus needed the combination of the Heaven and Earth's spiritual Qi. Every birth of it was a miracle.

Being a peerless divine herb, it naturally had its own medicinal effect.

Chapter 1119 – The Extreme Courage

Divine herbs that had a regenerative effect were rare. Yes, as the name implied, Regenerative Lotus could regenerate things; and, its most precious part was its heart which could be consumed directly.

This herb could bring the dead back to life and grow new bones. The lotus' heart contained a tremendous amount of Heaven and Earth essences. Not only could it enhance the consumer's strength and physique, but could also entirely change the person's physical condition. Even the powerful Immortal King expert could benefit from it if he consumed the lotus' heart.

The existence of the Regenerative Lotus made Jiang Chen think of Ouyang He. If the old man was still alive, this herb could probably give him a turn for the better. Adding Jiang Chen's wood spirit, it was enough to let the old man live by regenerating his life essence that had been burnt.

But too bad, Jiang Chen was afraid that Ouyang He had already passed away and had completely disappeared in this world. It was nothing less than a pipe dream.

In fact, all parts of the Regenerative Lotus was extremely beneficial. Apart from the heart, a piece of it could also improve a person's physique, allowing one to make rapid progress in cultivation. If Jiang Chen could get this item, not only would he advance, but more levels of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would also be condensed.

Ever since he arrived in this world, he had never absorbed any kind of great energy, that's why the pagoda was stuck in its 12th level. Therefore, there was still a long way to go before he could completely condense all the levels.

As far as the current situation was concerned, this was nothing compared to Han Yan's broken arm. If he could obtain the heart of the lotus, Han Yan's arm could be regrown and his Ancient Divine

Devil bloodline would regain its vigor again, bringing him boundless benefits.

Presently, Han Yan was just a Human Immortal, the weakest realm in One-Line-Sky. Being at this level, he would be too powerless to defend himself and would always be oppressed by others. Even if he followed Jiang Chen into Skycloud Pavilion, he would just be a miscellaneous disciple.

Regenerating his arm and advancing his cultivation base was Han Yan's urgent matter right now.

So the instant Jiang Chen heard about the Regenerative Lotus, he had already put his mind onto it, however, it was extremely difficult if not impossible to obtain.

However, Jiang Chen wasn't a man who gave way to difficulties. He would still try it despite its difficulty. Sometimes, Jiang Chen's audacity was even greater than the sky; 'audacious too the extreme' were the right words to describe him.

"Brother Fu, I wonder how strong those experts who are guarding the Regenerative Lotus now?" Jiang Chen asked curiously.

"As the One-Line Eight Immortals are preparing for their intense battle, it was impossible for them to guard it. As such, each major power has sent two Golden Immortal Great Elders to guard the peak of the mountain. They are the existences who have already comprehended the profound meaning of Great Luo and all we can do is to admire them respectfully."

Reverence was painted in Fu Hui face. That was his respect towards the Great Luo Golden Immortal seniors. In One-Line-Sky, any Golden Immortal expert would be given supreme status and would be respected by thousands of people wherever they went. Additionally, a late Golden Immortal expert was considered a peak existence in One-Line-Sky's pyramid of status.

After being given one million low grade Immortal Meta Stones and ten thousand middle grade Immortal Meta Stones, Fu Hui had totally regarded Jiang Chen as his own comrade. So, he had nothing to hide in front of Jiang Chen and said unrestrainedly. If Jiang Chen was replaced by an ordinary expert, he absolutely wouldn't talk to him about the matter of Regenerative Lotus. After all, this matter was a crucial one. If this news was spread earlier than planned, it would create an unintended uproar and drew the attention of powerful experts who were not in One-Line-Sky. At that time, things would be messier.

“Late Golden Immortal expert?”

Jiang Chen's eyelids were drooping as if he was pondering about something. Late Golden Immortal realm...it seemed it wasn't as bad as he thought.

That day, Fu Hui had held a big feast and was carousing with Jiang Chen. Big Yellow, on the other hand, was busy stuffing food into his mouth, not giving the slightest thought about his image and the last big dish ended up in his mouth. Indeed, he was having a very satisfying meal.

That night, Fu Hui had prepared a very exquisite courtyard for Jiang Chen. When Fu Hui left, Big Yellow asked impatiently, “Brat, don't tell me that you're planning to get that Regenerative Lotus.”

Big Yellow was shrewd and understood Jiang Chen all too well. He had noticed Jiang Chen's change of expression ever since he heard about the Regenerative Lotus. Others might not see anything unusual, but it couldn't escape Big Yellow's eyes. He knew that the emergence of the Regenerative Lotus had stirred Jiang Chen's heart.

As a matter of fact, anyone would be impressed by such a treasure. Even Big Yellow himself was feeling agitated because of the Regenerative Lotus.

“That’s right. Han Yan’s arm must be regrown as soon as possible, or else it will affect Ah Yan’s cultivation. As such, the Regenerative Lotus is our only chance,” said Jiang Chen solemnly.

Both Big Yellow and Han Yan understood Jiang Chen’s current look pretty well, it meant that Jiang Chen was going to get this thing either by hook or crook.

“Little Chen, don’t joke around anymore. Although my broken arm could not grow for the time being, it’s impossible to get the Regenerative Lotus. It is guarded by eight late Golden Immortal experts. We don’t even have a chance to get close to it. I’m afraid that we would already be killed even before we get to the peak of the mountain.”

Han Yan shook his head. He knew his limits. Although he desired to get the Regenerative Lotus as well after tasting the bitterness of only having one arm, it was practically impossible for them to rob the Regenerative Lotus.

“Ah Yan’s right. Under the guard of those eight late Golden Immortal experts, it’s just wishful thinking to say that you want to get that divine lotus,” said Big Yellow.

He rarely dispel Jiang Chen’s optimism, but there was no way he would support this idea. No matter how heaven defying and powerful Jiang Chen’s abilities were, it was pointless as the gap was too huge. It was an impossible task to steal that Regenerative Lotus.

“Do you all know what my main objective of coming to One-Line-Sky is?” Jiang Chen looked over at Big Yellow and Han Yan.

“You mentioned that you wanted to join the Skycloud Pavilion, but you didn’t tell your real purpose,” replied Han Yan.

“Actually, my most important target this time is the current master of Skycloud Pavilion, Tian Muyun. You should already know that the old pavilion master, Ouyang He, had fallen two

years ago while he was breaking through to the Immortal King realm. Subsequently, Tian Muyun was promoted to take his place. In truth, Ouyang He's death was caused by Tian Muyun..."

Jiang Chen no longer wanted to hide the matter and told everything related to Ouyang He and Tian Muyun to Han Yan and Big Yellow.

"Damn! I didn't expect that Tian Muyun to be such a trash that deceives his own master and hides the truth from the world. Now the whole One-Line-Sky has regarded him as a legend, a legend who turns out to be a crook."

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, anger was stirring inside of Han Yan. A man like Tian Muyun truly had no shame for his own evil deeds.

"You have promised Ouyang He to get rid of this Tian Muyun. It seems like we still have a long way to go in One-Line-Sky. Haha! But this will be exciting and Master Dog loves excitement. Only powerful enemies will give you better motivation. That Tian Muyun must have had a bad fortune to become your target."

Excitement was plastered all over Big Yellow's face. He had absolute confidence in Jiang Chen. Although Tian Muyun's cultivation was way too high for them, Jiang Chen had never failed in whatever he decided to do. And with his kind of monstrous advancement speed, it was only a matter of time before he killed that heartless brat.

"So, this Regenerative Lotus should never fall into Tian Muyun's hands, otherwise, he's going to get humongous benefits. If he succeeded in breaking through to the Immortal King realm, it's going to create chaos across One-Line-Sky. Although I don't care about the turmoil in One-Line-Sky, I can't allow Tian Muyun to dominate all of them. Given his wild ambitions, if he really becomes an Immortal King, the other three major powers had no chance of surviving. I still need the other three major powers to

suppress Tian Muyun so that I'll have sufficient time to grow," said Jiang Chen.

He had to get the Regenerative Lotus not only for Han Yan's sake, but also to prevent Tian Muyun from obtaining it in case he won the grand ceremony. If Tian Muyun really got the Regenerative Lotus, the consequences would be unimaginable.

"What you said is very reasonable, but the fact remains that we don't stand a chance in robbing that Regenerative Lotus."

Big Yellow shook his head. Although he's truly audacious and there was almost nothing that he wouldn't dare to do in this world, he would never send himself to hell by doing something which he had no certainty of.

"Big Yellow, do you still remember the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda," said Jiang Chen with a smile.

"Yes." Big Yellow nodded.

"The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a supreme divine weapon and a treasure of the true dragons. Even if it's in the Immortal World, it isn't restricted by this world's law. I can use it whenever I want. Currently, twelve levels of the pagoda had already been condensed. Plus, I've found a wonderful function of this pagoda. That is it can block all kinds of Qi. You should have heard about the time when Ah Yan and me were escaping from a late Heaven Immortal elder. In fact, we didn't escape but hid in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. That Heaven Immortal's divine sense couldn't detect any Qi from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda."

The reason he would dare to rob the Regenerative Lotus was because of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had become his greatest reliance. If this pagoda didn't exist, he would've drop this idea long ago.

"So cool! It can work normally even in the Immortal World?"

Big Yellow was stunned. Apparently, he had never thought that

this pagoda could reach such an extent of divinity.

“Little Chen, although the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a very divine weapon, there is a very big difference between a late Heaven Immortal and a late Golden Immortal. It’s true that late Heaven Immortal experts can’t detect the existence of the pagoda, but it can’t guarantee that Golden Immortal experts can’t detect it as well.” said Han Yan concernedly.

Chapter 1120 – The Desolate Mountain Range

Big Yellow and Han Yan were staring at Jiang Chen. Han Yan's concerns didn't come without reason. Although they could escape from a late Heaven Immortal expert's hunt, no comparison could be made between a late Heaven Immortal and a late Golden Immortal. The difference between the two realms was just like heaven and earth.

Golden Immortal experts had already comprehended the profound meaning of Great Luo. They had cultivated a golden body and surpassed the Divine Immortal realm. The Golden Immortal realm was also called the final stage of the Immortal realm. The stage after that would be the King realm, the Immortal King realm. As such, it was nothing more than courting death to rob the food out of those experts' mouth.

“Although Great Luo Golden Immortals have yet to fully master the spatial law, they have very terrifying powers. Their golden physique alone can pierce through the void and break the spatial law by force. They aren't comparable to any ordinary Heaven Immortal or even Divine Immortal experts. So, I won't agree with this risky activity.”

Big Yellow shook his head. This was probably the first time he strongly opposed Jiang Chen's idea.

“Big Yellow, you seem to know a lot about Golden Immortals.”

Han Yan and Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow with surprise. Although Jiang Chen was as powerful as an old ancestor back in Saint Origin World, he was as tiny as a shrimp in this world. He knew nothing about the law of this world, but Big Yellow, on the other hand knew very clearly about the profound meaning of Great Luo and Golden Physique. This was indeed very surprising. Moreover, he still remembered that Big Yellow had told him about

the things in the Immortal World back in the spatial passageway, but he was attacked before Big Yellow finished explaining.

“It was just the enlightenment I got from my talent. That’s how I know things about the Immortal World.”

Big Yellow said casually, but his eyes twitched slightly. This miniature move, however, couldn’t escape Jiang Chen’s eyes.

Could this dog be keeping some kind of secret?

Jiang Chen was confused, but he didn’t ask any further. Whether Big Yellow had secrets or not, it didn’t and would never change the brotherhood between them.

“The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda can conceal itself in the void, becoming undetectable by divine sense. Although Golden Immortal experts have terrifying powers, they have yet to master the spatial law. There’s still a chance for us. There are some things which require our action.”

Jiang Chen’s tone was resolute. If he didn’t know about the Regenerative Lotus, he would never orchestrate this plan, or if the treasure wasn’t a divine herb like the Regenerative Lotus, he would never take such a risk, but now, he had no reason for not taking this risk.

Big Yellow and Han Yan met each other eyes and said nothing. They understood Jiang Chen’s temper too well. When he had decided to do something, he would do it by either hook or crook. There would be no use stopping him. So they might as well stand on his side.

But then again, they also understood that Jiang Chen wasn’t a reckless individual. When he decided to do something, even if he was not 100 percent certain, there would still be a certain percentage of success. He would never attempt something that had zero chance of success.

“There’s no hurry about this. The Regenerative Lotus needs ten

more days to mature, which means we have ten more days to prepare,” said Jiang Chen.

“What are you preparing?” asked Big Yellow.

“To find a way to condense one more level of the pagoda, which will increase our chances. It is no longer meaningful to make any advancement in cultivation, but the advancement of the pagoda would play a crucial role as it would be the key to this theft. One more level will increase our chances of success,” said Jiang Chen.

He had very high confidence in the pagoda, but there were only twelve levels condensed so far. If he could condense one or two more levels, the pagoda’s ability to conceal itself would be greater.

“That toy of yours is really thirsty for energy. Every advancement will need massive amount of energy. In order to advance it, you have to do it outside Cloudmist City,” said Big Yellow.

He knew the scariness of the pagoda. Back when Jiang Chen had just started to condense the pagoda, he needed to absorb massive amount of energy, however absorbing the blood essence of humans would bring chaos to Jiang Chen’s mind. During the Great War with the Desolate Palace, Jiang Chen almost turned into a devil. If it wasn’t for Ancestor Greenlotus, Big Yellow was afraid that Jiang Chen would no longer be here now.

“The land of the Immortal World is vast and boundless. Naturally, there will be abundant number of demonic beasts here. If I can find a place densely populated by beasts, ten days’ time is enough for the pagoda to advance a level,” said Jiang Chen.

“One-Line-Sky is so big, there must be a lot of places infested with demonic beasts. Fu Hui must know about it. Let’s find him and ask him about it,” said Han Yan.

“I will find Fu Hui tomorrow. We will depart tomorrow morning. This ten days’ time will be our chance.”

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered with determination to steal the Regenerative Lotus.

"Kaka! We always do something great by following you, Little Chen."

Big Yellow began to feel excited, he had always feared the world being too peaceful. Since it had already been decided, he had to enjoy the process of it.

"Big Yellow, have you been in One-Line-Sky all the time since your ascension?" asked Jiang Chen.

"En, when you were attacked by some unknown force, we were separated. After arriving in One-Line-Sky, I have been searching for you, but I had never thought that news about you will pop out of itself in the end. What was that sudden attack at that time? Why would someone want you dead when you have just arrived in this world?" Big Yellow asked.

Thinking about the unknown attack made him shiver. It was a miracle that Jiang Chen survived that attack.

"Who else could it be, it was naturally Nan Bei Chao's doing."

Every time this person was mentioned, Jiang Chen couldn't help but reveal a cold smirk. One was Tian Muyun and the other one was Nan Bei Chao. It seemed like he wouldn't be lonely in this world anymore.

"Dammit! It was that stupid shit! It seems like his original self is in this world after all. He was able to detect your ascension accurately. That was a skill that could penetrate space and can only be used by experts who are above the Immortal King realm. I'm afraid that only Immortal Emperors can do this. It seems like that bastard isn't just any grunt in this world. You have to be careful. If he finds you, your death will be certain,"

warned Big Yellow.

Anyone above the Immortal King realm was considered as an

overlord of overlords.

“Nan Bei Chao sure is powerful.” Han Yan was shocked.

“I think he didn’t want me dead but only wanted to injured me at that time. Then, he left a soul imprint in my body, planning to find me after that. But he didn’t think that I have the Immortal Mark inside my body that could conceal his soul imprint. I have already refined the soul imprint, so it’s now impossible for him to find me.” Jiang Chen said with a smile.

The Immortal mark was his other trump card. He had no idea what kind of secret was hidden in it, but he was sure that it would definitely be something extraordinary. If the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda wasn’t safe enough to help them steal the Regenerative Lotus, the Immortal Mark might be able to help them conceal themselves better.

In this night, the three brothers chatted for a long time. When Big Yellow knew that a day in the Immortal World was equal to one year in Saint Origin World, he was shocked like he was possessed. But because of that, he understood why Han Yan had made his ascension so quickly.

“That means Tyrant, Xiao Yu and Sister Ning are ascending to this world soon? I hope we can be together soon. I think I can see our hegemony path now.”

Big Yellow’s gaze fell upon Jiang Chen. The moment Jiang Chen stepped in the Immortal World, he was destined to walk the path of hegemony and he would be the absolute overlord of this path.

Early morning of the next day, Fu Hui had come to find Jiang Chen before Jiang Chen could go and find him. Today was the birthday of the City Lord and Fu Hui had come to invite Jiang Chen. This only showed how important he viewed Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen had totally forgotten about the City Lord’s birthday. Looking at how sincere Fu Hui was, he had no reason to decline it.

The crowd of the banquet would naturally be unusually lively. But Jiang Chen and Han Yan didn't seem to like it. Big Yellow was the only one among them who was enjoying himself so much, mostly in eating.

In the evening, after the banquet ended, Jiang Chen personally looked for Fu Hui and said straightforwardly, "Brother Fu, there is still so much time before the grand ceremony but we don't want to wander around during this period of time. We are thinking of finding a place densely populated by demonic beasts to have some tough-training. Does Brother Fu know the closest mountain that has demonic beasts?"

"Could it be that Fu Hui is not treating Brother Jiang well enough? That's why you are leaving in such a hurry?" Fu Hui seemed dumbfounded.

"That isn't true. There's a saying that says the path of cultivation never ends. After all, I'm still too weak and I don't want to waste much time. I will return after the tough-training because I still have to watch that grand ceremony with Brother Fu," replied Jiang Chen.

"Despite your talent, you are still so diligent in cultivation. This makes me feel ashamed of myself. If it wasn't because of my father's birthday, I will surely join Brother Jiang along. Ten thousand miles northwest of Cloudmist City is a piece of desolate mountain range. There were numerous demonic beasts inside. Last time, many disciples of Skycloud Pavilion have gone there for training, but Brother Jiang must be careful because those beasts are extremely ferocious and there are also Heaven Immortal beasts." Fu Hui warned.

"Thank you for your advice, Brother Fu. I know what to do."

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at Fu Hui and brought Big Yellow and Han Yan out of the Prefecture without delay, heading towards the desolate mountain range instructed by Fu Hui.

The destination was ten thousand miles away. If Jiang Chen used his Flaming Wings, he could reach there quickly, but he didn't want to expose it too much. Despite this being a territory of Skycloud Pavilion, it wasn't a good thing to reveal too much about himself.

Later that day, two men and a dog arrived at the edge of the mountain range. Looking at it from the top, the mountain range had no end. They were afraid that it was at least thousands miles in distance. The area was filled with woods and the air was filled with dense demonic Qi.

"The demonic Qi here is very strong. Sure enough, this place is the convergence spot of the demonic beast," said Han Yan.

"This place will have plenty of powerful great beasts. We have to be careful, don't go on your own," said Jiang Chen.

He was saying this particularly to Han Yan who was the weakest among them. If they were separated, any one of them would encounter an immeasurable danger. What awaited them now would be real bloodshed. As such, they needed to stay alert and stick together at all times.

Chapter 1121 – The Combat Devil Physique

Roar.....

A shrill cry sounded from the desolate mountains. A giant black bear roughly a hundred meters flew skywards, smashing a dozen of big trees with his robust body before landing heavily on the ground. Blood was all over its body. It lost its Qi completely after a final movement.

At this time, a blood-red miniature tower appeared above the bear's corpse. In just a blink, all the Qi and blood essence were fully absorbed by it, leaving a dried corpse behind.

Three silhouettes emerged. They were Jiang Chen and his friends. With a flick, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda landed on his hand and integrated into his body. They had been in this desolate land for two days, killing plenty of demonic beasts. The lowest cultivation among those beasts were early Earth Immortal realm because Jiang Chen was uninterested in killing beast that were below the Earth Immortal realm. The strongest they could find was this black bear which had already reached the early Heaven Immortal realm. With his dragon transformation and Big Yellow's help, they took down this black beast with ease.

“How was it, Little Chen?”

Asked Han Yan. In these past two days, he had also killed several half-step Earth Immortal demonic beast and it had helped him increase his combat strength. Being endowed with the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, not a single beast that was a level higher than him was a match for him. This was the advantage possessed by a genius.

“Only one fourth of the thirteen level was condensed which is still very far away from its completion. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a divine weapon. The further it advance, the scarier the amount of energy required. But we have sufficient time for that

and we are still at the edge of the area. I believe that there will be more demonic beasts inside the vicinity and they will only get stronger. In these two days, I have already gained great benefits. I have condensed some dragon marks and improved my combat strength.”

Said Jiang Chen. Every time the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda absorbed a large amount Qi and blood essence, a portion of it would go to him, giving him extra benefits. In two days’ time, he was able to condense ten thousand dragon marks inside his body, from 320 000, it became 330 000. As such, he still needed twenty thousand more dragon marks, which was roughly a step away from mid Earth Immortal realm.

Dong... Dong...

The land shook and a roar resounded through the woods. In a few blinks, a black devilish ape 30 meters tall emerged in front of them. This beast had a pair of red eyes, body full of vicious Qi which made it seemed like an extremely ferocious predator.

“Jie... Jie... Haven’t been eating people for a while.”

The devilish ape could already speak the human language. Its pair of eyes were staring at Jiang Chen and his friends unblinkingly. In its eyes, these three humans had already become its prey.

“How dare an early Earth Immortal devilish ape act so arrogantly in front of master dog? Let master dog shred him apart.”

Big Yellow laughed and gestured to attack.

“Let me do it.”

Said Han Yan, blocking Big Yellow.

“Hey, you’re just a late Human Immortal expert. You can only kill half-step Earth Immortal beast at best. This devilish ape is an early Earth Immortal realm. It’s two levels higher than you. Don’t get all over yourself.” Said Big Yellow.

“You can let Ah Yan try. If it is a normal early Earth Immortal demonic beast, Ah Yan will be no match for it, but this devilish ape contained a very strong devil essence. Ah Yan possesses the perfect Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, the highest bloodline of the devil essence. The devilish ape’s bloodline will be affected as soon as it fought against Ah Yan. So, even if this beast has the cultivation of an early Earth Immortal realm, Ah Yan still has a good chance.”

Said Jiang Chen. He agreed to let Han Yan fight this ape. Han Yan was also a person who had experienced hundreds of battle, unlike an amateur who only trained at home. To him, this devilish ape was just within his capability to handle.

Although he had lost an arm, that wouldn’t affect his growth. The tough-training itself was a process that facilitates anyone’s growth. Being able to fight a high level demonic beast would be his most meaningful experience in this tough-training.

Han Yan took a step forth and stood opposite the devilish ape. His white hair danced as the breeze blew. His eyes sparkled with brilliance. A wave of billowy combat intent rushed out of his body like invisible blades, cutting off every trees in the surroundings, turning the area into a piece of empty land.

“Jie... Jie... A puny Human Immortal wish to fight me? You truly lack a sense of awareness of your own strength. In that case, I will eat you first.”

The devilish ape stared at Han Yan disdainfully. It would never put a puny Human Immortal in his eyes as it could casually finish this human with just a bite.

“Humph! Is that so? Combat Devil!”

Han Yan harrumphed coldly and bellowed. Boundless devil waves instantly surged out. His body began to change. In a blink of an eye, his physique became a fold sturdier. His eyes turned completely black like a bottomless abyss. That was the true devil nature.

“Never thought that this brat has already condensed the Combat Devil Physique. No wonder he was so confident just now.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but feel shocked when he saw Han Yan's changes. All his concerns had vanished.

“The Combat Devil Physique is initially an Ancient Divine Devil's physique, but Ah Yan has yet to condense it out. I assumed that he has already completed the condensation before he even ascended. With this physical form, it significantly increases his chance of defeating this devilish ape.”

Jiang Chen had a face of relief. His confidence in Han Yan had never faltered. He was most clear about how strong the bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline was. As such, Han Yan's future achievement was going to be immeasurable.

The disdainful devilish ape had a frozen smile on its face, especially when it sensed the ancient devil essence exuded from Han Yan's body, because it had suppressed its own devil essence.

In other words, the beast was overwhelmed with the urge to worship the ancient and pure devil nature that was coming from Han Yan. Under such circumstance, its combat strength was suppressed.

“The Qi of Ancient Divine Devil bloodline. Dammit! How can this brat have such a bloodline?!”

The devilish ape swore, but immediately, its expression turned into excitement and delight.

“This must be my fortune. As long as I devour this human brat, I will obtain the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline. If this ancient bloodline is integrated with my current bloodline, my cultivation will improve by leaps and bounds. After getting the purest devil essence, my future potential will be limitless. Haha! The Heaven must be granting me a gift. Brat, die now!”

That devilish ape laughed loudly, raised its giant palm and

smashed at Han Yan.

“Heavenly Devil Blade.”

Han Yan’s Qi wasn’t any weaker than the devilish ape. He waved his single arm and slashed at the ape with the sharpest black weapon in the Heaven and Earth.

He knew the gap between himself and this beast, so he had sent a full-fledge attack on his first strike. Even his body was equipped with the Combat Devil Physique, he wouldn’t dare be careless in this battle because there was no way that he could fill the difference in their cultivation.

Chapter 1122 – Mid Earth Immortal realm

Chi La!

Han Yan's devil blade slashed on the devilish ape's palm, creating a massive spark. But the sparks were nothing because Han Yan's devil blade was far beyond anyone's imagination. It was an indestructible blade. Not only could it cut through the energy sent out by the devilish ape's palm, it had left a gash on its palm, causing blood to flow out.

“Dammit! You dare to wound me?”

The devilish ape was astounded. How could it, an early Earth Immortal beast be harmed by a late Human Immortal human? How could he possibly accept this fact? It wanted to devour this human so badly straight away, but unfortunately, the devil nature exuded from Han Yan's body had suppressed it greatly. Under this suppression, it wasn't able to fully exert its power. Right now, all it could do was to express its extreme grievance with its roars.

Han Yan on the other hand wasn't at ease while dealing with this beast directly. Although he had injured the devilish ape, he staggered a dozen steps back before regaining his balance.

“Again.”

Han Yan lunged over once more. He leaped into the void 50 meters high from the ground, exceeding the height of the devilish ape.

“Nine Layers Devil Waves, One Layer Devil Barrier.”

Han Yan circulated his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline to the maximum. Only by pushing his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline to the extreme could it create the greatest suppression and impact on the devilish ape and narrow the gap in cultivation between them.

Hong Long.....

Suddenly, the devil waves materialized, like a true ocean wave. Black devil clouds were everywhere. Every wave was higher than the previous, rumbling continuously like thunder. Each wave turned into an illusory devil dragon rushing from nine different directions towards the devilish ape. The momentum of this strike was very powerful, as if thousands of devil army had just descended from the Heaven. It was frightening.

This was also one of Han Yan's strongest combat techniques combined with the Combat Devil Physique. He was afraid that not even the powerful devilish ape could defend itself this time.

Roar... Roar...

The devilish ape roared with rage, rose to counterattack but was suppressed by Han Yan's devil nature. It drew fear out of it, restricting its combat power. Even if it used all the skills that it had, it couldn't stand against Han Yan's devil waves. The Nine Layers Devil Waves was enough to destroy almost all kinds of enemies.

Hong Long.....

The raging battle continued. Some of those demonic beast with weaker cultivation base were scared running away by the powerful Qi, fearing that they would be caught in the disaster.

When the devil waves faded, Han Yan returned to his original position, facing the devilish ape which looked fazed. This ape had lost all its arrogant expression. Its robust body was shivering and was covered with wounds and blood. It seemed like it was on the brink of collapse.

The Combat Devil Physique was too powerful. Han Yan's Nine Layers Devil Waves combined with the Combat Devil Physique was equivalent to Jiang Chen using the True Dragon Combat Technique with his dragon transformation. Of course, despite the powerful Combat Devil Physique, there was no comparison between him and Jiang Chen's dragon form.

The devilish ape was reluctant to glance at Han Yan, then turned tail and ran. It wasn't an idiot. It was an Earth Immortal beast with high intelligence. Although it wanted very badly to acquire Han Yan's Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, it knew its own capabilities. It knew that it was no match for this miniature devil king. If it didn't flee now, it was afraid that it wouldn't have the chance anymore. It would be a great loss if it had to lose its life here.

“Fleeing?”

Han Yan's mouth revealed a cold smirk seeing the devilish ape running away. If this ape decided to flee at the very beginning, there was no way that Han Yan could catch up to it. But with its current state, it would be an insult if Han Yan allowed it to escape from his grip.

Swoosh!

Han Yan made another leap, shooting into the air like an arrow leaving the bow. In a blink, he caught up with the devilish ape. The dark devil blade materialized in his hand out of nowhere and slashed at the ape's head.

“Ah.....”

The ape uttered a screech. Its huge skull was cut in half by Han Yan, causing it to die on the spot. Its sturdy body created a large hole in the ground as it landed.

Han Yan clawed with his hand and grabbed the demon soul from its brain.

“You brat sure is powerful.”

Big Yellow came to Han Yan's side and praised generously.

“Ah Yan, the demon soul of this devilish ape is highly beneficial to you. Quickly refine it. I think there won't be a problem for you to advance to the half-step Earth Immortal after that.”

Jiang Chen reminded hastily and at the same time, he used the

Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to absorb the lying corpse.

“Alright.”

Han Yan nodded and started the refinement. If it was an ordinary demonic beast demon soul, he would never refine it directly. But this demon soul belonged to the devilish ape. It contained a large amount of devil essence that was a similar attribute with him.

An hour later, a powerful Qi burst out of his body. Just as Jiang Chen anticipated, Han Yan’s cultivation was pushed to the half-step Earth Immortal realm after the refinement.

“Congratulations on your advancement, Ah Yan.” Said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“With my current strength, even without using the Combat Devil Physique, I can easily kill this devilish ape.”

Han Yan’s Qi fluctuated as he said confidently. He was quite satisfied with his continuous progress. The only thing he was lacking right now was his arm. He was moved when he thought that Jiang Chen was willing to get that Regenerative Lotus for his arm.

However, he would never express such an emotion. Not much words were needed between him and Jiang Chen as everything was expressed in their hearts. If their situation was exchanged, he would surely do the same for Jiang Chen. He wouldn’t hesitate to risk his life to save his brother.

In the following days, two men and a dog had been battling demonic beasts constantly, flying deeper and deeper into the desolate mountains. All of them wanted to obtain as much benefits as possible from this tough-training. Han Yan’s cultivation had already reached the peak of the half-step Earth Immortal realm, leaving him only a step away from the true Earth Immortal realm.

Big Yellow on the other hand had advanced to the half-step Heaven Immortal realm. The rapid progress of this divine dog

made Jiang Chen and Han Yan speechless.

Of course, it was still Jiang Chen who obtained the most benefits. The thirteenth level of the pagoda was about to be completed soon, leaving only one more step. He had also gained huge benefits from the pagoda. Twenty thousand of dragon marks had been condensed within these past two days, making a total of around 350 000 dragon marks and pushing his cultivation to the mid Earth Immortal realm.

“Very well. I have already reached the mid Earth Immortal realm, bringing my combat strength to another level. By the time we come out, it still needs one more day for the Regenerative Lotus to mature, which is tomorrow. The thirteenth level of the pagoda is going to be fully condensed soon. Once it’s completed, we will return.” Said Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1123 – The Yellow Poisonous Scorpion

There was still one more day until the Regenerative Lotus matured, and Jiang Chen wasn't in a hurry. He just needed to get his hands on that lotus before the day of the grand ceremony. Therefore, he still had ample time to prepare.

However, the two days after the Regenerative Lotus matured would have the tightest security compared to any of the days. The eight late Golden Immortal experts would certainly put all of their focus on the Regenerative Lotus and this wouldn't be in his favor.

Unwittingly, they had entered the central region of the desolate mountain. Comparing this place to the edge of the mountains, it was an extremely dangerous for an expert to be at. No ordinary mid Heaven Immortal expert would dare to step into this region, there were horrifying late Heaven Immortal demons living there. Once they provoked these demons, death would be definite.

Ahead of them was a desert. The size of the land was merely a hundred miles which wasn't considered large. It was calm and quiet. Apart from the yellow sand, there was nothing else here, but Jiang Chen and the others could smell the stench of danger, the stench of blood.

There were huge skeletons scattered all over the place. There were also some human bones. It could be seen that the silent atmosphere concealed an extreme amount of danger. These skeletons were enough to tell that lots of intense bloodshed had happened on this barren land.

The law of the Immortal World had always been cruel. The same went to the demonic beasts. A barren land was also a world and the law here was even crueler. It was equivalent to the law of jungle that was full of killings and tyranny.

“Be careful, this desert isn’t as calm as it seems.”

Jiang Chen warned and strode into the desert.

Sha... Sha...

Just as they entered the barren land, they heard a rustling sound from below. It sounded like it came from the netherworld. In addition, the sound was revolting. When it reached people’s ears, it made people feel sick and unpleasant.

Hong Long.....

The earth began to shake violently. Yellow sand was moving like waves. Neither of them had any idea what was hidden beneath the sand. It looked like an earth dragon.

Howl!

Immediately, a terrible howl was heard from the ground. Then, a monster that had the same color as the sand emerged. Although this monster was moving in a very swift speed, Jiang Chen was able to see it clearly. It was a huge scorpion with bristly body and yellow skin that illuminated netherlight. This yellow scorpion had fixed on its target. It charged at Jiang Chen, opening its huge mouth the moment it appeared.

Jiang Chen used the True Dragon Palm to enshroud the yellow scorpion and heavily slam it to the ground, pulverizing it instantly.

Countless of black liquid oozed out of its body, creating sizzling sound. As the black liquid got in contact with the yellow sand, white smoke was produced.

When the same black liquid touched Jiang Chen’s hands, similarly, it produced a sizzling sound, seemingly trying to corrode Jiang Chen’s palm completely.

“It has a very strong toxicity.”

Jiang Chen was a little shocked, but that didn’t really concern him as he was immune to hundreds of poisons. These poisons were

nothing to him. He could instantly get rid of it in a matter of seconds.

“It was a venomous scorpion.”

Han Yan’s facial expression changed slightly.

“This is the yellow poisonous scorpion. It lives in harsh desert and is called the king of the desert. Aside from its ability to camouflage, it is good at sneak-attacking. The scary thing about them is its ruthless poison. The poison of this scorpion is very different from any ordinary poison we know. We are able to identify normal poison at first glance, but because of the scorpion’s camouflage, it made it hard for anyone to identify the poison that it is carrying. Normally, these scorpions have their own territory. The other demonic beasts will never deliberately provoke them. They are already considered lucky if this poisonous scorpion didn’t go and hunt them.”

Explained Big Yellow. Apparently, he had quite an understanding of this demonic beast.

“This desert is only a hundred miles wide. It seems like there isn’t only one scorpion underneath this soil.” Said Jiang Chen.

“That is of course, yellow poisonous scorpion live in groups. They are also good at besieging attack besides sneak-attacking. We have already entered the deep region of the desert. If I’m not mistaken, I’m afraid that we have already been surrounded by them.”

Said Big Yellow, but his face was relaxed and didn’t seem the slightest bit tensed. Although the yellow poisonous scorpions were a very scary kind, they had lost their advantage when they met Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who were both immune to any poison, they would instead become their nourishment. When these venomous living things lost their edge, it would then be turned into their disadvantage.

“Ah Yan, you must have careful.”

Jiang Chen uttered a warning. It was true that he and Big Yellow weren't afraid of the lethal poison, however, Han Yan didn't have such an advantage. If he was hit by the poisonous liquid, it surely wouldn't be a joke.

Sha... Sha...

As soon as Jiang Chen's word faded, the sound of sand movement beneath them intensified. The hundred miles of peaceful desert suddenly rolled chaotically, like an earthquake. Cracks began to appear and sullen wind rustled, blowing countless of yellow sand into mid-air.

Bang... Bang... Bang...

A large yellow poisonous scorpion rushed out of those cracks. In the blink of an eye, more than a hundred scorpions appeared, besieging Jiang Chen and the others at the center. All the poisonous scorpions were glaring at Jiang Chen with their vicious eyes. There were several poisonous scorpions which had reached the Heaven Immortal realm and they were hovering in the sky, but they were merely early Heaven Immortal beasts, totally harmless to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Dammit! There are so many of them. They are giving me a headache.” Han Yan couldn't help but swore.

“Don't worry. All these poisonous scorpions will become my nourishment. They are going to help me complete the condensation of the thirteenth level of my pagoda.”

Not only did Jiang Chen not show any sign of nervousness, a cold smirk was revealed at the corner of his mouth instead.

“Big Yellow, you and Ah Yan should enter the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Let me handle all of these monsters.”

Jiang Chen said, then ripped open a doorway for his two brothers.

Reluctantly, Big Yellow walked towards the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. As much as he wanted to stay and fight these poisonous scorpions, he knew Jiang Chen's means. He knew that this bastard would end this quickly to avoid delaying their schedule.

After the two of them entered the pagoda, the entire dried desert was left with Jiang Chen alone. He was standing at the center surrounded by numerous poisonous scorpions. His face looked relaxed and calm.

Howl... Howl...

When these venomous beasts saw the man and dog vanishing into the void all of a sudden, they let out a wild roar and charged at Jiang Chen frenziedly.

“Eternal Immortal Wind.”

Jiang Chen bellowed, gushing out the powerful gale out of his body, but it was pulled back into his body the instant it was unleashed.

“Damn! I almost made a terrible mistake.”

Jiang Chen wiped a trickle of cold sweat. He was thinking of ending this battle quickly by using a large-scale combat technique. It was certain that all of these scorpions would die with just a gale.

However, he had overlooked one important fact – the Eternal Immortal Wind didn't belong to him. It was gotten from Nan Bei Chao, it was the skill of Nan Bei Chao. Now that Nan Bei Chao was searching for him everywhere, he would most likely be sensed by Nan Bei Chao if he used this skill, and he certainly wouldn't want that to happen considering the difficulty that he had in refining the soul imprint in his body,. According to Big Yellow, Nan Bei Chao was probably a powerful Immortal Emperor expert that possessed unfathomable means and powers. Given his current level, if he was captured by Nan Bei Chao, it was imaginable what the consequences would be.

Luckily, he was able to recall such an important thing at the critical moment, keeping all the Eternal Immortal Wind with fastest speed. Otherwise, it would be hard to think what would happen next.

“Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal.”

Anyhow, Jiang Chen still had his own means of dealing these scorpions. The instant he kept the Eternal Immortal Wind, he struck out using the ferocious Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. Dragons with different colors rushed out with roars and world-shaking killing aura from different directions, lunging at those yellow scorpions.

Hong Long.....

“Argh...” “Argh...”

Ear-splitting shockwaves along with the shrill wails of the yellow scorpions filled the area. Under the impact of the five elemental dragons, chunks of yellow scorpions were annihilated. Some were instantly pulverized. The Qi and blood essence that oozed out from the corpses were absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda on the spot.

Many scorpions that died after the strike unleashed all of their poison, attempting to harm Jiang Chen as much as possible. Too bad, none of this poison could affect Jiang Chen.

The whole desert was turned into a bloody scene. Yellow sand had blended with the blood of the dead. This was the most violent and ruthless massacre. In just a minute’s time, all the yellow scorpions who were below the Heaven Immortal realm were eradicated by Jiang Chen.

Only those Heaven Immortal yellow scorpions hovering above the sky were still alive as they were petrified. Looking at the sandy land that was filled with the corpses of their kin, it stirred up the fury inside of them.

They had probably never thought that this young man would be so powerful. What surprised them more was that not only were their kins' attack didn't hurt this human, but their poison were also ineffective to him. They were extremely confident in their poison. Every demonic beast was afraid of them because of their poison. Even those late Heaven Immortal experts wouldn't dare provoke them as they pleased. In other words, they had been recognized as the king of this desert. Once they had targeted a prey, whether it was a human or a beast, that prey could never escape from their grip, but today's scene subverted it all.

Chapter 1124 – The Thirteenth Level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda

All the Heaven Immortal yellow scorpions were infuriated. They locked on Jiang Chen's Qi, opened their maw and shot out several black venomous arrows at him. These arrows were condensed using their lethal poison. Apart from its deadly toxicity, it could also deal considerable amount of damage.

However, none of these could affect Jiang Chen. With a swoosh of his Flaming Wings, he flew skyward and emerged in the void high above the sandy ground. The Heavenly Saint Sword materialized in his hand. His dragon transformation wasn't needed to deal with these few early Heaven Immortal poisonous scorpions.

When he was an early Earth Immortal expert, he needed the dragon transformation to deal with early Heaven Immortal opponents. Now that he was already a mid Earth Immortal expert, he wouldn't need the dragon form anymore to deal with the likes of them. Plus, the poison of these scorpions were useless to him. Without the threat of the poison, these demonic beasts was no different than a normal early Heaven Immortal expert.

Hua La.....

Jiang Chen's speed was swift and fast. The Heavenly Saint Sword combined with True Thunderfire and True Dragon Flame was swiped at one of the scorpions. The Yellow Poisonous Scorpions were originally species with dark attributes, thus, Jiang Chen's flames could greatly suppress them.

Clang!

As the Heavenly Saint Sword hit the body of the scorpion, large amount of blood gushed out. The scorpion uttered a miserable wail and flew backwards. Jiang Chen wouldn't give it chance to recover. Immediately, he turned into a ray of light and reached the

flying scorpion in a blink. With such a quick speed, the rest of the scorpions had no chance of reacting, let alone saving their comrade.

By the time they recovered from their astonishment, their comrade had already died under Jiang Chen's hands, leaving no corpse behind as it had been instantly refined by Jiang Chen.

Howl.....

A few scorpions howled agitatedly. Their skin began to change, from yellow to black which was supposed to be their original form. At this time, there was no need for them to conceal themselves anymore. The few of them lunged simultaneously and at different directions, innumerable poisonous blades were shot out of their bodies. Sizzling sound was heard from the air, as if the air was going to be corroded by the poison.

As a matter of fact, these few scorpions were extremely aggrieved because they had tremendous faith in their poison. Under the attack of such deadly poison, they couldn't think of how Jiang Chen could still remain intact. Could it be that there were really some human who was fully immune to poison in this world?

Little Chen is truly terrifying. Anyone will admire his immunity to poison. I'm afraid those Yellow Poisonous Scorpions are at the peak of their rage now."

Said Han Yan with a smile. He naturally felt delighted seeing how great Jiang Chen was.

After realizing how stubborn these scorpions were, Jiang Chen stirred up his combat intent and kept the Heavenly Saint Sword. Sudden wind fluttered his clothes, a golden whirlpool appeared below his feet. That was no doubt the Azure Dragon Five Steps.

Currently, he already possessed three True Dragon Combat Techniques – the True Dragon Palm, Azure Dragon Five Steps and Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. Each of these technique could

deal substantial damage. The Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal could be used to deal with a group of enemies. If those enemies had converged in one spot, Azure Dragon Five Steps was the most suitable attack to eliminate the enemies.

Bang!

All the forces had been gathered at one point. Jiang Chen's big leg landed on the head of one of the scorpions. Under the circumstances where its poison was useless to Jiang Chen, it could never resist his attack. Its supposedly indestructible head exploded under the pressure of Jiang Chen's foot like a soft tofu.

With a grab of his hand, that dead corpse was sent into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to be refined.

The remaining three scorpions began to feel nervous when Jiang Chen slaughtered two of their kins consecutively. They were equipped with high intelligence and weren't idiots. When they realized that they were no match for this human, they spun and drilled themselves into the sand.

“Want to run away?”

Jiang Chen smirked coldly, his Five Elemental Power Spheres was spread across the area, containing the three scorpions. Then, he lunged forth with the Azure Dragon Five Steps.

Bang! Bang!

Two mournful wails were heard when the other two were trampled to death by Jiang Chen and turned into mist of blood. According to their estimation, they shouldn't be this useless and helpless, but being suppressed by Jiang Chen's ferocity and immunity gave them no choice but to flee. They could never fight this human.

Naturally, Jiang Chen wouldn't let the last scorpion go. As Jiang Chen's deadly step approached the last scorpion, it hastily let out an ear-splitting scream that made Jiang Chen frown. Although he

didn't understand the content of the scream, he knew that it was calling for reinforcement.

It seemed like there were even greater Yellow Poisonous Scorpions living underneath the land.

But he couldn't care about that now. The scorpion ahead was a must-die target. After killing that last scorpion casually, the Thirteenth Level began to transform. Reddish light was illuminated from the pagoda. The body of the pagoda was full of ancient and complicated patterns and its Qi was getting denser.

The higher the level that the pagoda went, the harder it was to condense it. That was why so many Yellow Poisonous Scorpions were needed to complete the Thirteenth Level.

“Good, the Thirteenth Level has been fully condensed.”

Big Yellow seemed incomparably excited. Han Yan was showing a smile too. After all, this pagoda was the key treasure that would help them steal the Regenerative Lotus. The more powerful the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda becomes, the higher their success rate.

Dong!

Before Jiang Chen could celebrate, a deep voice resounded from below. Subsequently, the center of the sandy ground collapsed and a wave of billowy demonic Qi soared up to the sky along with a nauseating smell.

Howl.....

A hoarse howl echoed from below, then a huge yellow scorpion flew out. The size of this scorpion was twice as large as the early Heaven Immortal scorpions. Its body was radiating the nether Qi of poison.

“Mid Heaven Immortal Yellow Poisonous Scorpion. It seems like this is the true king of the desert.

Jiang Chen was astounded but wasn't afraid. After all, its

cultivation base wasn't a late Heaven Immortal realm. As long as he transformed, he could get rid of it with no problem.

“That’s a very disgusting thing.” Han Yan knitted his eyebrows.

When the poisonous scorpion king emerged, it scanned around the area. When it saw the piles of its kin’s dried corpses, its rage exploded inside of it.

Swoosh!

The poisonous scorpion king glared at Jiang Chen with its vicious eyes that contained limitless killing intent. “You puny human! How dare you kill my kins while I’m sleeping soundly?! This is unforgivable. I will send you to hell!”

Chapter 1125 – Plunges to Death

There was no way for the scorpion king not to be angry. Given its cultivation and dominance, nothing in this whole desolate region would dare to provoke it. This could clearly be seen from the fact that the battle had already been going for quite some time, yet no other demonic beast had appeared. To the other demonic beasts, this place was like a forbidden land. Even if there were some earth-shattering incident happening here, no one would be willing to come here and get killed.

“You puny little poisonous scorpion dares to call yourself ‘king’? How funny is that?”

Jiang Chen made a sarcastic remark, totally not putting the venomous scorpion in his eyes. In his point of view, the final outcome of the scorpion would only be death and nourishment for the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. From the refinement of those scorpion corpses just now, not only did the pagoda condensed the Thirteenth Level, his body had also condensed five thousand dragon marks.

“Courting death!”

The poisonous scorpion raged. With a swipe of its sturdy tail, it set off endless waves of sand as it lunged towards Jiang Chen. The tail was full of sharp spines and was extremely lethal. It reached Jiang Chen in the blink of an eye. The strength of this swipe carried tremendous amount of energy and the wind started to whistle. That was a highly toxic wind that could bring unimaginable effect once one get in contact with it.

“Dragon transformation.”

Jiang Chen shouted. He wouldn’t dare to be negligent in front of a mid Heaven Immortal scorpion king. With his current cultivation, he needed the dragon transformation to defeat a mid Heaven Immortal expert.

Hong.....

Powerful energy poured out of his body and turned into boundless waves of dragon Qi. The word fierce was no longer suitable word to describe the dragon-formed Jiang Chen.

Pa!

Jiang Chen struck out the huge blood-red dragon claw and grabbed the scorpion by its large tail.

“What?”

The poisonous scorpion king was shocked. It could feel the sudden improvement of this human’s combat strength. But what surprised it more was the attack that it sent to the human just now.

The tail strike was an attack out of its fury. It had gathered almost all of the energy in its body. It thought that this blow was enough to turn Jiang Chen into a meat paste. But the reality was that it failed to send Jiang Chen away. Instead, its tail was held by the dragon claw tightly, causing it to struggle like a helpless animal. This was absolutely an enormous blow to its psychology.

“World Devouring Poison.”

The large tail that was held by Jiang Chen’s hand began to change, each of the venomous spine was sticking out of its tail. These lethal poison was the essence of its venom. No one would have the courage to touch its tail unless that living thing was an idiot who didn’t know the gravity of it.

However, what happened next gave scorpion king the urge to spew out blood. Terrifyingly, Jiang Chen wasn’t affected at all even after the spines stabbed into Jiang Chen’s palm. One should know that the name of its poison itself could make countless of cultivators tremble in fear.

“How is this possible?”

The poisonous scorpion king was completely astounded. The current circumstances were too unprecedented, this young human was too abnormal. This young man would leave an indelible shadow in its heart.

“Haha! Get down here.”

Jiang Chen laughed loudly. Such a fight was truly exhilarating. The dragon marks inside his Qi Sea rippled, channelling all of the energy to his arm. This was an energy that could topple mountains and overturn seas. The poisonous scorpion king couldn't resist it at all. Its huge body was yanked downwards by Jiang Chen, heavily smashing on the ground.

Hong Long.....

The barren land was smashed into a huge pit. Yellow sand flew in waves. The poisonous scorpion king spewed out blood.

Anyone would agree that this impact was unspeakable and indescribable.

“Whoops! That was a terrible plunge.”

Inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Big Yellow was shaking his head enjoyably.

“Little Chen is too aggressive.”

Han Yan also shook his head and sighed. It was a miracle that someone as heaven defying as Jiang Chen existed in this Heaven and Earth. This man would never become mediocre wherever he went. It all started from the Black Sect, all the way to overturning the entire Saint Origin World and building the true Martial Saint Dynasty.

Although Jiang Chen had just arrived in the Immortal World, and still has a very weak cultivation base, but no one could tell how his future path would be. Han Yan believed that the Immortal World would be in Jiang Chen's fingertips sooner or later.

Dong... Dong... Dong...

Jiang Chen was as wild as a barbaric wild beast. The poisonous scorpion king had lost all its advantage and power. It was then violently smashed against the ground a dozen more times until its tail was torn apart eventually.

During the whole process, the scorpion king didn't give up its resistance. It didn't stop injecting the lethal poison it was proud of into Jiang Chen's hands. Unfortunately, the poison seemed to have lost its usual effect today and this was a tragedy for the poisonous scorpion king.

Despite it having broken free from Jiang Chen's grip after its tail was ripped, it didn't seem to have any chance of escaping. Though it had intended to drill itself into the ground and flee, there was no way it could escape from Jiang Chen's control.

Eventually, the poisonous scorpion king reached its last gasp after another countless smashing. Its bloody body was lying on the ground, immobile. Jiang Chen had already returned to his original appearance. He approached the scorpion king leisurely and ended its life.

Big Yellow and Han Yan could see clearly that the scorpion king couldn't even close its tearful eyes before its death. It passed away with a miserable and unpeaceful death. This was going to be the first poisonous scorpion king that was smashed to death. The soul of this living thing surely wouldn't have the face to confront its ancestors in the netherworld.

The Qi and blood essence of the mid Heaven Immortal poisonous scorpion king was incomparably powerful. Naturally, it would bring great benefits to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. As the Thirteenth Level of the pagoda had already been condensed, it began to condense the next Level. The higher the level of the pagoda, the higher the success rate in stealing the Regenerative Lotus.

“Little Chen, now that your cultivation has already reached the mid Earth Immortal realm and had condensed the Thirteenth Level of the pagoda, I think it’s time for us to return now.” Said Big Yellow.

“Well, we are already at the central region of the desolate mountain range and have encountered a powerful mid Heaven Immortal demonic beast. We will certainly have trouble if we encounter a late Heaven Immortal beast. The Regenerative Lotus is going to mature tomorrow. It will take us at least two days to reach the summit.”

Jiang Chen nodded. In any case, he had already achieved his objective of coming here by condensing the Thirteenth Level of the pagoda. It will now depend on their fate whether they could obtain the Regenerative Lotus successfully.

Chapter 1126 – The Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull

After locking on the direction that would lead them to the summit of the One-Line Mountain, two men and one dog departed immediately, but not long after their departure, they were once again enshrouded by a wave billowy demon Qi. It wasn't just demon Qi, but more of a devil Qi. It was the Qi of a powerful demonic devil, the devil of the demon race. It was scarier and more ferocious than the average demonic beast.

“Not good, some powerful demonic devil has appeared. It has already locked onto our Qi.” Big Yellow's facial expression changed slightly.

“It's a late Heaven Immortal demonic devil.” Jiang Chen frowned.

Dong!

As soon as Jiang Chen's voice faded, a black light descended from the sky, and it landed heavily on the place that was 30 meters away from them. There was a huge barbaric bull with a human body and bull head with a height of 3 meters. Its physique was very sturdy-looking and full of solid muscles.

Its body was covered in black scales that was surrounded with steaming devil flames.

“This the Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull with a late Heaven Immortal cultivation. It is an incomparably powerful demonic devil with incredible devil nature and thirst for blood. Any human cultivator and demonic beast of the same level will certainly die if they fought this devil. It is born with a warlike nature and ferocity. Ordinary half-step Divine Immortal won't dare to provoke it. Dammit! Why are we so unfortunate to encounter this bull today?”

Big Yellow said glumly.

“Not necessarily, actually, we should be feeling lucky. If I’m not mistaken, this barbaric bull is the true king of this desolate region.”

Said Jiang Chen. After realizing the features of the bull, instead of showing an expression of nervousness, his eyes revealed a pleased face instead.

“Little Chen, where the hell did you get this kind of confidence? I think we still have the chance if we flee now.”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes. The combat strength of a Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull with a late Heaven Immortal cultivation was equivalent to an ordinary half-step Divine Immortal. It was no doubt their bad luck that they had encountered this ferocious beast today. So he thought that Jiang Chen might have some serious problem in his head to say that it was actually a blessing.

“What do you know? I have comprehended the Edifying Light with Tyrant. It is the natural enemy of this type of demonic devil. I have just arrived in One-Line-Sky and have yet to establish my status here. So, I’m in need of a stronger trump card now. If I can edify this barbaric bull, it’s going to be a very strong trump card of mine for a period of time.”

Jiang Chen eyes glittered. This was what he really wanted. A powerful Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull could definitely act as a super powerful assistant of his.

“Oh, I have forgotten about that skill of yours, but this bull isn’t easy to deal with. Even with our combined strength, we are no match for it. I’m afraid that it won’t be easy to edify it.”

Big Yellow’s eyes glittered as well. If Jiang Chen could really edify this devil, it would bring tremendous amount of benefits, but this was destined to be an extremely difficult thing. With their current cultivation, it was imaginable how dangerous and risky it was to edify a powerful Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull.

“How would you know it if you don’t try? Big Yellow, you and I will do it together. I will use my flames to suppress its devil essence and my Edifying Light to disturb it. Don’t hold anything back this time. Use all the skills that you have. We must take down this barbaric bull today. This desolate area is ten thousand miles large. I assume that there are more than one late Heaven Immortal devil like this, or even demonic beasts. Once we have subdued this barbaric bull, we will use it to lead us to the other great demons. Perhaps that will help me complete the condensation of the Fourteenth Level. At that time, the chances of us getting the Regenerative Lotus will be higher.” Said Jiang Chen.

After listening to what Jiang Chen said, Big Yellow and Han Yan couldn’t help but roll their eyes. This was what people called smart and shrewd. Jiang Chen was able to see the benefits after subduing this barbaric bull.

Wise people could always see things further compared to other people and devised strategies within their control to achieve their goals. That was what made Jiang Chen the winner every time.

“Alright. Master dog will go all out with this thing today. Master dog will show this foolish bull how powerful master dog is.”

Big Yellow shook his head and was already prepared to fight. Additionally, this wasn’t the first time he and Jiang Chen fought side by side. The tacit agreement between them had already reached perfection.

“I think I will go back into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and rest.”

Han Yan shrugged his shoulders and returned to the pagoda. He wouldn’t be of much help in a battle like this. Although his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline could suppress the bloodline of this Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull, there was still a gap that couldn’t be filled, so whatever suppressive effect his bloodline had would be useless. One blow from the barbaric bull was enough to send Han

Yan to death.

The barbaric bull on the opposite had eyes blazing like a torch. It glared at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow and said. “A damn human and a stupid dog. How dare you conduct a massacre in my territory! You are totally not putting me in your eyes. Courting death!”

“Stupid bull, how dare you swear at master dog? Do you believe that master dog will snap both of your horns and extract your beef tendons?”

Upon hearing the swearing of the barbaric bull, Big Yellow snapped. He was considered a very smart dog. He believed that there wouldn't be a second dog in this Heaven and Earth that was smarter than him.

“How dare this stupid bull disrespect me?! It is unforgivable, it must be slaughtered!”

“Humph! You two trash living things. Quickly drag your butt over here and kowtow before me and apologized. Perhaps I might show you my kindness to your wrongdoings by giving you a chance of becoming my slaves. Cherish the opportunity trash!”

The barbaric bull harrumphed coldly, then said in a high and mighty tone.

“For God's sake, this stupid bull is more arrogant than master dog.”

Big Yellow couldn't stand it anymore. A pair of brilliant wings sprouted on his back. He lunged at the barbaric bull like a ray of light.

Jiang Chen didn't dare to delay. He immediately transformed while holding the Heavenly Saint Sword and attacked from another direction.

“Two idiotic trash! I will cook you for my meal today!”

The barbaric bull snorted when it saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow

lunging towards him. It just stood still on the ground. Its left and right hand thrust forward to meet Big Yellow and Jiang Chen.

Before they could even reach the barbaric bull, they could already feel the tremendous energy sent out from the bull's palms. That kind of energy was equivalent to the weight of mountains, it was stifling.

“Son of a b*tch! This bull sure is terrifying!”

Big Yellow swore. A flash of lightning crackled on top of his head. He could no longer hold back while confronting this powerful bull. He had to display his most powerful divine ability.

Crackling...

The third horn grew out in between his brows. Sparks flashed around his face. Subsequently, a brilliant light pillar with frightening destructive force shot out.

Hong Long.....

A mighty beam of light that looked like a dragon collided with the huge palm of the barbaric bull. The shockwave set off gusts of wind.

Chapter 1127 – Fighting with the Halberd

Big Yellow's divine ability was regarded as a secret weapon that had no problem killing opponent that were two levels higher than him. But such a technique was a tremendous drain on him. Luckily, his cultivation was now a lot stronger than before. In the past, he would immediately pass out due to over-exhaustion after casting this technique.

Because of how powerful his divine ability was, the Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull was horrified. The difference in power between the two of them was too great. The impact sent Big Yellow flying roughly 300 meters away.

Barf!

Big Yellow was affected by the shock and coughed up a mouthful of blood, but he didn't panic, he had already expected such a result. He knew his own strength well. The main purpose of his action was to distract the barbaric bull. As for anything other than this, he would place his hope on Jiang Chen.

On the other side, Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword had already turned into a true dragon that roared thunderously. The tip of the sword sparkled out streams of mysterious whirlpool which was called the sword intent whirlpool, also known as the true profound meaning of sword technique. Jiang Chen's sword technique was simple and direct, as well as brutal. The damage it could deal was many folds greater than some of those fancy sword techniques.

Furthermore, the Heavenly Saint Sword carried an endless scorching heat which was the fusion of the True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire. Adding Jiang Chen's dragon transformation skill into the picture, this strike would certainly suppress the barbaric bull to a great extent, and thus reducing its combat power.

Bang!

The long sword collided with the bull's palm, creating a large spark. The strength that came from the bull was enough to overturn seas. Jiang Chen felt the pressure, it was like an ocean was pressing against him. Despite being in his dragon form, he still couldn't resist it and was forced back by this wave of energy.

“What?”

However, despite being shoved backwards, the barbaric bull was also shocked to the extreme. It raised its palm and saw that blood was trickling down in its hand. That impact with Jiang Chen just now had unexpectedly caused a cut on its palm.

“How could I be wounded by a puny human? How is this possible? And, what kind of cultivation law is this bastard practicing? Why do I feel suppressed by it? And also those flames. They are my natural enemy. Under such suppression, I won't be able to exert all of my combat strength. This is really suffocating.”

The barbaric bull snarled. It would never put this man and dog in its eyes, but the current situation showed that it had somewhat underestimated its enemy. Putting aside how powerful this puny human was and how he suppressed its combat strength, the dog was also an incomparably divine opponent. Despite being a mere half-step Heaven Immortal, this dog was still able to remain intact after clashing with it. This was no doubt a miracle by itself.

“Raining Sword Storm.”

Jiang Chen then sent out a powerful attack. It seemed as if the Heavenly Saint Sword in his hands had come to life. Boundless sword intent thrust towards the barbaric bull like a rainstorm. He summoned the Flaming Wings, turning into a phantom figure and launched attacks continuously while circling the barbaric bull. Big Yellow on the other hand summoned his dazzling wings, and lunged towards the bull at relatively the same pace. He struck out with all the skills that he got, causing the barbaric bull's eyes to

turn blurry for a while.

Unfortunately, the barbaric bull wasn't an easy enemy. Despite the constant bombardment of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, it didn't deal any significant damage on the barbaric bull.

Roar.....

But then, the barbaric bull became enraged and roared thunderously. Its body began to change, instantly growing to the height of 30 meters. Boundless devil waves flowed out of its nostrils, mouth and every opening on its body.

It had gotten frenzied. Both of its eyes began to turn red. There was no way that it wouldn't be angry. To it, such a battle was too stifling, it had already lasted for two long fighting these two puny living things. It was an insult to it. If this incident was spread to its enemies, they would certainly laugh their teeth off. It couldn't afford to let this happen.

“Not good, this bastard has gone frenzied. It's very dangerous.”

Big Yellow's facial expression changed and whispered in Jiang Chen's mind. This barbaric bull was far scarier than their imagination. Such a scary combat strength was already equivalent to a half-step Divine Immortal. Even a half-step Divine Immortal was no match for this bull. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were just asking for death by provoking this deadly thing.

“Don't panic. Our chance has come. We were trying to make it angry just now. Now, I'm going to use the ultimate killer's halberd. Big Yellow, don't hold any of your strength back. As soon as we are done, I will give you tons of Immortal Meta Stones to eat.”

Ruthlessness was seen in Jiang Chen's eyes. Even though this barbaric bull wasn't easy to deal with, they hadn't reached the extent where there was no chance at all.

“Alright.”

After listening to Jiang Chen, Big Yellow's eyes revealed some

crazy emotion. He opened his big mouth and spat out two tattered and broken sword into the void. In just a brief moment, the originally tattered sword now looked incomparably brilliant and bright, as if they had become the most powerful divine weapon in the Heavens and Earth.

As for Jiang Chen, these swords weren't unfamiliar to him. These were the swords that Big Yellow obtained back in Saint Origin World, but he wasn't able to discern that it as a treasure at that time, except for Big Yellow. Now, it seemed like that Big Yellow's perception was sharp.

After the emergence of the two broken swords, they fused together into one. The Qi radiated from it suppressed anyone around. It was a force that could suppress people's soul. Even the barbaric bull palpitated a little when it sensed that invisible Qi.

Hong Long.....

Big Yellow channelled all the energy inside his body into the swords. It could be seen that Big Yellow's spirit began to wither in his eyes. Despite his current cultivation base, it was incomparably consuming to active these broken swords.

On the other side, Jiang Chen had kept the Heavenly Saint Sword and drew the giant golden combat halberd out. This was the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, a peak Great Luo Immortal Weapon that was equivalent to an ordinary Immortal King Weapon. He had never used it since he got it from Ouyang He, because he had already anticipated that the fame of this weapon must be as famous as its master. If he used it casually, he would draw plenty of unwanted attention.

The other reason or the most important reason was that he wasn't capable enough to wield it. According to his calculation, he needed to have a Heaven Immortal cultivation base in order to cultivate the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes.

However, he couldn't care so much about it anymore because he

was dealing with this barbaric beast. He had to use whatever he got. As long as he could exert a portion of the combat strength of this combat halberd, he would be able to suppress this barbaric bull. After that, he would use his Edifying Light to subdue this beast.

Chapter 1128 – Surrendering

“What kind of treasure were these broken swords were? How can it be this powerful?”

Looking at the dazzling broken swords, Jiang Chen’s eyes couldn’t help but reveal a trace of shock. It seemed like Big Yellow had his own reasons for collecting those broken metals.

The tacit cooperation between the two of them had already reached a flawless degree. If it was any other person, even with the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, it wouldn’t be easy for Jiang Chen to subdue this barbaric bull, because he needed time to launch an attack using the Immortal Weapon and the bull would never give him the chance.

Therefore, the cooperation of Big Yellow was extremely important. For example, the scariness of the broken swords had diverted the attention of the barbaric bull. As it wasn’t a fool, it would naturally pay attention to Big Yellow or the broken and dazzling swords when it sensed the suppression of the broken swords. Although it was clueless of what the broken sword was, it knew that that was a very rare treasure. So, its eyes started to show an expression of greed and shock.

“It’s a waste for such a good treasure to fall into a dog’s hands. If I’m able to have that treasure, I will surely get rid of those three bastards and become the sole ruler of this desolate mountain range.”

The barbaric bull was entranced by Big Yellow’s broken swords, totally forgetting about Jiang Chen’s existence.

Of course, in the barbaric bull’s eyes, whether it was Jiang Chen or Big Yellow, neither of them was a match for it. So, there was no big deal about ignoring the other harmless opponent.

Roar.....

The barbaric bull moved. Its 30 meter large body produced endless devil waves that turned into a lifelike black bull the size of 300 meters, it hovered in the sky and lunged at Big Yellow.

“Stupid bull! Master dog will show you why the flowers blossom so brilliantly!”

Big Yellow swore. At this time, he couldn't care much anymore. He had already instilled all the energy in his body into the broken swords. The broken sword became agitated and turned into a 30 meter heavenly sword, slashing at the illusory bull that was created out of pure devil Qi.

Hong Long.....

An impact was produced out of the strongest attacks of the two combatants. Even though there was an insuperable gap between Big Yellow and the barbaric bull, Big Yellow's heavenly sword was just too powerful. It consisted of the suppression of origin. It seemed like no one in this world could wield this sword except for Big Yellow .

The battlefield suddenly turned chaotic, or it should be said that the scene was completely enshrouded by the shockwave, causing its brilliance to disappear from sight.

Jiang Chen didn't pay any attention to the battle as he didn't have the energy to do so. This was a crucial moment. Big Yellow had already bought him some time. He knew that it was impossible for Big Yellow to defeat this barbaric bull unless he attacked.

Weng... Weng...

The Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd in his hand was producing a buzzing sound. The dragon marks inside his body began to ripple. Immense energy surged into the combat halberd like tidal waves. In just a few blinks of time, a large portion of Jiang Chen's energy had been sucked into it.

As soon as it was done, the halberd sank in his hand, giving him a

hard time to hold it properly, it was as if he was holding a billion kilograms of metal.

“Damn! This is a real energy-sucker!”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes and had the urge to cough up blood. In truth, given his current cultivation, wielding this peak Great Luo Immortal Weapon with such force was torturing. It took only a moment and almost all of his energy was sucked dry. If he failed to eliminate his target after this, he would surely be in serious trouble.

However, he was very confident in this halberd, feeling that this strike would have no problem getting rid of this barbaric bull. Of course, he wouldn't really 'get rid' of this bull. His intention was just to weaken this bull so that he could subdue it.

On the other side, the intense battle between the two was already over. The broken swords vanished. Currently, Big Yellow was lying very far away on the ground, motionless. His tongue was stuck out and was gasping for air. It only showed how much of his energy was expended from the previous technique he used.

The barbaric bull didn't look as intact as before, but it was after all a peerless devil king that was on par with a half-step Divine Immortal expert. So, its combat strength was still as powerful.

At this time, Jiang Chen moved. The combat halberd had already drained almost all of the energy inside his body. The metal howled and grew 30 meters in size before it thrust at the bull's head.

“What?”

The barbaric bull exclaimed as if it could feel an extreme sense of danger. Both of its large eyes were staring at the incoming huge combat halberd.

“Damn! This is another invincible treasure. How did these two bastards get such treasures?”

The bull felt annoyed. As one of the conqueror of this desolate

land, there wasn't a single combat weapon in his possession. It couldn't take it when it saw that this man and dog had a precious Immortal Weapon of their own. Just now, it had paid all of its attention to Big Yellow, totally forgetting the existence of Jiang Chen. It admired its opponent for taking advantage of the time while he was fighting with the other to prepare his attack.

However, it had very quick response. It immediately struck out a giant black bull and rushed at the combat halberd.

Chi La!

But this time, the bull wasn't as lucky as before. Its lifelike bull was instantly cut into half by the domineering halberd. When the huge metal reached the barbaric bull's body, it left a deep gash on it.

If it wasn't because of Jiang Chen's attempt to control the attack, the tip of the metal mostly would behead the bull.

Roar.....

The barbaric bull let out terrible cry after being injured heavily by the Great Luo Immortal Weapon. That was a pain that was beyond ordinary.

After sending out this strike, Jiang Chen was absolutely drained. He immediately kept the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. Presently, his face was pale-white, but this wasn't the time for him to rest yet. The Flaming Wings were still holding his body in the sky. Almost at the exact moment when the barbaric bull was badly wounded, Jiang Chen shot out the Edifying Light.

Swoosh!

The Edifying Light entered the bull's head like a spiritual serpent. After a moment of struggle, it stopped, it was no longer in good condition to resist from being edified.

The brutality in its eyes faded and its body slowly reverted to its original size. Jiang Chen returned to his original form and landed.

The barbaric bull approached Jiang Chen while bearing its pain and bowed respectfully. “Master.”

Chapter 1129 – An Unexpected Harvest

“En, keep a lookout for me first. When I recover, I will treat your injuries.”

Jiang Chen darted a glance at the barbaric bull. Now that he and Big Yellow were worn out, they needed to recover as soon as possible. As for the barbaric bull’s injuries, it wasn’t quite a big deal compared to them because it hadn’t affected its origin. With Jiang Chen’s wood spirit, he would certainly heal pretty fast.

“Yes, master.”

The barbaric bull nodded and didn’t dare show slightest bit of disrespect to Jiang Chen’s words. This was the magic of the Edifying Light. Once the target had been edified, it would follow its master’s order without a question. Even if Jiang Chen wanted the barbaric bull to kill itself before him, the bull wouldn’t have the slightest hesitation.

Han Yan walked out of the pagoda and saw the big difference between the current barbaric bull compared to the previous ferocious bull.

“This Edifying Light sure is marvellous. With this bull following you, it’s like bringing a half-step Divine Immortal expert with you. Plus, this bull has already reached the peak of Heaven Immortal realm. It’s highly possible for it to break through to the half-step Divine Immortal at any moment. At that time, its power will be equivalent to an early Divine Immortal expert.”

Han Yan marvelled and raised his thumb up to Jiang Chen’s terrifying skill.

“Little Chen, master dog is exhausted to death. Quickly, restore my powers, and where are those Immortal Meta Stones?” Big Yellow said impolitely.

“Don’t worry.”

Jiang Chen wouldn't be calculative with his brother. Immediately, he took out loads of Immortal Meta Stones. This time, Big Yellow was not the only one who wanted the stones, he himself also needed it very much. After spending almost all of his energy wielding that combat halberd, he had to recover fast. There would always be danger everywhere in this desolate land. But with the help of the barbaric bull, any ordinary demonic beast wouldn't dare approach the area that was filled with its barbaric bull's aura.

An hour later, both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had completely recovered. They weren't injured badly. It was just that most of their energy had been spent. Due to Big Yellow's powerful bloodline and Jiang Chen's incredible healing speed, they merely took an hour to fully recover. Such healing speed totally shocked the barbaric bull who was standing beside them.

Master is truly a special human. I will certainly gain lots of benefits by following him.

The barbaric bull chuckled to himself.

The first thing that Jiang Chen did after recovering was to treat the bull's injuries. Now that the bull had become his strongest helper, he naturally needed to restore the bull's peak performance.

"Barbaric bull, come over here. I'll help you heal your injuries." Said Jiang Chen.

The barbaric bull hastily walked towards Jiang Chen respectfully. Although he had no idea how would Jiang Chen heal his wounds, he wouldn't dare disobey Jiang Chen's order.

Jiang Chen stuck out his palm. Powerful wood spirit Qi was channelled into the bull's body through its wounds.

Hiss!

While receiving the energy of the wood spirit, its body couldn't help but shiver with comfort and pleasantness, like a dry wasteland finally being washed by a heavy rain.

In just ten minutes', all the injuries of the barbaric bull was healed completely. It looked more alive and full of energy, like a vigorous tiger.

"Master's means is truly amazing. Thank you, master for treating my injuries."

The barbaric bull was astounded. It was its first time experiencing such a heaven defying skill. If it didn't experienced it personally, it would certainly not believe it even if it was threatened to death.

"Big Yellow, what were those broken swords just now? Why were they so terrifyingly powerful?"

Han Yan looked over at Big Yellow. It was his first time seeing this kind of technique. The barbaric bull also turned to Big Yellow, feeling curious as well about that treasure.

"I'm not telling you all. Can't master dog have his own secrets?"

Big Yellow said arrogantly, totally not giving Han Yan face.

"F*ck you!"

Han Yan raised his middle finger at Big Yellow disdainfully.

"Alright, this time we really had a great harvest in this trip, which increased our chances of getting the Regenerative Lotus." Said Jiang Chen.

"Little Chen, are we returning now?" Asked Han Yan.

"There is no need to rush. We still have time."

Said Jiang Chen. Then, he turned to the barbaric bull. "Barbaric bull, how many great demons that have the same level as you reside here?"

Jiang Chen always made sure that there were no benefits left behind in the area before departing.

"Master, there are a total of seven of us, guarding seven different

parts in this desolate mountain range, and this is my territory.” Said the barbaric bull.

“Seven? Do you have confidence in defeating all of them?”

Asked Jiang Chen. If he was able to refine all of these great demons, his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would directly reach the Fourteenth Level.

“I don’t have such confidence. The seven of us are on par with each other in terms of cultivation. Although we have competed many times to seize each other’s territory, no one has ever succeeded.” Said the barbaric bull.

“It seems like it isn’t an easy task to get rid of all of them.”

Jiang Chen frowned. One Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull was hard enough to handle. Plus, this was done by suppressing it with the skills that they have. If it was replaced by a demonic beast that they couldn’t suppress using their skills, it would certainly be hard for them to take the beast down.

“Is master thinking of getting rid of them? I do have an idea.” Said the barbaric bull.

“Speak.” Said Jiang Chen.

“I have a twin brother that was also from the Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull race. But because of some trivial matters, he initiated the idea of the seven of us dominating only our own territory. If master and I could combine our strength together and edify my brother, it won’t be a problem for us to deal with the other demon kings.” Said the barbaric bull.

After listening to what the bull said, their eyes glittered. They had never thought of this unexpected harvest. Subduing a Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull was already good enough for one trip’s harvest, but adding another demon king into the picture, it seemed like a treasure that had fallen from the sky.

With these two barbaric bulls eradicating the other demon kings,

Jiang Chen's pagoda would surely advance to another level and thus, increasing their chances of getting the Regenerative Lotus. This was no doubt a really pleasant thing.

“Little Chen, it seems like you are going to raze this mountain range to the ground.” Han Yan revealed a cold smirk.

“Since we have come here, we will make sure we didn't come in vain. Barbaric bull, bring me to your twin brother now so that I can subdue him.”

Said Jiang Chen. He might not be that confident in subduing an ordinary demonic beast, but confronting a devilish barbaric bull just like this current assistant of his gave him the advantage because of his flames and dragon transformation skill. Besides, he will also have the help of this powerful barbaric bull, the twin brother of the other barbaric bull. Therefore, this hunt would surely be easier compared to the previous battle where he and Big Yellow had almost wore themselves out to death just to subdue a single demon king.

Chapter 1130 – The Twin Brother

“Yes, master.”

The barbaric bull followed exactly what Jiang Chen said without the slightest bit of opposition even if it was already plotting against his own twin brother. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was the only master or being that he could follow and listen.

It wasn't the right time to disclose their existence yet, so he asked Big Yellow and Han Yan to enter the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda once more. He realized the wonderful function of the pagoda when arrived in the Immortal World. Putting every other function aside, its ability to conceal their existence was enough to make it a treasure desired by countless of experts. It was also this function that had brought plenty of convenience to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen fluttered his Flaming Wings and flew towards the other side of the mountain range – the place where the twin brother resided – under the barbaric bull's lead.

The barbaric bull's Qi was arrogant and powerful. Given the fact that his injuries had already recovered and his power returning to its peak form, he was no doubt, one of the demon kings in this desolate mountain range. So he would naturally not stop himself from showing its proud and domineering side wherever he went.

Soon, the both of them arrived at a region. In front of them was a big mountain with a cave at its side, however, the cave was unnoticeable if one didn't pay close attention to it.

The barbaric bull flew towards the cave and unleashed its powerful Qi. Every one of the seven demon kings had their own domain. If someone amongst them unleashed his or her Qi in the other demon king's domain, it would be regarded as a direct confrontation and a big battle would be inevitable.

This type of provocation was even more direct than shouting and

yelling.

Roar.....

Sure enough, just as the barbaric bull released its Qi, an angry roar was heard from the inside. The echoing roar was so loud that it shook the entire mountain. Then, a wave of black devil flames rushed out of the cave.

The devil flames danced and turned into a barbaric bull. These two bulls were worthy of being called twin brothers. Both of them looked alike. If they were standing side by side in front of Jiang Chen, he wouldn't be able to discern which was the one he had subdued unless he judged them based on their Qi. The one that was subdued by him has the Qi of the Edifying Light.

“Big brother, what are you doing in my place? Could it be that you want to fight me because you can't stand the boredom anymore?”

The newly-appeared barbaric bull said in a bad-tempered tone. It showed that the relationship between the both of them wasn't good.

But immediately, the barbaric bull fixed its eyes on Jiang Chen. A hint of shock emerged in his eyes when he saw his own brother standing together with this human.

“What are you doing with a human? I know, you want to use this human to ingratiate yourself with me so that our relationship would be restored. Unfortunately it's useless. I can see that this brat does have a very exuberant Qi and blood and also a delicate skin and meat. He might taste quite good. Anyway, just leave him here and go. About you disturbing my sweet sleep, I will treat it as if nothing has ever happened.”

The barbaric bull said casually, treating Jiang Chen as a prey that his big brother had come to give him.

“Shut up, little brother! Don't be rude to my master!”

The edified barbaric bull raged. He would never allow anyone to be disrespectful to his master and that included his own twin brother. His twin brother could insult him, his big brother, but not his master.

“Eh? What did you just say? Master? Big brother, is your brain fried or what? Are you calling this human as your master?”

Apparently, the young barbaric bull was dumbfounded by his big brother's words. Although the relationship between the brothers wasn't a pleasant one, they knew each other pretty well. As a demon king, every one of them had their own pride and dignity. Even if they die, they would never yield to a human, much less to a human with a super weak cultivation base. So what exactly happened?

“Little brother, I now belong to my master. My master is a top grade genius of this world. My future achievements will surely be immeasurable by following him. As courtesy and as your big brother, I have come this time to ask you to become my master's follower, just like me. I hope you can stop being obsessed in your own world.” The elder bull spoke.

The younger bull was stunned after listening to what his big brother said. His mouth was left open so wide that it could be stuffed with a big basin. He was doubting his hearing ability. He wouldn't feel so surprised if his big brother had come here to start a fight with him, but what was happening now? His proud and arrogant big brother, also a Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull, had just claimed that a puny human was his master. What was so special about this young human that made his big brother so loyal to him?

He wasn't a fool. He could see that his big brother had been completely subdued by this white-clothed youth. He couldn't help but dart another glance at Jiang Chen.

“What your big brother said is true. You will gain great benefits after submitting to me. Don't resist to avoid getting some physical

injuries.” Jiang Chen said to the young barbaric bull.

“Haha! You puny human. What can you do to make this demon king submit himself to you? This must be the funniest joke in the world. I can devour a hundred of brats like you in one gulp.”

That barbaric bull burst into laughter, absolutely not putting Jiang Chen in his eyes. Although he was clueless about what had happened to his big brother, he knew that it was impossible for a demon king to submit himself to a puny human even if he was threatened to death.

“Don’t waste anymore time. Proceed.”

Jiang Chen’s expression turned cold. He then ordered his assistant bull to attack. He had already expected this scene earlier. For a demonic beast like this barbaric bull that was brimming with pride, it was totally impossible for him to subdue it so easily. This also applied to that big brother of his. If it wasn’t because of the help of the Edifying Light, Jiang Chen certainly wouldn’t succeed in subduing this conceited beast.

“Yes, master.”

The big brother bowed before Jiang Chen and unleashed its powerful Qi and combat intent. He turned towards the younger brother. “Little brother, since you are still trapped in your own thoughts, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

As his voice faded, he roared and lunged at the young brother. The Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull had very solid body, even if it was a collision of pure brute force, it could flatten a late Heaven Immortal human to death.

“Dammit! You are crazy big brother!”

The young brother had the urge to cough up blood. He now knew that his big brother was under the full control of this young man. His big brother wouldn’t even frown if it was commanded to kill itself.

Hong Long.....

Both barbaric bulls collided together. The sky was blotted out by the dark devil waves. It was imaginable how big the movement of the impact was.

Chapter 1131 – Subduing another One

Jiang Chen didn't involve himself in the battle, he just stood at a far distance watching the battle. He wanted to see the difference between these two brothers, so that he will know how much power a demon king has from its counterpart.

He had to admit that this pair of twins were equally aggressive. They used the same combat techniques. There was still no clear victor after over a hundred rounds of exchange and smashing.

“These two bastards sure are savage. If the both of them stand on the same side, their enemies surely won't stand a chance.”

Inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Big Yellow could clearly see the battle.

“That's right. If Little Chen is able to subdue both of them, we will have a pair of super powerful hands in our side. Being twin brothers, they both have the similar combat style. Plus, there is tacit understanding between the two of them, making their cooperation flawless. The other demon kings would surely end up in tragedy if they confront these two brothers.” Said Han Yan.

“Fortunately, these two brothers are having a feud with each other. Otherwise, there will be no other territory and demon kings in this desolate mountain range.”

Said Big Yellow, implying that these two bulls would really be powerful once they joined forces together.

“Big brother, are you f*cking crazy?! How can you follow a human? You are putting our ancestors and heavenly devil bloodline to shame.”

The young brother was about to cough up blood. His brother was extremely ferocious today, and fought aggressively than usual. He really wanted to know what skill Jiang Chen used to subdue his proud and conceited brother.

“Little brother, as long as you yield to master, it will be just like last time when the both of us were hunting and living together. We will definitely have lots of harvest in the future by following master.”

The big brother continued to advice his younger brother bitterly, like an elderly.

“F*ck your harvest!” The younger brother coughed out blood.

“How do you f*cuk a harvest?” The big brother’s response made the younger brother spewed out blood once again.

“You son of a b*tch!”

“Our mum is not a b*tch.”

.....

This pair of brothers didn’t forget to throw insults at each other in the fight which pleased Jiang Chen very much. If this continued, the younger bull would certainly lose the match without Jiang Chen’s interference, not because of its incompetence, but because of infuriation.

There was a technique called infuriation, it could shorten one’s life due to anger.

“Kaka! These two bulls are really amusing!” Big Yellow burst into laughter.

Hong Long.....

The elder bull was unwilling to give in as he had received Jiang Chen’s command to take down this young brother of his. So naturally, the fight won’t stop unless the other party was willing to give up.

“Little Chen, don’t delay this and finish it now. The commotion created by these two bastards are too big. We still need to deal with the other demon kings later. We can’t afford to delay our schedule of returning to One-Line Summit.” Han Yan reminded.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded. Immediately, he turned into his dragon-form and held the Heavenly Saint Sword that was burning with scorching flames. He lunged at the younger bull, not hoping to severely injure the bull, but to suppress it with his True Thunderfire and True Dragon Flame. In this case, the younger bull’s combat power would be affected. Once the elder bull gained the upper hand over the young bull, Jiang Chen would then take the opportunity to edify the younger bull.

“Damn! I never thought that this human has such powerful means and incredible transformation technique. What kind of flames are these? How can it suppress my devil nature?”

The young bull’s facial expression changed dramatically. He wasn’t afraid of Jiang Chen’s combat power, but the flames really shocked him. He couldn’t exert his full strength under such suppression.

“Unparalleled Barbaric Bull.”

Just as Jiang Chen suppressed the younger brother, the elder brother launched his attack. As a powerful demon king, he had plenty of experience in battle and knew when was the right time to attack. The perfect moment has arrived, it sent a heavy attack towards the opponent.

The elder bull turned into a huge vigorous black bull that looked like a true bull devil. His giant hoof then made a kick on the younger bull.

Bang!

The younger bull had lost its defence the moment Jiang Chen’s flames and his elder brother’s powerful technique were launched at him.

Under the attack of the peerless black bull, the younger bull was sent flying away. It spewed a big mouthful of blood.

“Receive my slash.”

Jiang Chen’s demeanour was domineering. His sword strike accompanied the elder bull’s attack. In less than ten rounds, the younger bull lost its stance and competence to fight.

“Suppress him, elder bull.” Shouted Jiang Chen.

“Yes, master.” The elder bull unleashed all of its Qi that formed into a large net, enshrouding the younger bull at once.

“Edifying Light.”

Jiang Chen picked the timing accurately. The edifying light shot into the younger bull’s body unnoticeably.

Roar!

Feeling the threat of the edifying light, the younger bull roared hoarsely. Both of his hands were holding his head, wailing miserably. At the last moment, he finally understood how his big brother was subdued. It was this ray of light that had entered his brain. Once he yield to the light, he would be fully edified and the human would become his master.

After that, Jiang Chen kept the Heavenly Saint Sword and returned to his human form. He was very confident in his edifying light. He anticipated that the younger bull could only hold on for a minute or so before giving up entirely.

Sure enough, the young bull yielded to the edifying light after a minute. The struggle and infuriation in its eyes were replaced by brightness. He approached Jiang Chen and bowed respectfully. “Master.”

“Haha! This is what you should do, younger brother. It’s best to follow master. What you did just now was just some meaningless struggle.”

The elder bull came to the younger bull’s side and patted its shoulder.

“Thank you for your advice, big brother. I almost went astray just now.”

The younger bull looked deeply ashamed. It only showed that the hard feelings between the two had already been resolved.

“Damn! It can also make them become so grateful and enlightened even after being edified. This light surely is too abnormal.”

Han Yan felt somewhat speechless. In fact, a scene like this could make any bystander speechless. The previous brutal scene suddenly changed to something peaceful so quickly. Truthfully, Buddha Sect was the greatest enemy of the devil race because they can suppress the devils. The edifying light originated from the Great Compassion Mantra, the number one scripture of Buddha Sect, which explained why the light was so powerful.

Chapter 1132 – The End of the Demon Kings

“Both of you will become my faithful followers. You will be called Ah Da and Ah Er.”

Said Jiang Chen. The name Ah Da and Ah Er were used on the two dark souls that he had edified back in the Devil World. Today, he decided to give these two subordinates the same name.

“Yes, master.”

Both of them bowed before Jiang Chen.

“Ah Er, come over here, let me help you treat your wounds first.”

Said Jiang Chen. Ah Er had received some injuries in the fight and was needed to be treated as soon as possible so that he could join his brother to deal with the other demon kings. Only then could Jiang Chen’s Ancestral Dragon Pagoda absorb those demon kings’ Qi and blood essence, condensing the Fourteenth Level. After that, they would need to head back to One-Line Mountain.

Large amount of wood spiritual Qi had been transferred into Ah Er’s body. He had the similar shocked expression as his elder brother earlier. It only took a moment before all of its injuries were healed, returning to its peak condition. Because his injuries weren’t as severe as his brother, his injuries took much lesser time to heal.

“Master’s means is truly marvellous. I surely will be able to soar and succeed in the future.”

Ah Ern’s word were filled with gratitude, just like his elder brother. This was the effect of the edifying light. There was only obeying and following in their minds now.

“Ah Da and Ah Er, both of your injuries have been fully healed. We will now go and eradicate the other five demon kings. Which do you think should we eradicate first?”

Asked Jiang Chen. He didn't want to waste any more time. Once he decided to do something, he had to finish it fast.

"Both of us are enough to conquer this desolate Land. The Silver Lion King is closest from here. We can deal with him first." Said Ah Da.

"That's right. Although that Silver Lion King has a very powerful combat strength, however, neither of the demon king could outmatch the others. Now that both of us are joining hands in the fight, the Silver Lion King won't stand a chance."

Ah Er said confidently.

"Alright, we will start with the Silver Lion King first then."

Jiang Chen nodded. Under the lead of Ah Da and Ah Er, he flew towards the territory of the Silver Lion King.

Soon, the three of them arrived at the Silver Lion King's territory. Almost instantly, both of them unleashed their Qi to draw the Lion King's attention.

A strong wave of Qi rose from the mountains ahead before a silvery cloud emerged. On top of the cloud was a middle-aged man in silver robe, and with a head of silver hair, sturdy physique and tall nose, the nose of a typical lion.

This was the powerful Silver Lion King that has a unique bloodline. Although it wasn't considered a noble demonic beast, it was incomparable to any ordinary demonic beast. Otherwise, it wouldn't become the king of this territory.

"Humph! What are you two stupid bulls doing in my place? Are you two here to have some drink?"

When the Silver Lion King saw Ah Da and Ah Er, he immediately spoke in an unfriendly tone.

"Silver Lion King, we are both here to take your life." Ah Da spoke straightforwardly.

“Haha! This is a joke. Haven’t you two brothers have enough of it yet? This desolate mountain range is conquered by us, the seven demon kings. We have never crossed each other’s line, but today, you two have broken into my place and spoken some offensive words, are you trying to break the peace of this area?”

The Silver Lion King laughed loudly. The seven demon kings must knew each other very well. After so many years of struggles, none of such preposterous incident had ever taken place. So, it didn’t concern him much even when these two twin bulls emerged in his place at the same time.

“Silver Lion, we brothers have casted our past feud aside and had decided to deal with you together.”

Said Ah Er, unleashing his killing intent straightaway, and locking on the Silver Lion King’s Qi.

Only Ah Da and Ah Er were present in front of the Silver Lion King. Jiang Chen currently was hiding inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, observing everything ahead closely. There ought to be an earth-shaking battle amongst them. It was imaginable that the Silver Lion King was no match for Ah Da and Ah Er, but because of the Silver Lion King still being very strong, it was very likely that he would escape if it was in a critical situation. Jiang Chen’s purpose of concealing himself was to prevent this from happening. He would launch a deadly strike at this demon king when the time came.

Although the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had wonderful functions, Jiang Chen still needed to launch his attack at the Silver Lion King personally. As he couldn’t attack inside the pagoda, he needed to get out of the pagoda to launch a sneak attack at the most crucial moment, when the Silver Lion King was about to escape from the battle. The reason that he couldn’t get involved in the battle now was to stay hidden from the Silver Lion King. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was indeed a very solid shield, there was no guarantee that the Silver Lion King couldn’t damage the pagoda

once it found their coordinates. This was a mistake that Jiang Chen couldn't afford to make as it might jeopardize their plan of stealing the Regenerative Lotus.

When the Silver Lion King sensed Ah Da and Ah Er's killing intent in the void, its facial expression darkened. He was smart enough to realise that these two barbaric bulls were serious today. This kind of killing intent indicated that they were going all out in this battle.

“Humph! I'm not having a good mood today, see you.”

The Silver Lion King made a cold humph, then turned and left. He was indeed very shrewd to know that he was no match against the two barbaric bulls.

“You are leaving, Silver Lion?”

Ah Da clamoured. He had already anticipated Silver Lion King's action before this, so how could he allow his target to leave? Immediately, he flew towards the Silver Lion King, blocking him at the front and his younger brother was at his back. Even though these two twins didn't have a very good relationship before this, they were after all blood brothers. They still had a tacit understanding of each other which allowed them to cooperate flawlessly. Both of their divine sense and Qi had already sealed this area, not giving the Silver Lion King the slightest bit of chance to flee.

“You two foolish bulls! Could it be that you two really want me dead? In that case, I will just go all out with you two as well.”

The Silver Lion King was enraged. He had never thought that these two barbaric bulls were true to their words and so relentless.

“Stop your nonsense, Silver Lion. Younger brother, now! Unparalleled Barbaric Bull.”

Ah Da didn't continue conversing with the Silver Lion King. He ordered his brother to strike, then struck out with his strongest

technique along with his brother. For a moment, two 300 meters size unparalleled barbaric bulls emerged in the sky, like massive black mountains that could make any bystander shiver in fear.

Roar! Roar!

The barbaric bulls raged, charging at the Silver Lion King from both directions frenziedly. This attack contained a very destructive might. If it was a direct hit, the target would either be seriously injured or dead.

Roar.....

The Silver Lion King didn't dare neglect their charging attacks, it quickly transformed into its true form.

Chapter 1133 – The Fourteenth Level

A 300 meter giant version of the silver lion appeared in the sky. This silver lion had reached the peak of late Heaven Immortal realm, only a step away from half-step Divine Immortal. Too bad, that one step wasn't a short one, it was as far as eighteen thousand miles of distance.

Its body was glowing with silver light, looking like a shield made out of light. Not only did it had high defensive strength, it also had immense attack force.

Though not as powerful, this technique was comparable to the Firethorn Combat Armour which Jiang Chen obtained from the Firethorn Beast.

Hong Long...

The attacks of the three demon kings collided. The colour of the sky was instantly blotted out by infinite destructive waves of energy. The mountain below burst to pieces by the shockwaves. It caused plenty of demonic beasts to run away for their lives. Some were lying on the ground still, motionless, but shivering.

The surrounding trees and withered vines were destroyed. Fire started to spread, turning the scene into a catastrophe.

After one strike, the Silver Lion King looked flustered. Countless of bloody wounds appeared on his supposedly indestructible physique. Despite his powerful strength, he was no match for two Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bulls.

Dammit! These two bastards can cooperate so well. I won't stand a chance against them. I have to flee now. Or else, I'll surely die.

Seeing the development of the battle, the Lion King decided to run immediately. Although it would be a disgrace, at least that would save his life.

However, Ah Da and Ah Er had already expected this. How could

they let the Silver Lion King escape? Just as the Lion King made his move, Ah Da and Ah Er acted. The simultaneous attacks of the twin brothers were deadly and fluent.

Roar...

In the end, under the crazy bombardment of Ah Da and Ah Er, the mighty Silver Lion King fell to the ground and was left with only several gasps of air after less than a few minutes. He was now powerless and defenseless.

“For God’s sake! These two bastards make a perfect team. They might even be able to fight against an ordinary early Divine Immortal expert.”

When Big Yellow saw what happened outside the pagoda, he couldn’t help but admit Ah Da and Ah Er’s perfect coordination despite his conceited attitude.

“As they are born with the same heart it’s only natural for them to be so synchronised. Their overall strength isn’t just equivalent to two late Heaven Immortal demon kings. If they had worked together before we arrived, this desolate mountain range would’ve become theirs and we would have no chance of subduing any of them,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

What he said was true. If he met the both of them, even with the help of Big Yellow, they would have no chance of winning against these two barbaric bulls.

Looking at the place where the Lion King had fallen, Jiang Chen deeply felt that he had underestimated Ah Da and Ah Er’s strength. Through the course of the battle, all he had to do was to hide inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Moreover, he didn’t have to worry that the Silver Lion King would run away because Ah Da and Ah Er would handle everything well.

“This time, we have really picked up a pair of rare treasures. If these two bulls practice together, they will boost each other’s

progress. When they reach the Divine Immortal realm or an even higher realm, the help they can provide is going to be greater.”

Han Yan’s eyes glittered. If he wasn’t seeing this with his own eyes, he would never believe it.

Jiang Chen walked out of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, approached the Silver Lion King and ended the lion’s life with his sword. Then, he used the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to absorb every Qi and blood essence of this Silver Lion King.

Seeing Jiang Chen’s cruel and savage side made Ah Da and Ah Er exude a trickle of cold sweat. They realised that their master had too many means, as such, they were grateful to their master for not killing them. Otherwise, they would end up exactly the same as the Silver Lion King.

“Ah Da, Ah Er, both of you have done a great job. Now, let’s go and kill the other demon kings since we have all pumped up,” said Jiang Chen.

“Yes, master.”

Both of them nodded and headed towards another location.

In the following day, the entire desolate mountain range plunged into a tremendous shock. The battles among the demon kings were non-stop, causing chaos across the area. Some cultivators who intended to have some tough-training here, including those disciples that came from Skycloud Pavilion, retreated immediately when they sensed the ruckus in the mountain.

“What in the world is going on? I have no idea why those demon kings are fighting against each other. Luckily we are not in the deep region of the mountain range yet, otherwise the consequences will be unimaginable.”

“Agreed. We are truly lucky. The demon kings here are too ferocious. If we are involved in such a conflict, we will either die or be severely injured.”

“Go, go, go! We have to leave this place quickly. Tough-training can be carried out at any time. We will wait until the battle among the demon kings is over before we return to this place.”

.....

Many cultivators were scared to death and hurried out of this land. No one wanted to die, especially when they knew that it would be a meaningless death caused by some frenzied demonic beasts.

Within the desolate mountain range, the intense battle finally ended on the morning of the second day. In a valley that was crumbled by the shockwave, Jiang Chen's Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was absorbing the last demon king's Qi and blood essence. Then, a huge change took place in the pagoda, the Fourteenth Level had finally been condensed out.

Not just that, while the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was absorbing the energy, Jiang Chen had gotten some benefits as well. Thirty thousand dragon marks had been formed inside his body, reaching the total of 385,000 dragon marks. He would now only needed 15,000 dragon marks to advance to the late Earth Immortal realm.

There were five demon souls of demon kings in his possession. As long as he refined one of these demon soul, he would surely break through to the late Earth Immortal realm, but he wasn't in a rush for now. He had been advancing rapidly during these past few days so he needed some time to fortify his foundation first before attempting any advancement, otherwise it would backfire.

“How is it, little Chen?” asked Han Yan.

“The Fourteenth Level of the pagoda has already been fully condensed. This will increase our chances of getting the Regenerative Lotus.”

The harvest in this trip was too great. Aside from their advancements, the condensation of the two levels of the Ancestral

Dragon Pagoda was enough to excite them as it was currently the most important treasure that they needed to get the Regenerative Lotus. Their cultivation base on the other hand was useless in this situation. Even if Jiang Chen could advance two more levels, it would not make him any better in front of those powerful Great Luo Golden Immortals.

Chapter 1134 – The One-Line Mountain

“How long does it take for us to reach One-Line Mountain from here?” asked Jiang Chen.

“If we travel by flying, we’ll reach there in half a day’s time. If we travel by foot, it will take two days’ time,” replied Big Yellow.

“We can’t travel in the air. The matter of the Regenerative Lotus is a big one. We have to be extra careful about it. We have to keep a low-profile and approach stealthily. The Regenerative Lotus has matured two days ago while the grand ceremony will be held three days later. We will still reach our destination a day before the actual ceremony if we travel by foot. I suppose that those Eight Immortals won’t be there until the actual day of the ceremony. Logically, those Golden Immortal guards would lower their vigilance before the crowd start to converge on the summit, which means our chances of success will be higher,” said Jiang Chen.

He had always been meticulous. With the difficulty of stealing the lotus, he couldn’t afford to make one mistake. Although he couldn’t guarantee that his plan was foolproof, he would make sure he did whatever he could.

Commencing their plan the night before the grand ceremony was undoubtedly the best time as none of the One-Line Eight Immortals would show up at that time. Meanwhile, those Golden Immortal experts would lower their vigilance after days of constantly being on guard. This was included in Jiang Chen’s calculation.

“Little Chen, are you really sure?” asked Han Yan, still feeling incomparably worried. He had disapproved this idea from the very beginning. It was too dangerous, a thousand times more dangerous than snatching a food out of the tiger’s mouth. In the event of any mishaps, none of them could surely bear it.

“I have to do it whether I’m sure or not. I won’t change the

things which I have already decided. You and Big Yellow can return to Cloudmist City to meet Fu Hui. I alone will go to One-Line Mountain,” said Jiang Chen.

“I’m not going back. I want to see what One-Line Mountain is all about.”

Big Yellow declined Jiang Chen’s good intention on the spot.

“Good brothers will bear hardships together. Moreover, you are stealing this Regenerative Lotus partly because of me. I will follow you and hide in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.” Han Yan spoke.

He and Big Yellow naturally understood Jiang Chen’s intention. After all, this task was too risky. Jiang Chen asked them to return to Cloudmist City for the sake of their safety.

Ah Da and Ah Er were standing at one side, silent. Their task would be to listen to Jiang Chen’s command. They would never speak without their master’s permission.

After eliminating all the demon kings, Jiang Chen let Ah Da, Ah Er, Big Yellow and Han Yan hid inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The environment inside the pagoda was not bad. In fact, it was conducive for them to cultivate. Only Jiang Chen was outside the pagoda by himself. He left the Mountain Range and headed towards One-Line Mountain.

.....

One-Line Mountain was the most famous part in One-Line-Sky. It was the tallest mountain in One-Line-Sky, at least three times or more taller than the other mountains. One couldn’t see its top, like it was directly connected to the sky.

The Regenerative Lotus grew on top of the mountain. After spending two days travelling, they finally reached the mountain. By deliberately slowing down his speed, Jiang Chen arrived in the mountain at dusk.

Tomorrow would be the grand ceremony. Presently, people had

already started to gather in a hundred mile radius outside the mountain. One could even see black moving things if one observed the crowd from the top.

“The grand ceremony is truly grand. So many of them have gathered here before the ceremony even began.” Jiang Chen said with a sigh.

“That’s of course. It’s only held once every two years, it’s a big event in One-Line-Sky. Who doesn’t want to see the true appearances of the Eight Immortals? To most of the Human Immortals, seeing these overlords’ faces is the thing they longed for. As such, it’s common that the crowd is extraordinary,” said Han Yan.

“Little Chen, when will we execute our plan?” Big Yellow asked.

“I will scout the peak of the mountain to check the situation first,” said Jiang Chen.

He then drilled into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The pagoda had now integrated with Jiang Chen’s body. Though it was perfectly suited for concealment, there was still a flaw within this pagoda – the limitation of movement.

In other words, if Jiang Chen was inside the pagoda, he could only use the pagoda to conceal himself or move a short distance. Otherwise, he would’ve use it to conceal himself while flying.

But Jiang Chen was already pretty satisfied with these functions. After all, the 14th Level was just too weak compared to the peak – 99th Level. There were still many functions that the pagoda had yet to reveal.

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda turned into a tiny particle in the void, like the dust particle in the universe, and moved slowly towards the summit of the mountain. Even powerful Golden Immortal experts couldn’t notice this movement, except those Immortal King experts who had mastered the spatial law.

Despite that, Jiang Chen was being very careful because those guards were after all the mighty late Golden Immortal experts, a bunch of peak figures who were only a step away from the half-step Immortal King realm among the four major powers. So naturally, Jiang Chen wouldn't dare be careless in the slightest.

Han Yan and Big Yellow didn't even dare to exhale, afraid that one small breath will notify the guards.

The pagoda had already been moving for an hour, but it hadn't reached the top yet.

"This mountain is too tall and the pagoda is moving too slowly." Han Yan couldn't help blurting it out.

"This is the highest mountain in One-Line-Sky. We are only half-way through it," said Big Yellow.

After another hour, the light in the sky was gone and was taken over by the darkness. Tonight's sky didn't seem like a pleasant one. It was unusually dark due to the dark clouds that had obscured the moonlight and the stars. This was what they called night was dark and the wind was strong. Usually, something bad would happen during this period.

But the mountaintop didn't seem as dark. There was snow everywhere. The mountains still looked the same during day time. It was like a fantasy and a painting. In other words, this mountain would stay as beautiful no matter if it was day or night.

In such a large place, it wasn't easy to find the Regenerative Lotus under the condition of not being able to use divine sense, but Jiang Chen was sure that the place where the Regenerative Lotus was at would have the Qi of the experts.

The four major powers have sent those Golden Immortal experts to guard here not because of the mountain nor to create dominance before the grand ceremony, but solely because of the Regenerative Lotus. Now that it had matured, the eight of them surely wouldn't

put their eyes away from it.

Chapter 1135 – The Chance Had Finally Come

Now that they have arrived at the top of the mountain, Jiang Chen had to stay cautious. He couldn't afford the slightest bit of carelessness. With his control, he slowly moved towards where the Qi of those experts came from. The current Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had already become a tiny unnoticeable sand that had completely integrated itself with the void.

At the centre of the summit was a pillar formed entirely from glacier. It was crystal clear and transparent, like a fascinating pure crystal. This place was the coldest of all the mountains, and the Regenerative Lotus grew at the top of this pillar.

It was a full-bloom snowy lotus the size of a palm. Its body also seemed transparent. It radiated brilliant illumination and Qi that could intoxicate people. It was an unparalleled herb and a true treasure. No one could stay indifferent in front of this herb.

Standing around the Regenerative Lotus were eight guards in eight different directions. If one looked closely, the eight of them weren't standing on the ground. They were hovering in the air, at the exact same height of the Regenerative Lotus. This was one of the tightest security ever.

The eight of them were staring at the Regenerative Lotus with greedy pair of eyes, but none of them was bold enough to steal it.

"The eight of us sure are lucky. Although none of us is able to consume it, the Qi exuded from it is highly beneficial to our cultivation." An elder spoke.

"That's right. The Regenerative Lotus is an unparalleled and invaluable herb. I can feel a significant improvement in my Qi and blood after staying close to this precious herb these past few days." Another man spoke.

When Jiang Chen saw how tight the security was, he couldn't

help but knit his brows.

“Dammit! Why are these old men so serious about their duty?”

It gave Jiang Chen the urge to spurt out blood. The guarding style of these eight experts was like trying to stick their bodies to the lotus. Even if Jiang Chen could get close to the Regenerative Lotus, he wouldn't have a chance of stealing it. The moment he tried to do that, he would immediately aroused their attention as all eight of them had enshrouded the lotus with their Qi.

“If these bastards continue to be on guard like this, we won't have a chance to steal it. In the end, we will have to give it up.”

Big Yellow shook his head. Judging from the current scene, there was no way that they could succeed.

“Little Chen, I think we shouldn't take such a risk. It's still not too late to pull back now.”

Said Han Yan, feeling somewhat apologetic in his heart because Jiang Chen had decided to do this mostly because of his sake. He would regret it even in his death if any accident happened to Jiang Chen.

“There is no bow that can shoot backwards. We'll wait and see. If this situation continues until daybreak, we will retreat.”

Resoluteness was seen in his eyes. He wasn't a man who would give up easily. He believed that there would always be a flaw for him to take advantage of, but this unfavourable condition didn't change until the light appeared, he wasn't foolish enough to risk his life for this.

In this way, Jiang Chen and the others had waited for another three hours. Although it was already in the middle of the night, these experts still hadn't shown any kind of loophole for them. Big Yellow and Han Yan were getting impatient. They restlessly paced inside the pagoda.

Jiang Chen however seemed composed. It was a kind of

composure that would never be affected even if the sky falls down, it was a demeanour that a true superior being should have.

“The most precious part of the Regenerative Lotus is its heart. I heard that it can bring back the dead with its heaven defying effect. Aside from the lotus heart, there are still many other precious parts. Given the good job that I have done, the patriarch of Yun Family will surely reward me with some parts of the lotus. At that time, the chances of me breaking through to the half-step Immortal King will be greatly increased.”

An elder of Yun Family spoke. His eyes were staring at the Regenerative Lotus. Judging from his tone, it sounded as if the Regenerative Lotus had already become Yun Family’s.

“You sure are shameless. How dare you make such indiscreet declaration? In my opinion, the Regenerative Lotus will definitely be acquired by Huangfu Family. After that, I’m going to get a portion of that benefit.”

An elder from Huangfu Family retorted. Huangfu Family and Yun Family had been competing and fighting against each other. Though the experts of both families had been given the same duty, it didn’t help reduce the arguments between the two. If it wasn’t for the Regenerative Lotus, they would’ve surely engaged in constant battles.

“Stop arguing, you two. Our sect master has prepared well for this coming grand ceremony and he’s going to get the grand prize. But if my sect master has a good mood at that time, he may give you all a piece of leaf of the lotus.”

An elder from the Profound Sun Sect said while stroking his beard.

“Haha! Your overconfidence sure is making me laugh. Both of your patriarch and sect master have grown old. Only my pavilion master is truly the strong one. He has already reached the half-step Immortal King realm at such a young age, surpassing his previous

master's record, which will surely decide victory and defeat at this ceremony." The elder from Skycloud Pavilion laughed loudly.

"Humph! That Tian Muyun isn't as impressive as you said."

Someone snorted coldly. It was quite worrying thinking about this Tian Muyun. As the sect master and patriarchs of the other three major powers belonged to the old generation like Ouyang He, it made Tian Muyun the youngest one. This made the situation a whole lot worse than what they thought because this meant that Tian Muyun was a genius. Anyone should know that a true genius could never be judged by common sense. Besides, Tian Muyun had already surpassed his previous master, Ouyang He and had taken over the position of pavilion master after the passing of his master. Additionally, no one knew how much he had improved within these past two years.

More importantly, the overlords of the three major powers knew each other very well. After years of fights and clashes, they had gained a clear understanding of each other's means and trump cards, but neither of them knew Tian Muyun's skills well. They were clueless about how powerful his means and ace cards were. This was without a doubt, a disadvantage for them.

"Gentlemen, we have already guarded the Regenerative Lotus for quite some time and it's meaningless to continue guarding it so tightly now. Who in One-Line-Sky will have the guts to steal the Regenerative Lotus? Plus, we have already obtained some benefits by absorbing its Qi during these past few days. Since today is the final day of our guarding, we should retreat so that our patriarchs won't notice the decrease in its Qi and blame us for it."

At this time, the elder of Huangfu Family suggested.

Listening to this, Jiang Chen, who was about to give up on this theft, perked up.

Chapter 1136 – The Moment of Crisis

Frankly, even Jiang Chen was about to give up at this moment as he saw no chance of stealing the lotus and daybreak was approaching. The eight Golden Immortal experts were still staying too close to the lotus. There was no way Jiang Chen could execute his plan.

However, in this critical juncture, an elder from Huangfu Family suggested such an unexpected idea. This had immediately improved Jiang Chen's impression of him, he had just provided Jiang Chen a great help.

“Brother Huangfu's right. The way we are guarding it right now makes us look greedy in front of our patriarchs. Besides, we have already obtained quite a lot of benefits from the Regenerative Lotus. So this few hours of time won't make much difference. Furthermore, our duty is to guard the Regenerative Lotus. Now that it has almost reached the end of the period, our task should be considered done by now.”

An elder from Skycloud Pavilion nodded approvingly. After all, they were the peak figures in One-Line-Sky. All of them attached very high importance to their face. They would never do things that would jeopardize their reputation. If news of these eight experts absorbing the Qi exuded by the Regenerative Lotus was spread out, it would surely put their face to shame.

“With our presence, who will dare to rob the Regenerative Lotus? I'm afraid no one in One-Line-Sky is stupid enough to provoke the four major powers.”

An elder from Yun Family spoke arrogantly.

As a matter of fact, they didn't need as many as eight peak Golden Immortal experts to guard this lotus at the same time. But the fact that all four major powers sent these dignified elders here to guard indicated that they weren't afraid of other people stealing

the lotus, but to act as a deterrence against themselves, particularly amongst themselves.

Subsequently, the eight of them removed their Qi from the Regenerative Lotus together, landed from the sky. They had finally lowered their guard at the last moment. In fact, they weren't as vigilant as they seemed because the people they wanted to guard against were just in front of each of them.

“Little Chen, our chance has come.”

Big Yellow's eyes glittered. They had waited for almost one night for this rare chance to pop out. If these old bastards still refused to lower their vigilance, they would certainly despair ever coming here.

“This was what I've been waiting for. Get ready.”

A cold smirk was seen at the corner of his mouth. Then, he willed the pagoda to move forward in such a slow speed that it didn't even cause movement in the airflow. He needed to be extra careful in a such crucial time like this. One single carelessness might lead to their extinction.

Sure enough, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda didn't let Jiang Chen down. The eight experts continued with their chit-chat as Jiang Chen got close to the Regenerative Lotus.

Soon, the dust-like pagoda appeared above the Regenerative Lotus. It sure was a nice plant seeing it from such a close distance, especially its heart at the centre. It had the size of a fingernail, a transparent body and a plain-looking liquid moving within. One glance at it and you could already tell that it was an invaluable treasure of the Heavens and Earth.

At such a close distance, Big Yellow and Han Yan became incomparably excited. Both of them knew that this was the most critical moment. Jiang Chen just needed to stretch his hand out to get it, but what concerned them the most was how would they run

away after that.

Currently, the eight experts had already landed below. Each of them seemed bored, totally putting away their attention on the Regenerative Lotus.

Jiang Chen was watching every one of them with caution. Then finally, a ray of cold light was shot out from his eyes.

“We can’t wait any longer. Let’s do it now.”

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth. He concealed all of his Qi, stuck out his large palm towards the Regenerative Lotus speedily.

“Who is it?”

The moment Jiang Chen revealed his hand, the eight experts below became alert. An elder from Huangfu Family clamoured as the eight of them turned around at the same time, looking at where the Regenerative Lotus was and saw a palm had suddenly emerged out of nowhere, snatching the Regenerative Lotus with lightning speed. The lotus vanished in the next instant.

“Not good, someone is stealing the Regenerative Lotus.”

“Dammit! Who actually has the guts to steal the Regenerative Lotus?”

“Who are you, thief?! Leave the Regenerative Lotus here!”

.....

The eight of them were enraged. They had guarded the unparalleled herb for so long. They couldn’t accept that someone would actually stole it right under their very noses. They wouldn’t be able to come up with a reasonable explanation for their patriarchs if the lotus was really stolen by some unknown individual.

Hong Long.....

In almost an instant, the eight of them simultaneously unleashed all of their peak Golden Immortal Qi. Waves of Qi from eight

different experts rolled out and combined with one another, enshrouding the entire One-Line Mountain.

“Quickly, look. What’s going on there? Why is there such powerful Qi?”

“My God! The whole One-Line Mountain is encompassed by that Qi. What happened? It seems like this Qi is coming from a Golden Immortal realm expert at least and there is more than one. Could it be that some experts exist on top of the mountain?”

“The pressure is too strong. We have to distance ourselves from it more, or else we will suffer unnecessary casualties or injuries. The experts on top are too powerful.”

.....

The bystanders who had come to watch the grand ceremony were shocked by the scene. All of them thought that the top of the One-Line Mountain was empty. They didn’t expect that so many Golden Immortal experts were hiding there. Now that every one of these experts had unleashed their powerful killing intent, something big was about to happen.

Above the One-Line Mountain, the eight Golden Immortal experts were standing at different positions, sealing the entire void of the area, giving no chance for the thief to escape, but what annoyed them was that they still couldn’t find where the thief was.

The situation made the eight of them slightly nervous because only experts who had reached the Immortal King realm or above could penetrate the void casually.

Presently, Jiang Chen and the others had fallen in a real crisis. Although they were able to conceal themselves in the pagoda, there was no way that the pagoda could leave this place in a matter of seconds. Plus, the void was already fully sealed by these eight experts which made it even harder for them to escape.

“Dammit! Peak Golden Immortal experts sure is difficult to deal

with. Their response is too fast.”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but swear. He had concealed his Qi while stealing the Regenerative Lotus. It should have been a stealthy move, but that move couldn't escape the senses of these experts. This wasn't because of his incompetence. It was just because peak Golden Immortal experts were too powerful. This scenario made them worthy to be called existences who had comprehended the profound meaning of Great Luo.

Hong Long.....

At this time, the eight of them launched an attack cooperatively at the place where Jiang Chen appeared just now. The energy from these attacks were destructive. If the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was struck directly by these attacks, it would be crushed instantly despite of its extraordinary defensive strength.

Chapter 1137 – The Intelligent Move

Hong Long.....

The destructive force was akin to a tidal wave and a storm, causing the void to rattle. Fortunately, Jiang Chen had moved the pagoda further away from its previous position which was now the convergence point of the energy storm.

Ka Cha!

Even so, some of the residual waves from the impact collided against the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The Fourteenth Level of the pagoda wasn't able to withstand the attack of peak Golden Immortal expert, even if it was only some residual waves. Numerous cracks appeared on the body of the pagoda and it became shaky and unsteady, seeming to crumble at any second.

“Not good.”

Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was the only thing that they could depend on right now. If this pagoda crumbled, they wouldn't be able to conceal themselves in front of the Golden Immortal experts. What awaited them after that would be their end.

“What now, little Chen?”

Han Yan seemed a little panicked. This was the worst-case scenario that they had imagined. If the pagoda hadn't advanced to the Fourteenth Level, that residual wave just now was enough to crush it instantly. Currently, the pagoda was already slightly broken which also caused Jiang Chen to be injured. But luckily, his injuries weren't severe. He could recover from it speedily.

“Sure enough, there's something here.”

The eight of them focused all of their divine sense at the position where the pagoda was at. Although the cracking sound of the pagoda was covered by the noise of the impact which made it almost impossible to hear, it couldn't escape the senses of the eight

experts.

Jiang Chen's face was cold and didn't seem to have the slightest bit of nervousness. The closer he was at the critical juncture, the calmer he was. If he panicked like the others at this time, what would follow next be a real tragedy.

"Yes."

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered. Then, he ripped open a hole on the pagoda, channelled all his energy into the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd in an instant. The large halberd was then shoved outside. Seeing from the outside, a golden and majestic halberd suddenly emerged in the void.

Hong Long.....

The large halberd slashed at one of the experts. Of course, it wasn't a real attack, it was merely an act.

"What's that thing? It looks very familiar."

"That's the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd of Master Ouyang. This halberd has disappeared after his passing, so why is it still here today?"

"Could that man be Ouyang He himself?"

.....

The eight experts who were prepared to attack looked shocked. The Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd had the same reputation as Ouyang He himself. As mighty Golden Immortal experts, they might not know all the treasures, but they would surely not forget this renowned Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd.

"Humph! The few of you listen up! I'm taking away the Regenerative Lotus. Considering the relationship we had in the past, I will let you all live, but if any of you insist, I won't show any mercy."

An incomparably cold voice rang from the void.

“It’s the voice of Master Ouyang! Master Ouyang is still alive!”

“Master Ouyang has already broken through to the Immortal King realm. I plead master to reveal yourself.”

Both the Great Elders of Skycloud Pavilion spoke emotionally at the void. The only explanation that Ouyang He was able to move so stealthily in the void was that he had already reached the Immortal King realm.

Swoosh!

The large halberd vanished. Inside the pagoda, Jiang Chen flopped down on the ground. This was his second time using the halberd. All the energy inside his body was emptied instantaneously.

The whole scene just now was just an act of Jiang Chen. He exploited the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd to portray Ouyang He. He expected these experts to know who Ouyang He was and the halberd would surely astound them. Then, he threatened the eight of them by mimicking the sound of Ouyang He.

“Brilliant.”

Big Yellow and Han Yan couldn’t help but raise a thumbs up to Jiang Chen for being able to make such a clever response under such a dangerous situation just like now. It had succeeded in deterring the enemy and had created a chance for them to live. They had to admit that Jiang Chen’s intelligence was extraordinary as well.

“Let’s go quickly!”

Jiang Chen wouldn’t dare show any delay, moving the pagoda as fast as he could. The pagoda had suffered a quite serious damage. It would lose its concealing ability soon. Besides, his act just now was full of flaws. Firstly, his voice sounded only 70 to 80 percent like Ouyang He, not exactly like the original man. The others might not be able to notice it, but the two elders of Skycloud Pavilion would

surely be able to figure out the flaw.

Secondly, the halberd that was wielded by Jiang Chen lacked the original aura, it didn't seem like the aura of a true Immortal King expert.

Jiang Chen continued to move the damaged Ancestral Dragon Pagoda beyond One-Line Mountain and vanished speedily.

After a while, Jiang Chen halted the pagoda in a mountain range further away from One-Line Mountain. He had absorbed a huge amount of Immortal Meta Stones and had mostly recovered. Few of them exited the pagoda and heaved a sigh of relief. Thinking back to the scene just now really gave them chills.

“Little Chen, you are amazing! Those eight Golden Immortals were fooled by you.”

Han Yan raised another thumbs up at Jiang Chen and praised.

“Wakaka! The Regenerative Lotus is in our possession now. This unparalleled divine herb is as valuable as a mountain of treasures.”

Big Yellow laughed excitedly. His eyes were sparkling with brilliance when he looked at Jiang Chen. In his opinion, there was nothing that Jiang Chen couldn't do in this world.

“Although we have gotten the Regenerative Lotus, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda has suffered a serious damage. I'm afraid that it won't be able to recover in a short period of time, which means I won't be able to divide this item until it is fully repaired. But this isn't much of a concern for now as we have already gotten what we need. The foundation of the pagoda wasn't destroyed, so it's only a matter of time before it is fully restored.” Said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“Little Chen, where are we going now?” Asked Han Yan.

“We are going to watch the exciting grand ceremony of course.”

Jiang Chen chuckled. He was interested to see what would

happen next.

“Jie... Jie..., I wonder if the ceremony will be held smoothly. The Eight Immortals surely will be angered to death once they find out that the Regenerative Lotus was stolen.”

Big Yellow smiled insidiously. Imagining the angry faces of the Eight Immortals really pleased him.

“Ah Da, Ah Er, I want the both of you to turn into your human form. We will join the crowd and watch the ceremony.”

Jiang Chen said to Ah Da and Ah Er. Their bull form was too eye-catching. As they were already late Heaven Immortal beasts, it was effortless for them to turn into human.

With so many people in the crowd now, their existence wouldn't arouse any suspicions at all. After all, there were too many Heaven Immortal experts. So, you could imagine how insignificant an Earth Immortal was in that place.

“Yes, master.”

Both barbaric bulls immediately transformed into two burly man in black clothes as Jiang Chen ordered.

Chapter 1138 – The Arrival of the Eight Immortals

A while after Jiang Chen's departure, the eight experts were still standing rooted on the ground. Neither of them tried to stop Jiang Chen as they thought that the target was Ouyang He, an opponent whom they couldn't afford to offend unless they wanted to die. Even before Ouyang He reached the Immortal King realm, none of them here was a match for him.

Although they didn't see the true self of Ouyang He, they were certain about the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. Every one of them had seen that weapon before. They were sure that the weapon was one of its kind. Plus, the voice of Ouyang He was deep and rough.

The emergence of Ouyang He had dealt a great blow to the eight experts, particularly to the experts of Profound Sun Sect, Huangfu and Yun Family. In their point of view, the fact that Ouyang He was hiding in secret posed a great threat to their sect's or family's existence. The presence of an Immortal King expert plus Tian Muyun and Daoist Yufeng in Skycloud Pavilion made the other three major powers vulnerable. This sense of crisis immediately filled most of their hearts.

"It was all bullsh*t that Ouyang He had fallen two years ago while breaking through to the Immortal King realm. It seems like Skycloud Pavilion does have a great plan against us."

An elder of Profound Sun Sect looked over at the elders of Skycloud Pavilion and said coldly.

"That's right. Ouyang He is still alive and has succeeded in his breakthrough. It seems like our three major powers are in danger now."

The elder of Huangfu Family spoke knitting his eyebrows.

“If Master Ouyang is determined to strike just now, all of you would have died by now instead of standing here intact.”

An elder of Skycloud Pavilion replied coldly. The four major powers had never gotten along well with each other. They naturally would find their counterparts to blame.

“Alright. Let’s not continue with the argument. Now that the Regenerative Lotus has been snatched away by Ouyang He, we should send a message to our patriarchs, telling them about what had happened just now because none of us is able to bear such a heavy responsibility.”

Another elder of Profound Sun Sect spoke.

The others nodded, agreeing to the reasons of his words. Given their duty, it was hard for them to absolve themselves from the blame. However, it was necessary for them to report the incident and the sudden appearance of Ouyang He to their masters. This was going to be a huge matter in One-Line-Sky.

Several of them took out their signalling spirit talisman to inform their patriarchs.

On the other side, Jiang Chen and his friends had already mixed themselves in the crowd whom the attention had been fixed on the summit above. After the big movement that was created on top of the mountain, no one noticed Jiang Chen and his friends’ sudden emergence as they were all busy guessing what had happened up there.

“What just happened? Why are there so many experts on top of the mountain?”

“I have no idea. All the Qi are gone now. Should we fly up there and check it out?”

“Alright. We will go up there to see what the status is. We will just observe from a distance instead of getting close to the summit. I don’t think the four major powers will punish us for that as One-

Line Mountain is the symbol of One-Line-Sky. It isn't something that only belongs to them. Moreover, in the previous grand ceremony, all the bystanders watched the competition on top of the other mountains.”

.....

Out of curiosity, the onlookers started to fly upwards to check the situation out. The first was followed by the second, and then by a group. There were plenty of Heaven Immortal and even Divine Immortal experts here.

Some Earth Immortal experts who couldn't fly were brought along by their comrades. For a while, numerous experts were flying skywards but none of them dared to lay a step on One-Line Mountain. They could only watch the scene from a far distance. Every one of them knew that those people on top of the summit were Golden Immortal experts. Neither of them was willing to annoy any of those powerful experts. If those experts were infuriated because of their presence, they would be killed and die in vain.

“Ah Da, bring me up there. Ah Er, take Ah Yan and Big Yellow with you.”

Jiang Chen ordered. He was now in a state of relief as he had gotten out of the crisis. Even if the Eight Immortals come, they wouldn't be able to connect it to him, because there wasn't a trace or anything left in the scene.

No one in One-Line-Sky would be able to connect Jiang Chen to this theft because no one would think that an Earth Immortal would be involved in such a crime.

What Jiang Chen and his friends wanted to do now was to watch a good show.

Ah D and Ah Er flew them up into the sky and came to the top of a mountain. Although they were quite far away from One-Line

Mountain, they were able to see the eight peak Golden Immortal experts clearly.

“Look, aren’t they the elders of the four major powers? Plus, they are all grand elders, peak Golden Immortal experts. Are they gathering here in advance for all of us?”

“That’s right. The grand ceremony that will be held tomorrow is unrelated to them. So why are they here? Those Qi must’ve come from them. I’m clueless about what has happened just now.”

“Have you all noticed that their facial expression didn’t seem very good, as if they are nursing some kind of grievance? But could there really be someone who could make them feel aggrieved?”

.....

A lot of experts saw the elders of the four major powers and guessed the reason why they were here. The existence of the Regenerative Lotus was still a secret and wasn’t disclosed to many of the disciples of the four major powers, so it was Jiang Chen’s luck that Fu Hui knew about it.

“Jie... Jie..., Little Chen, all these bastards have a glum face. I suppose their heads are still spinning even until now. Haha!”

Big Yellow whispered in Jiang Chen’s mind. The difference between his current mood and the mood before stealing the Regenerative Lotus was day and night.

“We just have to wait and watch the exciting show. They must have already informed their patriarchs. If I’m not mistaken, the Eight Immortals will be here in no time.”

Jiang Chen showed a face of smile and seemed relaxed. About the Eight Immortals, he was curious to find out who they were, especially Tian Muyun – a great enemy in his future.

Swoosh... Swoosh... Swoosh...

Sure enough, as soon as Jiang Chen’s voice faded, streams of

light zipped past the night sky from different directions. The void where the stream of light passed produced a rattling sound. Waves of powerful aura was radiated from those light. Many onlookers felt their soul shiver under the pressure of the aura.

Very quickly, eight streams of light landed on top of One-Line Mountain and turned into eight men. No doubt, they were the One-Line Eight Immortals who came from the four major powers. All of them had a cultivation of a half-step Immortal King realm, the peak figures in One-Line-Sky and were revered by countless of people.

“My God, the Eight Immortals are here too. What’s going on? Isn’t the grand ceremony starting tomorrow? Why are they here so early?”

“That’s right. It seems as if they have scheduled to meet here. Something must have happened on One-Line Mountain just now.”

.....

Chapter 1139 – It Was Ouyang He

Many of them were astounded. As cultivators of One-Line-Sky, they were very familiar with the grand ceremony that was held once every two years. In all past events, the Eight Immortals wouldn't appear until tomorrow morning, the day of the ceremony and they wouldn't appear at the same time. But now, despite how late the night was, the eight of them appeared together. Connecting this to the huge movement on top of the mountain just now, many of them began to doubt that something big had happened. Otherwise, the four major powers wouldn't have sent eight powerful Golden Immortal experts here in advance before the event.

Despite their shock, none of them dared to speak aloud. All of them were observing the situation ahead silently as those experts in front were too powerful. They could never afford to offend any one of them. Up until now, there was no one who had the guts to speak aloud in front of the Eight Immortals.

“They are the One-Line Eight Immortals? This is my first time seeing them.”

Someone spoke softly. His curious eyes were studying the Eight Immortals constantly. He was merely an Earth Immortal expert. He was brought by some seniors from his family to attend this ceremony. So naturally, he couldn't bear the excitement from seeing the legendary figures for the first time.

“Your cultivation base is too weak. It's normal that you haven't seen the Eight Immortals before. Let me share with you a little about them. Those two in white and long robes were from the Profound Sun Sect. The one who looks fortyish, with a greasy face and a pair of tiger-like eyes is the current sect master of Profound Sun Sect, Xuan Yangyi. The other one with the long beard is Dugu Sheng. Look at the two who looked alike, in golden robes and with sharp face. One is Yun Zhonghe and the other is Yun Zhonglong.

They are brothers, the Patriarch and Great Elder of Yun Family. The other man with a crown on his head and an imposing face is the patriarch of Huangfu Family, Huangfu Yaotian. Next to him is an elder named Huangfu Qun. The most important among the last two is the blue-robed man. He seems only thirtyish, has a head of stringy dark hair, a pair of brilliant eyes and a majestic face. One look and you could tell that he's the most talented one amongst them. He is a legendary figure in One-Line-Sky. Currently the pavilion master of Skycloud Pavilion, Tian Muyun. Kid, you have to set Master Tian as your goal and idol, understand? The elder beside him is Daoist Yufeng. These eight experts have the cultivation base of half-step Immortal King realm. They are the top figures in One-Line-Sky, also known as the One-Line Eight Immortals."

A middle-aged cultivator explained. His tone was full of respect especially when he mentioned Tian Muyun. Apparently, he had very good impression of this young talent.

Everything that the cultivator said was heard by Jiang Chen while his eyes fell upon the Eight Immortals. Whether it was in the aspect of demeanour or aura, they were definitely superior to the others. He could also feel some faint King's Qi from them, which made them worthy to be regarded as half-step Immortal King experts.

Lastly, when Jiang Chen shifted his attention to Tian Muyun, even he couldn't help but exclaim. Calling Tian Muyun a legend wasn't an exaggeration at all for reaching such a realm at this young age.

Having such great talent in Skycloud Pavilion showed that Ouyang He had a sharp eyes, but too bad, he only saw the potential, but not the heart of Tian Muyun at that time, which eventually caused him to suffer tragically and died in the hands of the person he trusted the most. Thinking back about it, nurturing Tian Muyun was no different than digging his own grave.

“What’s going on?”

Yun Zhonghe asked immediately after he emerged.

“Where’s the Regenerative Lotus? How has it gone missing?”

Tian Muyun saw the empty space on top of the ice pillar where the lotus should be at.

The Eight Immortals couldn’t help but be astounded by the sudden disappearance of the Regenerative Lotus.

“Patriarch, the Regenerative Lotus was stolen by someone.” An elder of Yun Family spoke.

Hong.....

As soon as the word came out, powerful fury rushed out of their bodies suddenly. It had to be a joke. How could someone dare to steal the Regenerative Lotus? This was outrageous. It was simply a direct provocation against the Eight Immortals.

When the onlookers heard what those experts said, especially those two words – Regenerative Lotus, they instantly understood why those eight Golden Immortal experts had arrived there in advance.

“Regenerative Lotus is an unparalleled herb. It seems like the four major powers have discovered it sooner than us. That’s why they sent eight Golden Immortal elders to guard it, but they didn’t expect that someone would come and steal it. That powerful shockwave just now must be the moment when someone stole the Regenerative Lotus.”

“That’s extreme boldness. How could there be someone who dares to steal the things of the Eight Immortals? How much boldness does that thief actually have?”

“It’s probably an even more powerful expert. Ordinary people won’t have such nerve. Even if they have such nerve, they won’t be able to get past the eight Golden Immortal experts. But does that

mean that there's an even scarier expert hidden in One-Line-Sky?"

.....

None of them were idiots. They were able to immediately figure out the key of the problem, but it was precisely because of this that shocked them even more. It was hard to imagine that there was even a greater expert who dared to steal the Regenerative Lotus in One-Line-Sky.

"Who was the one who stole the Regenerative Lotus from you all?"

Xuan Yangyi clamoured reproachfully. He absolutely didn't believe that there was someone besides the eight of them who could snatch the Regenerative Lotus from the eight peak Golden Immortal experts. Furthermore, these Golden Immortal experts had no injuries. In other words, there wasn't an intense battle during the theft.

"Sect master, it was Ouyang He." An elder of the Profound Sun Sect spoke.

"What?"

The Eight Immortals exclaimed together when they heard the name. Their eyes went wide and their faces were filled with disbelief, especially Tian Muyun. His pupils began to shrink, this was the last name that he ever wanted to hear.

"No way, my master has already fallen two years ago. There's no way it could be him."

Tian Muyun immediately denied it with certainty. When he attacked Ouyang He at that time, Ouyang He survived by burning his blood essence and escaped. There was no way for that injury to recover. Furthermore, it had already been two years and Ouyang He should have died.

"What really happened here? Did you all see him clearly? Ouyang He has already passed away. How could he stole the Regenerative

Lotus?”

Huangfu Yaotian asked with a frown. Although they didn't see it with their own eyes but Ouyang He had already fallen, Ouyang He had never appeared in these past two years and his death had been accepted.

“It was Ouyang He, he isn't dead yet and has reached the Immortal King realm. It was him who took away the Regenerative Lotus. And he used his famous Immortal Weapon – the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. We can never be mistaken.”

An elder of Huangfu Family spoke in a resolute voice.

Chapter 1140 – Being Tricked

The words said by the elder of Huangfu Family was astonishing, especially to Tian Muyun. Such news had stirred up waves inside his heart. Despite his confidence, his heart began to pound against his chest. After all, Ouyang He didn't really die.

Could it be that old bastard has found a way to save himself in the past two years? If that old bastard really has advanced to the Immortal King realm, he surely will come back for me.

Tian Muyun whispered in his mind. This incident was very doubtful, he still needed more answers.

“Could it be master hasn't died yet? It was Master Tian who saw Master Ouyang fall with his own eyes.”

Daoist Yufeng frowned. He and Ouyang He had good relationship. Over the past two years, he had been feeling sorry for the tragic death of his good friend. If Ouyang He was still alive, there would've been three half-step Immortal King realm in Skycloud Pavilion now, and thus, their overall strength would exceed all the other major powers'.

From a far distance, Jiang Chen watched every expression in the scene with delight, especially when he saw Tian Muyun's expression. He could imagine how fast Tian Muyun's heart was beating right now.

Tian Muyun, I assume that you are very scared right now.

Jiang Chen smiled coldly. It seemed like his ploy had created an unexpected harvest, but he didn't expect to depend on this act alone to change the whole situation of One-Line-Sky. Those experts weren't fools after all, particularly Tian Muyun. He might seem very shocked right now, but it was only a matter of time before he figured out the loophole.

The patriarchs and sect master of the other three major powers

also changed their facial expression drastically.

“Well, it turns out that old bastard Ouyang He is still alive. Tian Muyun, you and your master have done a good job in plotting against us. Now that Ouyang He has advanced to the Immortal King realm, I suppose it won’t be long before you and your master come and attack the three major powers and rule the entire One-Line-Sky.”

“Xuan Yangyi said coldly. A sense of crisis had already been stirred up not only from his heart, but also from Huangfu and Yun Family’s hearts. If Ouyang He didn’t die, he would become the only Immortal King expert in One-Line-Sky which was totally incomparable to a half-step Immortal King experts like them.

“Humph! You and your master do have a big plan. It seems like our three major powers must unite now, otherwise each of us will be devoured by you two!”

Yun Zhonghe harrumphed coldly. As they had concluded that Ouyang He wasn’t dead yet, their sense of danger was aroused.

“Everyone, I feel that something isn’t right in this incident.” Said Tian Muyun.

“What’s not right? Could that Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd be a fake one?” Huangfu Yaotian spoke.

“This can’t be right. The thief was actually Ouyang He? What’s going on?”

“Could it be that Ouyang He is still alive? and has already reached the Immortal King realm. In that case, the other three major powers will be in real danger.”

“It seems like One-Line-Sky isn’t as peaceful as it looks on the surface.”

Many bystanders were exclaiming with surprise because Ouyang He had already become a historic figure in One-Line-Sky.

“Two years ago, I was the one who witnessed that my master encountered an accident during his advancement to the Immortal King realm. At that time, his life essence was completely burnt, turning him into a crippled man. I have tried numerous means to heal his injuries but still failed. Later, he left One-Line-Sky to prepare for his death because there was no way for him to recover from that condition. If my master really is still alive and had advanced to the Immortal King realm, why hasn’t he appeared? Why would a dignified Immortal King expert steal the Regenerative Lotus stealthily? Plus, given my master’s temper, he would certainly punish these elders for being rude to him, but they are all still intact and as good as new.”

Said Tian Muyun. Everyone had to admit that Tian Muyun was truly a smart person. He was able to figure out the key point in an instant.

The atmosphere fell into silence. They weren’t idiots, they started to feel the same way as Tian Muyun.

“That’s true. There is indeed too many loopholes in today’s incident.”

An elder of Skycloud Pavilion felt reminded by Tian Muyun’s words. He began to recall the scene when Jiang Chen stole the Regenerative Lotus thoroughly.

“Speak, what are the loopholes?”

Said Tian Muyun. He was more concerned about the topic of Ouyang He compared to anyone here.

“Master, we have already guarded the Regenerative Lotus for such a long time and found no peculiar activity, but just as we decided to relax a bit, a large hand suddenly emerged from the void. I could still recall that hand clearly, it was the hand of a youth instead of Ouyang He’s.”

That elder suddenly thought of something important. As a peak

elder in Skycloud Pavilion, he had seen Ouyang He a lot of times. Even though he didn't understand Ouyang He as much as Tian Muyun, he was certain that the hand didn't belong to Ouyang He.

“That's right. That was the hand of a young man. It seemed as if he had hidden in the right spot, waiting for us to lower our guards. If it was Ouyang He, he wouldn't have to go through all those troubles. Additionally, the person didn't show himself in the end. If he was a powerful Immortal King expert or Ouyang He, he should've revealed himself.”

The other elder added the details that weren't said.

“Then? What about the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd?” Tian Muyun asked.

“We were deterred by the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, not daring to attack. Thinking about it now, it was really the Immortal Weapon of Master Ouyang, but there wasn't the slightest bit of power in it. Its Qi felt like the child of some family. If it was wielded by a true Immortal King expert, a single wave was enough to cause massive destruction.”

“Yeah, I remember it too. In the end, that impostor spoke. Although his voice sounded relatively like Master Ouyang, if you listen to it closely, the voice was different from Master Ouyang's. Dammit! We were tricked! That person wasn't Master Ouyang at all.”

.....

Several Golden Immortal experts felt enlightened all of a sudden when they thought of the key things and it gave them the sudden urge to spurt out blood. They were now certain that the thief wasn't a powerful Immortal King expert, much less Ouyang He. They were tricked and dumbfounded because of that Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd.

Chapter 1141 – The Prey

Jiang Chen was able to see everything on the scene clearly. He then shook his head helplessly, but this was also what he expected. After all, these experts were as cunning as fox. If it was so easy to fool them, it would be disappointing to call them the pinnacle figures in One-Line-Sky.

He didn't intend to take advantage of Ouyang He's influence. His only purpose at that time was to flee away. That was a drastic time and without drastic measure, they wouldn't be able to escape from the scene and would most probably end up in a tragic death.

Despite that, they found no explanation for the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. Tian Muyun's heart must be knotted with anxiety right now. He was afraid that he wouldn't find peace as long as he couldn't find that halberd.

Jiang Chen naturally didn't intend to let Tian Muyun live a peaceful life as that would be extremely unfair to Ouyang He. This was already considered as his first step in Ouyang He's revenge.

Above One-Line-Mountain, the eight Golden Immortals recalled every details recorded in their minds again and discovered that they had been deceived, which gave them the impulse to spurt out blood. The fact that the Regenerative Lotus was stolen away so easily under their very nose made them want to slap their own face hard even if the Eight Immortals didn't put the blame on them.

“Like I said, this incident consists too many flaws. Sure enough, it wasn't the act of my master. All of you have been deceived. It seems like all the eight peak Golden Immortal experts are good-for-nothing for letting some unknown person steal away the Regenerative Lotus before their very eyes.”

Said Tian Muyun coldly. He had longed to have the Regenerative Lotus, hoping that it would push his cultivation base to the true Immortal King realm, but now, everything had been in vain,

which put him in a very bad mood right now. What made the Eight Immortal more annoyed was that none of them actually knew who had stolen the Regenerative Lotus.

Although the elders had unwillingness in their hearts after being berated by Tian Muyun, they knew better than to rebut him, after all they were entrusted with this task.

“Even if that wasn’t the real Ouyang He, it must be related to Ouyang He. The Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd already told us everything about it.” Said Huangfu Yaotian.

Tian Muyun’s face darkened as soon as Huangfu Yaotian mentioned the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. Given his wisdom, it was impossible that he couldn’t figure what was going on. It must be Ouyang He giving the halberd away to a person and that person had come to One-Line-Sky. The one who stole the Regenerative Lotus must also be that person.

Old man, given my high talent, instead of giving me the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd and imparting the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes technique to me, but instead you gave it to another person. You were lucky that I didn’t kill you at that time. You should be thinking of using that person to have your revenge on me. Humph! Too bad, my abilities have surpassed you. If that man of yours dare to appear, he will end up as good as dead.

Tian Muyun harrumphed coldly. He had no problem figuring this all out with the wisdom he had.

“It seems that Ouyang He has given the halberd to someone else before he died. Tian Muyun, despite you being called the most favoured disciple of Ouyang He, you didn’t even get the last treasure of your master, which indicates that you weren’t that important in his eyes.”

Xuan Yangyi spoke in a sneering tone. Profound Sun Sect had never gotten along with Skycloud Pavilion. How could he miss the opportunity of mocking Tian Muyun?

“It could also be that this unknown person stole Ouyang He’s halberd after he died. Tian Muyun was after all the most favoured disciple of Ouyang He. It was impossible for the old man not to pass his treasure down to Tian Muyun. I guessed that Ouyang He must have reached the end of his life, leaving him no chance of doing so.” Said Huangfu Yaotian.

“We don’t care about what happened between Ouyang He and Tian Muyun. The thing that we are most concerned about is who has gotten the Regenerative Lotus. The person who dares to steal our treasure in One-Line-Sky must have extreme guts. Plus, the man wasn’t an Immortal King expert, so how could he hide inside the void and approached the Regenerative Lotus without arousing the notice of the eight peak Golden Immortal experts, not even the eight of us have such an ability?”

Said Yun Zhonglong with a frown. These were the most important questions. First, where is the Regenerative Lotus and who had taken it. The second question was how did the thief had such a terrifying power, the power that was even beyond their imagination.

“That’s right, such an ability is truly queer.” The patriarch of Yun Family, Yun Zhonghe nodded.

“If I’m not mistaken, that person must have possessed some kind of a powerful magical treasure, a treasure that is at least at King realm or Emperor realm. This can only be the explanation.” Said Tian Muyun.

“Emperor realm Immortal Weapon?”

After hearing this name, everyone present couldn’t help but suck in a breath of cold air, that was a weapon owned by experts who were beyond the Immortal King realm. Such a level was too far fetch to them and unreachable.

“That’s correct. Otherwise, it was impossible for us not detect his presence.”

An elder of Skycloud Pavilion spoke, agreeing to Tian Muyun's thoughts.

Jiang Chen heard what they said and uttered a cold laugh in his heart.

What's so great about Emperor realm Immortal Weapon? The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a supreme divine weapon that is beyond any Immortal realm. None of you will be able to imagine its power.

The pagoda was a supreme treasure of the ancient dragon race. To Jiang Chen, the pagoda still had so much potential which he himself couldn't even estimate. It needed the full condensation of all 99 levels to reach its pinnacle state. The current pagoda was only at the 14th level. As the level continues to increase, more undiscovered power would be unlocked. Therefore, the pagoda was a treasure that gave Jiang Chen the most anticipation.

"The Regenerative Lotus has already been stolen. The only way to find the lotus again is to find the person who possesses the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd." Dugu Sheng of Profound Sun Sect said.

Furthermore, the existence of an Emperor realm Immortal Weapon caused all the experts to unconsciously reveal a hint of greed and began to feel interested in that man. To them, the thief wasn't just an enemy who had stolen the Regenerative Lotus, but also a fat and rewarding prey. Whoever could find Jiang Chen would be able to obtain the legendary Emperor realm Immortal Weapon. The value of such weapon would be immeasurable and would certainly bring unimaginable benefits to any sect.

To put it bluntly, if any of the four major powers was able to obtain an Emperor realm Immortal Weapon, that major power would be able to rule the entire One-Line-Sky and make the other three major powers surrender.

"Give the orders the instant you return, tell them to report to the

higher-ups immediately if they saw anyone who possessing the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd.”

Huangfu Yaotian ordered an elder of his family. The same went to the other leaders of the other major powers. From now on, Jiang Chen had become their longing prey.

Chapter 1142 – Enemies Often Cross Each Other's Path

Unfortunately, it definitely wasn't an easy task to find Jiang Chen. He would never expose the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd easily. It was more likely that he would only use this weapon when it was the time to fight Tian Muyun.

Pa!

At this time, a palm suddenly patted Jiang Chen from behind. He turned and saw a man smiling at him. The person was no doubt Fu Hui.

“Brother Jiang, I thought you weren't coming. Never thought that you are even earlier than me and you have already advanced your cultivation. I have to say that your talent is truly scary.”

Fu Hui couldn't help but praise. He couldn't believe his own eyes. Back when he first met Jiang Chen, he was just an early Earth Immortal expert. After ten days' time, this early Earth Immortal junior had already advance to the mid Earth Immortal realm. There was no way that he wouldn't be shocked by such rapid progress.

“It was just luck.” Jiang Chen shrugged.

“Brother Jiang, I heard that someone has stolen the Regenerative Lotus. That man must have extreme guts for doing so.”

Obviously, Fu Hui already knew everything that happened. It was truly an unbelievable thing to him that someone had actually stolen the Regenerative Lotus the night before the grand ceremony.

“That's right. He sure has a lot of guts. Who does brother Fu think was the one who did this?” Asked Jiang Chen with a smile.

“How could I make a guess about it? Besides, it has nothing to do

with me. It is a matter of those experts. I think we shouldn't get involved in this kind of stuff. But without the Regenerative Lotus, I wonder how the grand ceremony will become."

Fu Hui sounded disappointed. The Regenerative Lotus was supposed to be the grand prize for the grand ceremony and the match among the Eight Immortals was surely going to be intense and exciting. However, without the Regenerative Lotus, it was already conceivable how dull the ceremony would become.

"I have the same thought. So I don't think there's anything interesting in this grand ceremony anymore and was thinking of returning."

Said Jiang Chen. In his point of view, the Eight Immortals had already lost their interest in the battle after the Regenerative Lotus was stolen, especially Tian Muyun. A man like him had a very ambitious desire. It was almost certain that he wouldn't show all of his strength in the battle tomorrow, which would make the match meaningless to watch.

"So quickly? We have just arrived here and this ceremony is only held once every two years. It will be a waste if we miss it."

Fu Hui said, then he shifted his attention to Ah Da, and Ah Er who was next to Ah Yan and Big Yellow. He could tell that both of them were twins just by from their looks. But he could also sense a vague demonic Qi from these two individuals, which proved that they were demonic beasts.

"Brother Jiang, these two are?"

Fu Hui asked curiously. He didn't know when Jiang Chen mixed himself together with the demonic beasts. Although these two beasts hadn't revealed their Qi yet, they didn't seem like any friendly beings and might have a cultivation base higher than him.

"They are the friends I have made in the wilderness and since then, they have followed me. However, they have come here just to

watch the grand ceremony and will return to their home tomorrow.”

Said Jiang Chen. Ah Da and Ah Er were his weapon that he couldn't reveal. He needed to hide them inside his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda later.

“Amazing.”

Fu Hui had given Jiang Chen the thumbs up. Demonic beasts are normally very ferocious in nature, especially those great demons in the desolate mountain range. Any ordinary expert who entered the wilderness would try their best to stay away from such great demon. As such, it made him wonder very much how Jiang Chen could befriend such ferocious demons.

“Brother Fu, I'm not interested in the grand ceremony anymore. We'll be going now. I'll be waiting for you in Cloudmist City, to recommend me to Skycloud Pavilion.”

Said Jiang Chen. He could already predict the outcome of the match tomorrow, which made it unappealing to him anymore. Of course, the most important thing right now was to restore his peak form. The injuries on his body was a small matter, but the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda needed to recover its previous state. Now that they had already obtained the Regenerative Lotus, they needed to use it as soon as possible because it was just like a time bomb. It was safest to refine it in Cloudmist City as no one from the outside would be able to notice it.

“Does brother Jiang really needed to go?” Asked Fu Hui.

“That's right. I have already seen the faces of the Eight Immortals and I'm already satisfied with it. My brothers have obtained some benefits in the wilderness and needed some time to digest them. Brother Fu, we will take our leave now.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at Fu Hui and vanished along with Han Yan and Big Yellow in the crowd, heading towards Cloudmist City.

It would be wise for them to leave at this time, while everyone's attention were still on One-Line Eight Immortals. If they waited until the ceremony was over, he was afraid that they would encounter the people of Profound Sun Sect which made conflicts inevitable. The last thing he wanted right now was to confront the people of Profound Sun Sect.

After they left, Jiang Chen ordered Ah Da and Ah Er to hide in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Then, the three brothers ran frantically on the ground. It was very low-key to travel in such a way, but with the Regenerative Lotus in their possession, they needed to keep their profile as low as possible.

Although a portion of the pagoda was broken, the huge space inside was more than enough to store Ah Da and Ah Er.

"Little Chen, why are we leaving so early? We haven't seen the grand ceremony yet." Asked Han Yan.

"There's nothing left to watch. The outcome of the match would surely be a draw again. Do you think that the Eight Immortals would display their real strength without the Regenerative Lotus' as reward? What we needed to do right now is to return and refine the lotus at once. We must complete this task before entering the Skycloud Pavilion."

Said Jiang Chen. Only idiots would run into Skycloud Pavilion and refine the Regenerative Lotus there, there were numerous high-level experts there, including Tian Muyun. Once any of those experts sensed a trace of the Qi of the lotus, they would surely be in serious trouble.

Two men and a dog moved incredibly fast. At random times, Big Yellow would summon his wings and brought the two into the air. Unknowingly, day was approaching.

There wasn't a long distance from One-Line Mountain to the Cloudmist City. After daybreak, they would travel on land once more. There were continuous number of cultivators zipping past

above their heads, heading towards One-Line Mountain. It only showed that the grand ceremony that was held once every two years did play an important role in their lives.

As four streams of light passed by, they reversed their directions and flew backwards. Their Qi's were incomparably powerful. They were all Heaven Immortal experts and they had already locked on Jiang Chen and his friends instantly.

“We are being noticed.”

Big Yellow lifted his head and saw the four experts landing before them.

“Brother Li, it's him. He's Jiang Chen, the bastard that destroyed one of our ore mines and killed dozen of our disciples.”

A man pointed to Jiang Chen and spoke while gnashing his teeth, as if wanting to eat Jiang Chen raw. Jiang Chen knew this man. He was the inner disciple of Profound Sun Sect, Luo Xiang. It was him who fought Jiang Chen that night. Jiang Chen didn't expect to meet him here.

Chapter 1143 – Trampled to Death by Hoof

The four of them were wearing the same clothes, the uniform of Profound Sun Sect. Besides Luo Xiang, the other three should also be inner sect disciples. Excluding Luo Xiang, there was also an early Heaven Immortal expert. As for the other two, they were both mid Heaven Immortal experts, more powerful than the previous two. Even if Jiang Chen was in his dragon form, he would just be relatively on par with their strength which made it extremely difficult for him to kill them.

“Long time no see, brother Luo.”

Jiang Chen chuckled. These four bastards must be heading towards One-Line Mountain to attend the grand ceremony, but on the way, they unexpectedly found Jiang Chen. As Profound Sun Sect had given the order to kill Jiang Chen, they naturally wouldn't let go of this opportunity.

Of course, Jiang Chen would never put these experts in his eyes. He and Big Yellow were enough to handle them, let alone using Ah Da and Ah Er.

“Jiang Chen, you have offended the Profound Sun Sect, so why didn't you find a place to hide. You are just courting death by showing yourself. You have bad luck today for encountering me. It's now the right time to settle the score with you.”

Luo Xiang said maliciously. Although his sect didn't blame him for the incident that day, he had become a laughing stock in his sect and had been living sullenly these days. But unexpectedly, he found his enemy today at this place. If he didn't express his accumulated grievance on Jiang Chen today, he would certainly suffocate to death.

“Too bad, you are no match for me.” Said Jiang Chen plainly.

“You are Jiang Chen? That super audacious dude?”

The mid Heaven Immortal who seemed like the leader studied Jiang Chen from top to bottom, seemingly interested, however, Jiang Chen's looks disappointed him. He imagined Jiang Chen to have a burly and strong physique instead of a scholarly appearance.

"I don't think that's a suitable title for me, but I advise you not to provoke me. I will give you all a chance to live. Vanish in front of me at this instant."

Jiang Chen's eyes turned cold. He didn't want to waste any more time. If these bastards insisted on blocking his path, he would guarantee that they would die tragically and miserably.

"Haha! You are surely arrogant, but you need qualification for that, otherwise, you will have to pay a high price for that attitude of yours."

Brother Li laughed loudly as if he had just heard the funniest joke in this world. He was a mid Heaven Immortal expert and an inner sect disciple of Profound Sun Sect. No ordinary peers who were on par with his cultivation was a match for him. Given such tremendous advantage and the obvious gap in their cultivation, he naturally wouldn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes.

"Brother Li, don't waste your breath on him. Kill him right away and bring his head back to the sect. I'm sure that the sect will reward us handsomely." Said Luo Xiang.

"Did you hear that Jiang Chen? We will probably be rewarded generously after killing you. If you kneel down and kowtow before me, maybe I will be kind enough to let you have a full corpse."

Brother Li said with a cold smirk.

"Is that so? Since you all have a death wish, I will give you what you want. I have already given you the chance to escape. There won't be a second chance for you now."

Jiang Chen's tone was now filled with an incomparable cold

killing intent.

“Seeking death! I will see how you can escape today.”

Said Luo Xiang. He was the first to lunged at Jiang Chen. As he knew about Jiang Chen’s ability, he struck out with a full-force attack. A dazzling sword materialized in his hand. In the blink of an eye, he appeared before Jiang Chen. With three comrades standing behind him, he was fearless towards Jiang Chen.

Seeing Luo Xiang charging at him, he shook his head and struck out a knuckle, colliding against Luo Xiang’s sword.

Clang!

The massive energy felt like the pressure of a mountain pressing against him. Under such force, the sword in Luo Xiang’s hand was buzzing loudly, almost slipping away from his grip.

“What?”

Luo Xiang’s facial expression changed drastically. Only then did he realised that Jiang Chen had grown more powerful compared to that day. Plus, he hadn’t even used his transformation technique yet. In other words, he was no longer the opponent of Jiang Chen.

“He’s powerful.”

The other three comrades changed their expressions as well. Even the two mid Heaven Immortal geniuses kept their underestimation of Jiang Chen. It was their first time of seeing such a scary being.

“Ah Da, come out and get rid of them.”

Jiang Chen spoke coldly. Suddenly, a black silhouette emerged in front of the four men. They were instantly enshrouded by a massive demon and devil Qi. This cold and chilling Qi made them feel like dying.

“What a strong Qi! This is a late Heaven Immortal great demon. We are no match for him.”

“Dammit! How did this bastard hide such a scary monster?”

“Run now!”

.....

The four men were scared to death. They had all forgotten their arrogance and immediately, they turned and flew towards the sky. Although they had longed to kill Jiang Chen for the reward, their lives were more important than that. Without their lives, any reward would be useless.

They could neglect Jiang Chen’s existence, but not this big demon. Putting them aside, not even a late Heaven Immortal inner sect disciple could deal with this barbaric bull.

“Die!”

Ah Da spat out a word loudly. Boundless killing intent rushed out of his body. With a wave, a huge bull’s hoof the size of 300 meters materialized. It crashed down against the four men like a dark cloud.

Hong Long.....

“Argh...” “Argh...”

A loud bang was accompanied by agonizing wails. The four inner sect disciples of Profound Sun Sect were trampled to death by Ah Da into meat paste. No complete corpse was seen after that.

“For God’s Sake! That’s too ferocious!”

Big Yellow grinned. He didn’t think that he could be as ferocious as Ah Da.

“Let’s go. Time is of the essence. The commotion here surely will attract the attention of other cultivators. It will be very troublesome if it will draw the attention of Profound Sun Sect’s experts.”

Jiang Chen immediately ordered Ah Da into the pagoda and vanished from the scene. Due to today being the actual day of the

grand ceremony, there would be a lot of cultivators coming here. It would bring lots of trouble if they continued to linger around here.

What was left after Jiang Chen and the others left was a stench of blood. The death of the four disciples of Profound Sun Sect was too tragic. If they didn't stop on their way to the mountain, they would still be alive.

Chapter 1144 – The Unparalleled Divine Pill

The death of the four inner sect disciples very quickly drew the attention of Profound Sun Sect. Every disciple of any major power would carry something similar to a spiritual jade slip. As long as the owner of that slip died, it would shatter immediately.

It wasn't hard for them to figure out that Jiang Chen was the one who did it, after all he was the one who killed the experts of Profound Sun Sect in the ore mine. Since Jiang Chen had become the most probable killer, even the people who didn't have sufficient information would claim that Jiang Chen was behind the murder of these four experts, but all of these didn't concern Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's idea was very simple. Once he detected that the opponents were hostile to him, he wouldn't show any sign of mercy. Furthermore, if he didn't take the initiative to kill them first, he would be killed instead. In that case, there was nothing that he should be polite about.

All of his thoughts were now put on the Regenerative Lotus. After fully refining this lotus, their cultivation would surely have big improvements, especially Han Yan, his arm could fully be regrown, but it would all depend on him as to how much he could advance.

Jiang Chen and his friends quietly returned to the Prefecture of Cloudmist City without arousing anyone's attention. Because the guards knew Jiang Chen was the friend of Young Master Fu Hui, none of them stopped their way. Some of them said that even the City Lord had gone to watch the grand ceremony, so the entire prefecture had become unusually quiet, which was exactly what he needed. The quieter the place, the more conducive it was for refining the Regenerative Lotus.

Inside the courtyard, after a moment of observing the

surroundings, Jiang Chen spoke to Big Yellow. “Big Yellow, deploy an invisible formation here. It doesn’t need to be a strong one, but it has to guarantee that the Qi won’t get out.”

“Alright.”

Big Yellow nodded. He understood Jiang Chen’s intention. The Regenerative Lotus was a matter of great importance. If some of its Qi was spread out into the air, it would certainly bring them disaster. They couldn’t afford to do that even in Cloudmist City.

Big Yellow had grown very used to deploying formation. He had mastered the Formation Holy Book and could deploy countless of ancient arrays, including some of those rare formations that not even a mighty Immortal King expert knew of. This had always been the advantage of Big Yellow.

By using roughly 15 minutes of time, the formation was completed. The whole courtyard was encompassed by the formation. Seeing it from the outside, it didn’t seem anything strange. Even a powerful Divine Immortal expert wouldn’t be able to detect a trace of Qi inside the formation even if that expert flew past above the courtyard.

Jiang Chen was also another formation expert, but what Big Yellow deployed astonished him. He had to admit that the Formation Holy Book sure wasn’t mediocre.

“Ah Da, Ah Er, both of you choose a place to hide. If there’s anyone approaching this place, let me know at once.”

Jiang Chen called Ah Da and Ah Er out of the pagoda. These two barbaric bulls were the true powerful assistants that could be extremely useful at critical times.

“Yes, master.”

Both of them didn’t dare to have the slightest delay.

“These are the leaves from the Regenerative Lotus. Each of you will get one. You can refine it while guarding the gate. I’m sure

this piece of leaf is enough to push your cultivation to the half-step Divine Immortal realm and fully stimulate the potential inside of your bloodline, allowing you to break through to the true Divine Immortal realm at any time.

Jiang Chen took out two leaves of the lotus and gave them one each.

“What?”

Both of the bulls exclaimed at the same time. Their fiery bull eyes were staring at the leaf. They were too shocked. They had never thought that Jiang Chen would be so generous by sharing a bit of such a rare treasure to them. They knew their current identity very well. After being edified by Jiang Chen, they had become his slaves. Now, it seemed like it was worth so much to become Jiang Chen’s slave. Such unexpected and rare reward made their bodies shiver.

“What are you waiting for?”

Jiang Chen shouted. Apart from the heart of the lotus, there were a total of eighteen lotus leaves. Every leaf was a rare treasure. If this was put in public, numerous cultivators would do whatever they could to get this treasure. So it was indeed a little wasteful to give it to these two barbaric bulls, but that wasn’t what Jiang Chen felt. He knew very well what he was doing. His cultivation was after all still very low and his foundation wasn’t stable yet ever since he arrived in this world. These two barbaric bulls had become his trump card. The higher their cultivation, the greater help they could provide. In other words, enhancing the strength of Ah Da and Ah Er were indirectly equivalent to raising his own strength.

If Ah Da and Ah Er reached the half-step Divine Immortal realm, it was like having two early Divine Immortal experts as assistants. These were the benefits that Jiang Chen saw.

“Thank you, master.”

“Thank you, master.”

Ah Da and Ah Er were so excited that their knees fell to the ground with a puff. This was a blessing and they almost burst into tears.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen brought Big Yellow and Han Yan into the room. Both of the barbaric bulls were still sticking their eyes on the leaf in their hands, still in the midst of over excitement.

“Second Brother, what do you think now? Are we going to be like what I said? having a boundless future?” Said Ah Da.

“That is beyond any doubt. We have followed master for less than two days, but he has already given us such a huge benefit. I sure was foolish to resist at that time.” Ah Er said emotionally.

“Alright, we just have to continue to be loyal to master. We will do whatever our master ask us to. Our task now is to guard the place for master and his friends. Let’s pick a hidden spot to hide, then we will start refining the lotus leaf. I believe that we will be able to break through to the half-step Divine Immortal realm very soon.” Said Ah Da.

In the room, Jiang Chen had already taken out the Regenerative Lotus. For a moment, the entire room was filled with a strong medicinal Qi of the divine herb. Under the impact of the Qi, the three of them felt an indescribable feeling of being refreshed.

They had to admit that the medical power of the lotus was too strong. If it wasn’t for the formation of Big Yellow, they were afraid that the entire sky of Cloudmist City would be drifting with this Qi. At that time, they would surely be in real trouble.

“This toy is really a treasure. One leaf is enough to improve one’s physique. Even a bonehead will turn into a genius after consuming one leaf of the lotus. And the root of the lotus is also a precious treasure. But of course, the most precious of all is the heart of the lotus which has the ability to regenerate. Legend has it that the

lotus heart can even bring back the dead.”

Big Yellow’s mouth kept on praising the heart of the lotus which drew the contemptuous looks of Jiang Chen and Han Yan.

“The lotus heart is for Ah Yan, don’t even think about it.”

Without giving Big Yellow a chance, Jiang Chen immediately plucked the lotus heart from the plant and gave it to Han Yan. It resembled a Sarira. There was a liquid moving unceasingly inside of it. This unparalleled divine herb really was astounding.

Chapter 1145 – The Refinement

Big Yellow licked his tongue, staring at the lotus heart. If it was in the past, he was afraid that he would go straight up and have a bite of it. But he knew the importance of the lotus heart to Han Yan. His brother's lost arm must be regrown as soon as possible, or else, it would have a bad effect on his cultivation.

“Little Chen, thank you.”

Han Yan received the lotus heart and expressed his thanks to Jiang Chen. He knew that it might sound somewhat strange to say this to his brother, but there was no other way that he could express his gratitude to Jiang Chen. There was nothing much needed to be said between brothers. He would never forget this precious friendship.

He understood that the lotus heart was also incomparably important to Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen refined it, it would naturally bring Jiang Chen immeasurable benefits, but that didn't make Jiang Chen hesitate to give it to him. He knew from the very beginning that Jiang Chen had taken such a huge risk largely because of him.

“Brothers don't have to be so polite to each other. Take it and refine it. With your current cultivation, I'm afraid that you will need a longer time to completely refine the lotus heart and regrow your arm.”

Jiang Chen patted Han Yan's shoulder. He understood his brother's present mood, so he didn't talk much about it, otherwise, it would make his brother feel pressured.

Han Yan smiled. Without saying another word, he took the lotus heart to another room. As he turned, the corner of his eyes seemed slightly moist. He couldn't help but sigh in his heart.

It's a great blessing to have a brother like Jiang Chen.

After Han Yan went off, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow also began refining the other parts of the lotus. Jiang Chen didn't have much demand from it. He would be contented as long as the remaining lotus parts could push his cultivation to the late Earth Immortal realm. The cultivation path had always been a gradual process. As such, a cultivator should never pay too much attention in advancing.

The Regenerative Lotus was a divine herb and a natural treasure. So there was no mental burden in refining it. Such an herb would only bring people benefits and no disadvantages. Even if the lotus could make one advance in a row, it wouldn't cause instability to one's foundation.

Hong! Hong!

Before Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could start to refine the remaining lotus parts, they heard the burst of two powerful Qi.

"The two bulls have made their advancement so quickly."

Big Yellow shook his head. Such advancement was indeed too quick. Jiang Chen had just given them the lotus leaves moments ago. Now, the two bulls had already advanced to the half-step Divine Immortal realm. Fortunately, the burst of Qi that was unleashed by them was contained inside the formation of Big Yellow. Or else, it would certainly draw some unnecessary attention.

"It is only normal given that both Ah Da and Ah Er are already at the peak of Heaven Immortal realm, leaving them only a step away from the half-step Divine Immortal realm. With the help of the lotus leaf, it is only logical for them to instantly breakthrough the bottleneck. But this also indicates the scariness of the lotus."

Jiang Chen smiled and didn't seem very surprised. Ah Da and Ah Er were after all peak Heaven Immortal experts and the medicinal effect of the lotus leaf was beyond any ordinary herbs.

Now that both of them had made their advancement, it would undoubtedly be a good thing for Jiang Chen, his trump card had just grown stronger.

Casting Ah Da and Ah Er aside, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow took five leaves each and started their refinement.

Hong Long.....

As soon as the leaves entered Jiang Chen's body, he felt an extremely strong wave of energy rushing into his Qi Sea. That energy was combined with the medicinal power. It was pure and intense. He then quickly circulated the dragon transformation skill to convert them into new dragon marks. The medicinal energy on the other hand had been channelled to his four limbs and viscera. He could feel that it was quenching all the needs of his cells, a perfect nourishment to his body.

"Such powerful medicinal energy. It's worthy of being called the unparalleled divine herb. These five lotus leaves are enough to push my cultivation to the peak of late Earth Immortal realm. Additionally, my physical endurance will also be enhanced."

Jiang Chen was delighted. It sure was worthwhile to take such a risk. Obtaining such a divine herb had always been a dream for any cultivator.

On the other hand, a layer of golden light was formed on Big Yellow's body. Apparently, some changes began to take place inside of his body after consuming the leaves.

Inside the room where Han Yan was at, he was still sitting cross-legged on a hassock with the lotus heart drifting in front of his face. Then, he seemed somewhat emotional as he looked at this severed arm. The Regenerative Lotus had given him great hope and anticipation.

But he was a man who had experienced numerous events, had resolute disposition and grown accustomed to life-and-death. He

quickly readjusted his emotional condition and began the refinement.

Han Yan's way of refinement was very straightforward. It could also be described as savage. He opened his mouth wide and swallowed the lotus heart into his belly.

Hong.....

The moment a massive amount of energy entered his body, it exploded like a tidal wave, rushing to every part of his body violently.

“Damn! How can the energy be this powerful!”

Han Yan couldn't help but swear after finding himself a little negligent, the energy of the lotus heart was beyond his imagination. He felt uncontrollable as the energy was raging inside his body.

Fortunately, he possessed the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. A powerful bloodline which couldn't be compared to any ordinary person. So very quickly, he was able to suppress the energy.

The bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil was akin to a divine body. It could play a great role when it came to critical situation, just like now. If it was an ordinary expert, getting this much energy after swallowing the lotus heart directly, he was afraid that person's body would explode to death. Ultimately, the energy in the lotus heart was not only not beneficial but also harmful to ordinary people.

In the following time, the three brothers was wholly focused on cultivation and begun refining the lotus frantically, totally ignoring everything else. This was going to be a slow process that couldn't be rush. According to Jiang Chen's calculation, it would take at least three days' time to finish the whole refinement.

As for the grand ceremony on One-Line Mountain, it went on as Jiang Chen anticipated. After the Regenerative Lotus was stolen,

the Eight Immortal experts had lost their passion to fight. The final result was inconclusive just like before, neither victory nor defeat was determined, but their performance was even worse than the previous matches. As such, many spectators were greatly disappointed by it.

Chapter 1146 – The Scary Advancement

When the grand ceremony was over, the Eight Immortals returned to their sects. The present atmosphere in One-Line-Sky was somewhat dull. Everyone knew that the Regenerative Lotus had been stolen. It was a miracle that someone dared to steal the thing that belonged to the Eight Immortals.

They were also filled with curiosity about this thief. This was going to be a mystery they couldn't solve.

On the same day, the four major powers spread out the news for every cultivator in One-Line-Sky to inform them once they noticed anyone possessing the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd and that person would be greatly rewarded.

When everyone learned about this news, the whole One-Line-Sky couldn't calm down. First was about the Profound Sun Sect giving the kill-Jiang Chen-on-sight order. And now, it was about hunting down a thief who had stolen the Regenerative Lotus, but it definitely wouldn't be an easy task. As long as the thief didn't reveal the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, no one would be able to find him.

No one would have imagined that it was the same person who caused these two great disturbances in One-Line-Sky. While the four major powers were hunting down the thief, Jiang Chen and his friends were utilizing all the time that they had in refinement.

When Fu Hui returned from One-Line Mountain, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had already gone out of their seclusion. They had already completed the refinement of the five lotus leaves and their cultivation has increased by leaps and bounds.

The number of dragon marks inside Jiang Chen's body had already reached 440 000, his cultivation had already reached the peak of the late Earth Immortal realm, leaving him ten thousand more dragon marks from the half-step Heaven Immortal realm.

Because of the great benefits that they have gotten from the lotus leaves, not only had his foundation become firmly established, his physique had also been greatly enhanced. With his present combat strength, he could easily kill a mid Heaven Immortal expert even without using his dragon-form.

Similarly, Big Yellow had also made tremendous progress. After refining the lotus leaves, he had successfully broken through to the Heaven Immortal realm, reaching the mid Heaven Immortal realm in one go. His Dragon-Horse bloodline had become even stronger.

Even after that, there were still plenty of medicinal energy left in Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's body. They didn't refine all the remaining lotus leaves, not because they didn't want to, but because they had already gotten sufficient energy from it and any further refinement would be considered wasteful.

The Regenerative Lotus was an unparalleled herb that couldn't be sought after but can also be chanced upon. There were a total of eighteen lotus leaves. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had refined ten leaves, Ah Da and Ah Er were given one leaf each and there were still six leaves left in Jiang Chen's possession.

“For God's Sake! The Regenerative Lotus is worthy of being called a divine herb. Its effect is somewhat too overbearing. No wonder even Immortal King experts covet it.”

Big Yellow licked his tongue, seemingly not having enough of the leaves.

“The most precious part of the Regenerative Lotus is its heart. So I'm afraid those few lotus leaves won't even attract the interest of an Immortal King expert. The lotus heart on the other hand contained almost all of the essence of the lotus. Thus, anyone who obtains it will soar in terms of power.” Said Jiang Chen.

“It seems like Ah Yan's arm can finally be regenerated now.”

Smiled Big Yellow. Han Yan was currently still refining the lotus

heart. The lotus heart was after all not comparable to the lotus leaves. It definitely wouldn't take a short time to fully refine it.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

At this time, a few knocking sound was heard from the door. Jiang Chen swept across using his divine sense and found Fu Hui standing outside the door.

"It seems like the grand ceremony is over. Let's go out to find out."

Jiang Chen pushed open the door of the room, towards the exit of the courtyard. With Big Yellow's formation in place, Fu Hui wouldn't be able to sense Han Yan's Qi. He also wouldn't be able to detect Ah Da and Ah Er's presence in the courtyard given that their cultivation was higher than him.

When the door was open, Fu Hui entered casually.

"Brother Jiang, how was the seclusion? And where's brother Han?"

Fu Hui asked. Because Jiang Chen had concealed his Qi, Fu Hui wasn't able to discern Jiang Chen's true cultivation level, he still had no idea that Jiang Chen had already rushed to the peak of the late Earth Immortal realm.

"Ah Han is still in seclusion, breaking through to a higher cultivation realm. By the way, brother Fu, how was the grand ceremony there?"

Jiang Chen quickly changed the topic, diverting Fu Hui's attention to another thing.

"It was pointless. Just as brother Jiang expected. After the grand prize, the Regenerative Lotus was stolen, the Eight Immortals seemed like slouch in the battle. Master Tian didn't even use one of his trump cards in the battle. It seems like the following grand ceremonies ought to be cancelled. There had been no victory nor defeat. It was truly a boring show."

Fu Hui shook his head in disappointment.

“I wonder who was the thief that had such a nerve to steal the Regenerative Lotus.”

Jiang Chen sighed sadly. The feigned response gave Big Yellow the impulse to bite Jiang Chen badly.

“Who knows? The four major powers have already spread the news for everyone to look for a man possessing the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. I suppose that One-Line-Sky won’t have its peace any more from today onwards.” Said Fu Hui.

After listening to this, Jiang Chen revealed a bitter smile.

It seems like I can’t easily reveal the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd anymore.

“Oh brother Jiang, when do you plan to head over to Skycloud Pavilion?” Fu Hui asked.

“As soon as Ah Yan come out of his seclusion. I think it will be a day or two later. I hope this won’t interfere with brother Fu’s operations.”

Said Jiang Chen. Now that Han Yan was still in the midst of seclusion, he couldn’t leave without saying goodbye.

“Does brother Jiang want to bring brother Han along to Skycloud Pavilion? however, they are very strict in selecting disciples and now isn’t the time of their recruitment. Even though I’m an inner sect disciple, it will bring me quite a bit of trouble if I have to recommend two people at the same time.

Said Fu Hui with a frown. He was only interested in Jiang Chen alone. If Jiang Chen insisted in bringing Han Yan along, it would make things harder for him.

“Don’t worry about this, brother Fu. Ah Yan won’t be following me into the Skycloud Pavilion. I’ll be the only one who’ll go with you, but of course, I have to bring Big Yellow along.”

Said Jiang Chen with a smile. If it was before, he would plead Fu Hui to let Han Yan enter Skycloud Pavilion because of his weak cultivation. But now, it had changed. After getting the lotus heart, Han Yan's broken arm would definitely be regrown and he wouldn't have a big flaw. Normally, it would be very difficult for anyone to regrow a lost arm, let alone a puny Earth Immortal. It would be very easy for the experts of Skycloud Pavilion to connect Han Yan to the Regenerative Lotus together. In that case, Han Yan would be in more danger if he entered Skycloud Pavilion.

Chapter 1147 – Five Successive Advancements

This was a thing which Jiang Chen had to consider. Additionally, after the refinement of the lotus heart, Han Yan's cultivation would certainly improve by leaps and bounds. By then, he would have the ability to protect himself even without Jiang Chen's help. Besides, Jiang Chen was the one in the spotlight instead of Han Yan. To put in bluntly, there were less only a few of them who knew Han Yan and even fewer who knew about his broken arm.

“Alright, in that case, I'll wait for two more days. As soon as brother Han Yan comes out from his seclusion, we will set out for Skycloud Pavilion.”

Fu Hui said with a smile, then left the courtyard to avoid disturbing Han Yan's seclusion. As the Young Master of the Prefecture, he was always busy with day-to-day affairs.

Inside the room, Han Yan was in the most critical stage. The Regenerative Lotus' heart was working out its wonders. His broken arm was regrowing bit by bit.

Han Yan's forehead was beaded with sweat and the same went to his clothes. Regrowing the broken arm was destined to be an extremely difficult and painful process as bones and flesh had to grow bit by bit. That kind of pain was akin to tearing one's soul. If this suffering happened to a normal cultivator, he would certainly succumb to it. Only people with great perseverance like Han Yan could take on such pain.

At this time, the physique of the Ancient Divine Devil played a great role.

Han Yan persevered with all his might as the medicinal power of the lotus heart was surging inside of him. At this rate of speed, it would take two days tops. He believed that once his arm was

regrown, his cultivation would surely increase by leaps and bounds, reaching a very terrifying degree that Jiang Chen wouldn't even dare estimate. Even after he had seen the real Regenerative Lotus for the first time, he was still clueless about its true effects.

Two days later, late at night.

Some movements were finally detected from Han Yan's room, startling both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who had been waiting impatiently for two days.

"Ah Yan has succeeded."

Big Yellow had a look of excitement and wanted to rush into Han Yan's room but was caught by Jiang Chen on the tail.

"Don't go over there. Ah Yan's arm has just grown out and now is the other critical period of his advancement. You will interrupt him very easily if you barge into his room right now." Said Jiang Chen impolitely.

Big Yellow stuck out his tongue and settled down. Then, both of them stared unblinkingly at Han Yan's door.

In the room, Han Yan opened his eyes, two rays of dark devil light shot out, shaking the void around. He raised his newly-grown hand and revealed a faint smile at the corner of his mouth.

There were some things that you would only know how precious it was when you lost it. No one could possibly understand Han Yan's current mood. If it wasn't because of the many things he had experienced that molded his persistent heart, he was afraid that he would be overly excited right now.

Buzz... Buzz...

It wasn't over after the rebirth of his broken arm. The benefits that he got from the heart of the Regenerative Lotus was far from simply regrowing his arm. Because he had been focusing all of his attention on regrowing his arm, he failed to realise how much

energy had been packed inside his body.

What he wanted to do right now was to use his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline to control this energy while breaking through to the higher realms.

Ka!

That was the sound of breaking through a bottleneck. In just two minutes time, he had already broken through to half-step Earth Immortal realm into the early Earth Immortal realm.

But it was still far from over as it was just the beginning. Not even one percent of the energy in his body was consumed and the lotus heart hadn't even been fully refined yet.

Hu... Hu...

The entire room was filled with a terrifying energy, like the stormy waves on the ocean. If it wasn't for Big Yellow's formation, this kind of movement would immediately draw the attention of the experts from Skycloud Pavilion.

Ten minutes later, Han Yan made another breakthrough, hitting the mid Earth Immortal realm, but that wasn't the end yet. He continued advancing towards the late Earth Immortal realm.

Han Yan was trying hard to hold the excitement in his heart. His Ancient Divine Devil bloodline was being circulated faster and faster. He would digest every single benefit he received.

Ka!

Another sound of a breakthrough was heard. The mark of the late Earth Immortal realm was hit. At this point in time, Han Yan had already made three advancements in a row, but it still wasn't the end. Instead, the potential inside of him was being stimulated maximally. At this moment, his meridians were constantly widening, his Qi Sea was continuously being magnified and his bloodline was being stimulated unceasingly. He was now in a state that he couldn't enter even if he had ten thousand years of time. It

was like an endless advancement.

half-step Heaven Immortal realm!

That was right. After half an hour of hard work, Han Yan had already reached the half-step Heaven Immortal realm, the fourth advancement. If such a heaven defying advancement was spread out to the public, he was afraid that no one would ever believe it and many would be astounded.

“For God’s Sake! It seems like he has just made four advancements right? He’s already a half-step Heaven Immortal expert now, shouldn’t he be stopping now?” Big Yellow murmured.

“I don’t think so. It seems like he won’t stop until he reaches the true Heaven Immortal realm.”

Jiang Chen too was speechless. After four advancements in a row and reaching the half-step Heaven Immortal realm, Han Yan had no intention of stopping from advancing further.

“Dammit! That divine herb is too heaven defying.”

Big Yellow licked his tongue, apparently longing to have a taste of it.

“Given Ah Yan’s strength, he won’t be able to refine the entire lotus heart fully and the medicinal power will be preserved in his body for very long time. Because of the lotus heart, his advancement has become so rapid. He has now become a first class genius in the Immortal World.”

Jiang Chen smiled, feeling happy for Han Yan to have such an achievement.

Ka!

Finally, Han Yan’s Qi started to slow down after breaking through to the early Heaven Immortal realm, the fifth advancement.

Seeing what happened, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow breathed a sigh of relief. If Han Yan continued on with his advancement, the two of them wouldn't be able to bear it anymore. They had never witnessed such a rapid advancement. They had no idea how much this would shock other people.

Inside the room, Han Yan could feel his current strength and the tremendous changes inside his body. The Qi waves of his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline drifted out. He could clearly feel the flow of the air around him, like he could casually control it to make himself hover in the air at his will. This was the advantage of being a Heaven Immortal expert.

“Amazing! Truly amazing! The lotus heart sure has unimaginable effects. I've improved so much with just refining half of it and even my arm has grown back. The remaining half of its energy is going to have boundless effects on my body in the future.”

Han Yan's eyes were glittering with vigour and delight.

Chapter 1148 – The Separation

Creak!

When the door was open, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow emerged at the doorway.

“Ah Yan, your advancement is overly scary,” mocked Jiang Chen.

Seeing Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, Han Yan felt even better. He stood up abruptly from his hassock. “The effect of the lotus heart is truly beyond my imagination. I’ve never thought it could bring me such tremendous benefits. Now that I have my arm back, my potential has been unlocked, further enhancing my bloodline. It allowed me to make five advancements in a row, reaching the early Heaven Immortal realm. It’s like a dream gaining this much.”

It was more like a surreal scene for Han Yan. He would never believe it if it didn’t happen on him.

“This is good news. With your current strength, you can now protect yourself. Any average mid Heaven Immortal expert is no match for you. I’m afraid you are competent enough to fight a late Heaven Immortal expert,” said Jiang Chen.

As Han Yan’s Ancient Divine Devil bloodline and physique grew stronger, so did his combat strength. Therefore, he naturally had the ability to eliminate opponents with a higher realm than him.

“That’s right and there are still plenty of medicinal power inside my body which will make my future advancement faster.”

Han Yan nodded, saying that this was not the only benefits he received from the lotus heart.

“By the way, Ah Yan, there’s something I want to tell you. I’m going with Fu Hui to Skycloud Pavilion tomorrow, I’m afraid that we won’t be seeing each other from then on. I’m at ease now that you’ve grown stronger,” said Jiang Chen solemnly.

After listening to that, Han Yan couldn't help but frown. He was reluctant to be parted with his brothers again after a recent reunion in this world.

“Ah Yan, the news about the Regenerative Lotus has spread across One-Line-Sky. Plus, Fu Hui knew about your lost arm and that you're just a Human Immortal. If you come along with me to Skycloud Pavilion, your arm alone can raise lots of doubts. At that time, you'll certainly draw the attention of the higher ups and the consequences will be unimaginable. We will all be exposed.”

Jiang Chen patted Han Yan's shoulder. He also wanted his brother to follow him to Skycloud Pavilion, but the current situation wouldn't allow it to happen. Any new disciple who entered the pavilion would be inspected and the one who recommended the new disciple would have to provide information about the new disciple's background to the pavillion.

Nobody has the ability to regrow a severed arm and make five advancements in a row within days. This was a miracle by itself. But thinking of the stolen Regenerative Lotus, it wouldn't be hard for people to suspect Han Yan. Besides, there was still tremendous amount of medicinal energy left in Han Yan's body. If some experts on the same level as Tian Muyun were to inspect him, Han Yan would immediately be discovered.

This was a risk that they could never afford to take.

“En, I'm well aware of that. Your objective of entering Skycloud Pavilion is for Tian Muyun. In that case, I will leave One-Line-Sky for other bigger places. Once I'm strong enough, I will come back and help you,” said Han Yan.

He understood Jiang Chen's concerns. This was an indisputable fact. Meanwhile, since he's strong enough to protect himself, he might be able to achieve something greater in the other larger territory.

In the Ethereal Immortal Domain, there were thousands of

territories similar to One-Line-Sky. So, Han Yan wouldn't have a problem finding one that suited him.

"Alright, the Immortal World isn't like Saint Origin World where we had our backups and foundations. You need to be extra careful in everything." Jiang Chen reminded.

"Don't worry, have we had any lesser experience along our way together? Didn't we survive whatever waves and storms we encountered? It's you who should be more careful in Skycloud Pavilion. Tian Muyun won't be so easy to deal with," said Han Yan with a smile.

"Be rest assured. I have my own plans for that. Ah Yan, you should quietly leave now while Fu Hui isn't here yet. You'd better not let him see your current condition. Although he is a good man, we still need to be very careful so that we won't be caught," said Jiang Chen.

Despite Fu Hui being a trustworthy person, he was also a smart person. If he saw Han Yan's early Heaven Immortal cultivation, he could very quickly link it to the stolen lotus.

It would be nothing but bad luck if someone knew their secret.

"Alright. Little Chen, Big Yellow, take care."

Han Yan held his fists, left the courtyard and disappeared in the darkness. Now that he's an early Heaven Immortal expert, flying in the sky wasn't a problem anymore.

It couldn't be helped that Han Yan's departure would make the two of them feel a little down. They had, after all, just reunited. Based on the current situation in One-Line-Sky, no one could tell when they were going to meet again, but they guessed that it would be a long time before it would happen.

"That's depressing. Back in Saint Origin World, we were the absolute authority. No one dared to disrespect us at that time. But after arriving in this world, we are like disowned and homeless

passengers,” said Big Yellow glumly.

“Don’t worry. It’s only a matter of time before we have our own place in the Immortal World. Didn’t we begin our journey from the insignificant and tiny Red City last time?”

Jiang Chen smiled slightly. He liked pressure, excitement and intensity. The path of cultivation was a never-ending journey. Whether it was the pressure from Nan Bei Chao or Tian Muyun, he liked it very much. And he also like the gradual progress he was making and expectant of the time when he could step his great enemies under his foot.

The next day, early in the morning, Jiang Chen left the courtyard and headed for the residence where Fu Hui lived.

“Brother Fu, how are things in the Prefecture?” asked Jiang Chen.

“Hey there, Brother Jiang. There aren’t really anything here to manage. With my dad and a few brothers here, there are basically nothing here for me to handle. So, I have been waiting for you. How was Brother Han Yan?”

Fu Hui seemed a little perked up when he saw Jiang Chen. He was supposed to return to the pavilion sooner, but because of Jiang Chen, he had waited for days in Cloudmist City.

“Ah Yan has finished his seclusion last night and has left already the city,” replied Jiang Chen.

“Ai! Brother Han Yan still has injuries and he isn’t strong enough. How can he leave all by himself? I have already made arrangements for him in the Prefecture,” said Fu Hui.

“Thanks a lot for Brother Fu’s efforts, but this brother of mine was used to freedom and not bound to anything. I apologize for the disappointment.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at Fu Hui. It seemed like this young city lord was really a sincere friend, helping Han Yan arranged his day-

to-day duty. This had improved Jiang Chen's impression of him a lot more.

Chapter 1149 – The Skycloud Pavilion

“Alright. Since brother Han Yan preferred to have a free life and has already left, I’ll then put his matter aside. Brother Jiang, let’s head out for the Skycloud Pavilion now.”

Said Fu Hui. It would be a great contribution on his side if he was able to bring a potential genius to his pavilion.

“Okay.”

Jiang Chen nodded. It had been his biggest objective to enter the Skycloud Pavilion. Now that Fu Hui was bringing him personally to the pavilion, he was now one step closer to his main objective.

Fu Hui rose to the air while Jiang Chen sat on Big Yellow’s body as they flew towards the direction of Skycloud Pavilion. Given Big Yellow’s early Heaven Immortal cultivation, he could easily travel in the air without using his sparkling wings. As for Jiang Chen, he hadn’t even reached the half-step Heaven Immortal realm yet, so it was better for him to keep a low-profile.

Fu Hui could only bring one person into the pavilion considering his status, so it would be impossible for him if Han Yan had to come along, but Big Yellow was a different case. In the eyes of outsiders, Big Yellow was merely a pet of Jiang Chen. He wouldn’t be regarded as a disciple in the pavilion.

“Brother Fu, since we haven’t reached Skycloud Pavilion yet, why don’t you tell me something about it so that I’ll know what to expect from it.”

Said Jiang Chen. He was joining a totally new and foreign sect after all, so it was more advantageous for him to know more information about the sect.

“Although Skycloud Pavilion is just a sect, it operates like a country. It has a complete system of its own, dividing the whole sect into countless of sections. As for the disciples, it is just like the

other sects, divided into three categories, namely outer sect disciples, inner sect disciple and the core disciples. All outer sect disciples are Earth Immortal experts. Once an outer sect disciple breaks through to the Heaven Immortal realm, he will be promoted to an inner sect disciple unconditionally. Similarly, if any inner sect disciple breaks through to the Divine Immortal realm, he will become a core disciple automatically.”

He continued. “There’s always a fierce competition in the pavilion among the disciples. It could be an open rivalry or a veiled and ferocious fight. So it isn’t as peaceful as the other people think. It’s very common for them to form gangs of their own. If one doesn’t know how to deal with people in the pavilion, he will end up badly.”

Fu Hui’s words was without a doubt, warning Jiang Chen indirectly. He implied that Jiang Chen should stay modest in the pavilion and not get impulsive. After all, there were too many geniuses inside and all of them were young and aggressive. If Jiang Chen happened to provoke any one of them, his life would surely be in danger.

“So with my cultivation, am I able to enter the inner sect directly?”

Asked Jiang Chen. His current cultivation had already reached the late Earth Immortal realm. According to the rule, he was only eligible to be an outer sect disciple, but he was reluctant to waste his time and energy with those shrimp-like outer sect disciples. With his current strength, he wouldn’t have a problem achieving some things in the inner sect.

“No, because there’s a strict hierarchy between the disciples in the pavilion. Experts who are below the Heaven Immortal realm could never become an inner sect disciple, but there were once some gifted talents who came in the pavilion. They possessed the strength even higher than any ordinary Heaven Immortal expert even though they were only at the Earth Immortal realm, so the

sect made an exemption for those geniuses by letting them in the Iron Dummy Array. As long as they could get out from that array, they would be directly promoted to an inner sect disciple regardless of their cultivation base.” Said Fu Hui.

“Iron Dummy Array? What kind of array is that?” Asked Jiang Chen curiously.

“I have never seen the concrete structure of the Iron Dummy Array. There are only a few experts in the sect who had witnessed such an array before. There were also some of them who claimed that they could defeat the array, however, all of them ended up being defeated and humiliated by the array instead. It was said that there were twenty eight dummies built out of special materials in this dummy army. The combination between the dummies and the array was flawless. Anyone who entered the array will be attacked by the dummies. According to the rule, as long as the disciple is able to persist for ten minutes, it will be counted as a success. But there were only few who managed to stay inside the array for ten minutes.” Explained Fu Hui.

“What are the cultivation base of these dummies?”

Jiang Chen asked. He was intrigued by such an array because this would provide him a chance to go straight to the inner sect.

“It should be early Heaven Immortal realm, but I heard that these dummies would adjust their combat power according to the enemy’s. As they were all supported by the array, they basically couldn’t be destroyed. Brother Jiang, don’t tell me that you are thinking of challenging the array as well?” Fu Hui stared at Jiang Chen with curiosity.

“I do have such thought. My current strength has exceeded any ordinary Heaven Immortal expert after all . I don’t want to waste my time in the outer sect.” Jiang Chen nodded.

“Brother Jiang, I’m afraid that you will only be disappointed.” Fu Hui shrugged.

“Why did brother Fu say so?”

Jiang Chen wondered. Given his present strength, he would never put any ordinary array in his eyes.

“Because the sect has a stipulation that a disciple who has been in the sect for less than a year isn’t qualified to challenge the Iron Dummy Array. So even if brother Jiang is up for the challenge, there’s no way other than staying in the outer sect, unless you are able to advance to the Heaven Immortal realm within a year. Once you have entered the inner sect, you will gain access to plentiful of cultivation resources that outer disciples could never get.”

Said Fu Hui. He knew what Jiang Chen was thinking and talent, but he couldn’t change the rules of Skycloud Pavilion. Of course, if it was an elder who personally suggested Jiang Chen to be promoted into the inner sect, no one would raise a question about it, but Fu Hui obviously didn’t have such power.

“F*ck!”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes and swore on the bullshit rules that any disciple must be in the sect for a year and above to be qualified to challenge the Iron Dummy Array. Currently, he hadn’t even reached half-step Heaven Immortal realm yet and making breakthroughs couldn’t be done overnight. Would he really be stuck in the outer sect for a long period of time?”

“You don’t have to be so anxious, brother Jiang. Given your ability, no one in the outer sect will dare to offend you. However, many of them have the support of inner sect disciples, so they aren’t people to be trifled with either. So, it’s better that you stay mindful at all times and not to provoke any of the inner sect disciples, any outer sect disciple who offended an inner sect disciple had never ended up well. I’m just hoping that I can warn you about this first.” Said Fu Hui.

“En, thank you for your warning, brother Fu.”

Jiang Chen smiled. A sharp ray of light flashed past his eyes. It must be a joke for him to be stuck in the outer sect. It would be impossible for him to do that. Since he was restricted by the rules of the pavilion, he would find his ways to break them. In his eyes, there were no rules that could hold him back.

Chapter 1150 – The Institute of Outer Sect Elders

The Institute of Outer Sect Elders

13/14 chapters!

Don't hesitate to support us in Patreon if you are able to because the public releasing rate will start to follow the achieved Goal tomorrow!

“Little Chen, so what are you going to do now?”

Big Yellow whispered in Jiang Chen's head. He understood Jiang Chen all too well, his brother would never let himself be stuck in the outer sect given his brother's current strength. If anyone insisted to keep Jiang Chen in the outer sect, the whole outer sect would surely lose its peace the moment Jiang Chen entered that place.

“We'll just move one step at a time.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. They hadn't even reached the Skycloud Pavilion yet. He could only tell what would be their next move the moment he saw their situation as no one knew when opportunity would present itself.

Given Fu Hui and Big Yellow's speed, it only took them two hours to get from Cloudmist City to Skycloud Pavilion. In front of them was an endless mountain range. Looking at it from a distance, the mountains were lined with trees, streams, and rivers were running down off the mountains elegantly. The sky was lingered with a thin fog. At this distance, they could already feel the dense Immortal Qi above the mountain range that was at least a fold denser than the Immortal Qi in Cloudmist City.

The mountain range was where the Skycloud Pavilion was located. The closer they got, the clearer they could see the structures on top of the mountains. There were ancient palaces

and towering golden pagodas that looked grand and magnificent. Such style of architectural design was incomparable to those small sects.

“Brother Jiang, ahead is the Skycloud Pavilion.”

Said Fu Hui. Light was radiating out of his eyes. Every time he came here, he would feel incomparably excited. This was the most magnificent, honourable and greatest sect he had ever seen. Although he had already been here for a few years, he was still astonished by its magnificence every time he arrived here. At the same time, there was a glimmer of pride on his face. It was the pride of being an inner sect disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. It was a symbol of identity.

However, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow seemed somewhat calm. They had after all seen things much bigger than this. It was true that the Skycloud Pavilion was regarded as a big sect, but it appeared smaller and inferior compared to the super large sects back in Saint Origin World. Putting the eight families of the Pure Land and Saint Origin Palace aside, the scale of Nebula Sect alone was more than a comparison for Skycloud Pavilion.

Of course, both the pure land, the eight families and Saint Origin Palace lacked the profundity compared to Skycloud Pavilion. And that profundity was the Heaven and Earth’s luck. Even if this was a weak sect, it was after all a sect that practiced Immortal Dao. There was an essential gap between an Immortal and a Mortal.

“Brother Jiang, I will take you directly to the outer sect. I’ll ask the outer sect elders to help you work out your disciple identity first.” Said Fu Hui.

“Thank you brother Fu.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at Fu Hui and replied gratefully.

Under the lead of Fu Hui, two men and a dog flew to the mountain gate of the Skycloud Pavilion. There were four disciples

guarding the mountain. They quickly moved forward to check out who the visitors were. Fu Hui and Jiang Chen landed before them. The mountain gate of the pavilion was 30 meters tall. Two large and majestic-looking words – Skycloud Pavilion were engraved at the top part of the gate.

This was a rule set by Skycloud Pavilion. Anyone besides the Divine Immortal elders and core disciples had to follow this rule. They had to stop in front of the gate for inspection instead of flying directly into the sect.

These four guards were outer sect disciples with Earth Immortal cultivation bases. After seeing Fu Hui, they hastily approached and greeted him. “Oh, it’s brother Fu.”

The four of them had high respect for Fu Hui, it should be said that outer sect disciples always had high respect for inner sect disciple. This was the world where the strong stood on the top and there was an obvious gap between an outer and an inner sect disciple. Plus, Fu Hui was considered quite a celebrity in both the inner and outer sect. There were only very few of them who didn’t know who Fu Hui was.

“En.”

Fu Hui nodded casually and strode towards the gateway.

“Brother Fu, I wonder who this is. He doesn’t seem to belong to Skycloud Pavilion, does he?” One of the guards asked.

“He was the Jiang Chen who destroyed the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect. It was I who recommended him to join the Skycloud Pavilion. We’re going to be brothers from now on.” Said Fu Hui with a smile.

“What? He’s Jiang Chen?”

The four of them exclaimed simultaneously. Their curious eyes fell upon Jiang Chen. During this period of time, Jiang Chen’s name had been spread across the whole One-Line-Sky. As the

opposing force of Profound Sun Sect, they naturally knew a lot of things about this extremely audacious man from the hot topics discussed by their other fellow disciples.

They never thought that the real person would appear before them so quickly. The current young and handsome man who looked like a scholar wasn't quite the same as the ferocious and ruthless man that they had imagined.

Jiang Chen smiled at them, then followed Fu Hui into the internal part of the pavilion, leaving the four of them in a daze.

“Never thought this guy to be the real Jiang Chen. I heard that this man was able to fight against Heaven Immortal expert while only being an Earth Immortal expert. He has destroyed an ore mine of the Profound Sun Sect and escaped from the pursuit of a late Heaven Immortal expert. He's truly no ordinary expert.”

“That's right. He's truly a rare genius. I didn't expect brother Fu to win him over.”

“A genius of the geniuses. However, I'm afraid that he has really longed to join our sect. He has after all offended the Profound Sun Sect and they have already given the orders to kill him on sight. Under such circumstances, only the Skycloud Pavilion in the whole One-Line-Sky can accept his existence.”

“Agree. If this man is really a genius, our place is going to be lively in the future. The last thing that the sect wants is geniuses because there are too many of them. That's why there were so many intense competition happening every time.”

.....

The four of them were commenting on Jiang Chen. They wouldn't dare look down on him. A person who even dared to offend the Profound Sun Sect would surely not be a friendly person. They were afraid that it was unavoidable for such a being to have some conflicts with the other geniuses all the time.

Under the lead of Fu Hui, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow arrived at the outer sect. With Fu Hui's identity, they could straightaway go into the Institute of the Outer sect Elders so that an elder could make an identity jade card for him, making him an official outer sect disciple of Skycloud Pavilion.

Today, there was only one elder named Niu Mang in the institute. The elders generally had lots of free time, so most of them had gone to cultivate. They rarely managed the tasks in the institute and turned a deaf ear to the fights amongst the disciples. The aim of the sect was competition. As long as there wasn't lives involved, these elders would never show up.

When Elder Niu Mang saw Fu Hui, he quickly welcomed him. "What brings you to the Institute of Outer sect Elders, young master Fu Hui?"

Although Niu Mang was an outer sect elder, he was merely an early Heaven Immortal expert. Due to his old age, there wasn't much room for him to improve anymore. As such, there was a huge gap in status between an elder like him and an inner sect disciple like Fu Hui.

Chapter 1151 – The Martial Palace and the Plan

The Martial Palace and the Plan

14/14 chapters!

Don't hesitate to support us in Patreon if you are able to because the public releasing rate will start to follow the achieved Goal tomorrow!

“Elder Niu, I’m here to recommend a person to become a disciple of the sect.”

Said Fu Hui. Then, he continued. “Brother Jiang, this is Elder Niu Mang, one of the outer sect elders.”

“Young Master Fu Hui rarely recommends people to the sect. I think this person must be a genius.”

Niu Mang said with a smile. As an ordinary outer sect elder, he wouldn’t dare offend Fu Hui. Additionally, recommending an outer sect disciple wasn’t any kind of a big matter at all.

“He naturally is a genius, a super genius. Elder Niu, this is the one who has caused a series of uproars in One-Line-Sky, Jiang Chen.” Fu Hui introduced.

Upon hearing Jiang Chen’s name, Niu Mang’s facial expression changed immediately, it wasn’t any different from the expression of the four guards outside the mountain gate.

“You are that Jiang Chen who managed to escape from the hands of a late Heaven Immortal expert?”

Niu Mang asked, feeling astonished. The incident about the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect had already spread across the whole One-Line-Sky. Adding the fact that Profound Sun Sect had issued the order to kill Jiang Chen on sight, it was hard for anyone not to know about it.

“Little Chen, I didn’t expect you to have gained such a reputation.”

Big Yellow darted a glance at Jiang Chen.

“That’s fairly obvious, isn’t it? My name will always be famous wherever I go.” Jiang Chen shrugged.

“Greet Elder Niu, I’m Jiang Chen. I have come personally today to show my sincerity in joining Skycloud Pavilion. I suppose Elder Niu has already heard about the matters related to me. I have offended Profound Sun Sect and was left with nowhere to go. I think Elder Niu should already understand my motive of joining the sect.”

Jiang Chen spoke straightforwardly without boasting how talented and powerful he was. There were times when we should lower ourselves a little so that it would be more likely to arouse good feelings from the others. Besides, this was the sect of Ouyang He and had nothing to do with his target, Tian Muyun.

“That’s of course. Given your talent, your future achievements will be limitless. Now that Profound Sun Sect has issued the order to eliminate you, there’s only Skycloud Pavilion in the entire One-Line-Sky that can accept your existence. Plus, you are recommended by Young Master Fu Hui. Therefore, I naturally won’t have a question about your sincerity. I will immediately assign an identity jade card for you.”

Said Niu Mang speedily. He had no doubts about Jiang Chen’s intention. In normal cases, any new disciple who wanted to join the sect must go through a series of strict tests to ensure that the disciple was sincere in joining the sect and didn’t have any other ulterior motives. Skycloud Pavilion after all had numerous enemies outside. Otherwise, their sect would be compromised.

Jiang Chen’s identity however didn’t need any of these tests at all. The order to kill Jiang Chen on sight given by the Profound Sun Sect was a good proof for Jiang Chen’s sincere intention.

“Young Master Fu Hui, you have introduced a genius to our sect. I will inform the Institute of Inner sect Elders about your deeds, you will surely be handsomely rewarded.”

Said Niu Mang. In Skycloud Pavilion, whether it was the Institute of the Outer sect Elders or Inner sect Elders or Core Elders, all of them were the same, they were interlinked. The only difference was their position and status, but even if it was only one level of difference, it was humongous.

“Thank you.”

Fu Hui said casually. As a matter of fact, he wasn't concerned about the rewards. His main purpose was to befriend someone like Jiang Chen. Besides, despite Jiang Chen being a genius, his cultivation base was still too low – a mere Earth Immortal expert. He could at most be an outer sect disciple in the pavilion. As such, he wouldn't receive a very attractive reward for bringing an outer-ranked candidate in the sect.

Subsequently, the process of handling the identity jade card was very smooth. After Jiang Chen got the jade card, Niu Mang found Jiang Chen a place to live and went back to his task. Although Jiang Chen was a genius, he didn't receive any kind of special treatment. The sect, after all had too many of such geniuses.

The place where Jiang Chen lived was a huge area full of dorms. It raised Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's curiosity that so few people were present in this place despite it being midday.

“Brother Fu, Skycloud Pavilion is a big sect in One-Line-Sky. There should be thousands of disciples in the outer sect, but how come I didn't see any one of them?” Asked Jiang Chen doubtfully.

“During this period, the Immortal Qi is at its highest concentration. So everyone naturally has gone to the Martial Palace for cultivation.” Said Fu Hui.

“Martial Palace? What is that place?” Asked Jiang Chen.

“It’s a place where disciples went to practice. There are a total of three Martial Palace in Skycloud Pavilion, namely the Outer Martial Palace, Inner Martial Palace and Core Martial Palace. They were built by the experts of the sect. There are large formation condensed inside every palace which makes the Immortal Qi inside much denser than outside. Cultivating in the Martial Palace will bring tremendous benefits. So, naturally you will find lesser people in the dorm area at this hour.” Explained Fu Hui.

After listening to this, Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered with radiance. He had been feeling sulky in his heart about being stuck in the outer sect and there was no way to get into the inner sect yet. But after Fu Hui’s reminder, a plan instantly formed in his mind.

“Brother Fu, can you bring me to the Martial Palace?” Said Jiang Chen.

“Oh? Brother Jiang is going there to cultivate? Isn’t it too soon?”

Fu Hui was stunned. He had never expected that Jiang Chen would be this passionate. As for Jiang Chen, it was his nature to keep on cultivating, however, a mere Martial Palace wasn’t the one that caught his real attention. He had some other motives for going there.

“Could it be that I’m still not qualified to enter the Martial Palace for cultivation?” Asked Jiang Chen.

“Not really. You have already gotten the identity jade card, which means you have officially become a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. So you are naturally qualified to enter the Martial Palace. Alright. I will bring you there now. However, you will have to cultivate inside on your own as I would have to return to the inner sect after that.”

Said Fu Hui, he then led Jiang Chen towards the Outer Martial Palace.

“Little Chen, what do you have in mind this time?”

Big Yellow whispered in Jiang Chen's head. Fu Hui wasn't able to discern Jiang Chen's intention, but Big Yellow could just by the look of Jiang Chen's eye. Had this bastard really figured out a plan so quickly after just arriving in the pavilion?

"If I'm not able to conduct my cultivation in the outer sect normally, they will try to put me in the inner sect." Jiang Chen chuckled.

Big Yellow rolled his eyes. Although he couldn't guess what Jiang Chen was planning, he was praying silently for those outer sect disciples. It was very unlucky for them to encounter someone like Jiang Chen.

Soon, they arrived at the Martial Palace. It was a nine-storey golden tower that gave off golden lustre. This tower reminded Jiang Chen of the Refining Tower back in the Saint Origin Palace as both of them had the same function – cultivation.

After bidding goodbye to Fu Hui, the two of them went straight into the palace. As he now had the identity jade card, he walked through the doorway without being stopped.

"What are you going to do?" Big Yellow asked curiously.

"You'll know in a moment."

The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth curled upwards. This was going to be the prologue of the chaos in the outer sect of Skycloud Pavilion.

Chapter 1152 – It Was All Sucked Dry

It Was All Sucked Dry

1/8 chapters!

Our weekly release is now following the current goal in Patreon. Don't hesitate to support us in Patreon if you are able to so that our goals can return to the previous rate.

Jiang Chen led Big Yellow into the Martial Palace. The interior of the palace was incomparably broad and it was divided into many rooms. There were plenty of cultivators cultivating in each room. It was true that the Immortal Qi in here was many times denser compared to outside.

“The Immortal Qi in here is several times denser compared outside. They are absorbed and compressed by the formation. It's true that cultivating here will be more beneficial than cultivating outside.” Said Big Yellow.

“Let's find a place first before we talk.”

Jiang Chen selected a room randomly and went for the door. Currently, the rocky door was shut tight. Anyone could sense the other disciple's Qi and various noises from the inside. However, it didn't concern him much. He also didn't care if his actions would disturb the other disciples inside the room. Immediately, he pushed open the rocky door with force.

Anyone who came late would usually carefully push open the door in case someone in there was reaching the most critical moment of their cultivation. That person would be in serious trouble if such an event happened.

Too bad, Jiang Chen wouldn't care so much about it as his mind had already been equipped with a plan. The way he pushed open the door was rude and violent which naturally created a loud noise. It was impossible for such a disturbance not to affect the

disciples inside.

Such an action immediately aroused the dissatisfaction of the disciples inside. Nearly 20 of them opened their eyes wide, glaring at the man and the dog who just walked in. They wanted to take a good look on who actually had such a nerve to ignore the rules of the palace, that person must have gotten fed up with living.

Allowing twenty disciples in a room was the privilege of being an outer sect disciple. In the inner sect, three disciples were the maximum number in a room, whereas core disciples only allowed one. This was the obvious difference of rank.

“Who are you? Are you a newbie? Did you know that you have to come silently and carefully in an occupied room?”

Someone shouted at Jiang Chen. In their point of view, Jiang Chen was a stranger. None of them had ever seen him before, however, he was here in the palace, it only proved that he also had the identity jade card and was a newly recruited disciple. There were too many outer sect disciples in the sect and new disciples would join the sect every now and then, so it was common for them to encounter someone they didn't know.

In the face of the angry eyes, Jiang Chen acted as if none of that concerned him. He glanced around the empty room and found no cultivation hassock left for him. The hassock was a special kind of thing. Sitting on it to cultivate could calm one's Qi and mind. It worked very well in helping to condense the Immortal Qi.

Of course, Jiang Chen normally wouldn't need something like a hassock, but he needed one today.

“Why did you bring a dog here along with you? Begone! This is the Martial Palace. Who allowed you to bring an animal here?”

A mid Earth Immortal disciple yelled. Jiang Chen's act of pushing the rocky door so abruptly irritated them. So the sight of a dog definitely wouldn't help calm their anger.

Then, Jiang Chen's eyes fell on that yelling mid Earth Immortal disciple. He must thank this person for submitting himself to him.

Jiang Chen strode forward to that disciple and spoke coldly. "You, get up, this hassock belongs to me now."

"What? You just came here to rob a seat?"

For an instant, not only that disciple was dumbfounded, every outer sect disciple in the room was petrified, giving Jiang Chen a look of disbelief. Could this bastard not be this impulsive? Breaking into the room and robbing their seat? and had brought a dog with him as well? although there were numerous cases where outer sect disciples would fight for the hassock, none was as shocking and lawless as this.

"F*ck! Are all the newbies so arrogant now? He has come to rob a seat before we have gotten him into trouble."

"It seems like this bastard is determined to seek death. He's surely a newbie that doesn't know the height of the heavens. He won't get to reap any fruits for being so arrogant in the Martial Palace."

.....

Most of them had lost their temper. Some of them stood up directly from the hassock and besieged Jiang Chen. This room wasn't short of late Earth Immortal experts, but none of them were half-step Heaven Immortal expert.

Huo!

The disciple whose hassock was going to be seized by Jiang Chen stood up abruptly. His face was full of fury. Without saying another word, he lifted his knuckle and smashed at Jiang Chen. "Brat, didn't you see what place is this? How dare you show your arrogance in this place? Courting death!"

Pa!

Unfortunately, his punch was just like a circus trick. His knuckle was grabbed by Jiang Chen. With a light exertion of force, a sound of Ka Cha was heard. Then, the victim's arm was twisted and broken on the spot.

“Argh.....”

A mournful scream sounded. The disciple's head was beaded with cold sweat because of the pain, but he felt even more shocked inside. He had never imagined that this bastard could actually be this abnormally powerful.

“Begone!”

Jiang Chen kicked the man, and sent him flying away. Then, he moved to the hassock and sat on it, preparing to cultivate.

“Dammit! This bastard is too arrogant. Let's finish him together.”

Someone shouted. The twenty of them surrounded Jiang Chen at the same time. All of them had witnessed arrogance before, but not to this extent. How could a newbie not put them in his eyes and had attacked one of their companions the moment he arrived?

“Alright. Since all of you dare to disrespect me, I will then punish you. Each of you will have a broken arm today.”

Jiang Chen said plainly, then moved like lightning. Later, the room was filled with a series of screams and cracking of bones.

After only a dozen of seconds, the twenty of them fell to the ground and howled. Their faces revealed a look of pain. At this time, apart from the angry expression, there was more fear in it. This newbie was too strong, not even a half-step Heaven Immortal expert could cripple so many of them in a dozen of seconds. Their minds were racing fast, finding the answer as to what was the background of this man and when had someone so powerful emerge in the outer sect.

Jiang Chen brushed off the dirt in his hands, ignoring the wailing

disciples and sat on the hassock.

“Big Yellow, do you still remember the scene back in the Refining Tower?” Jiang Chen smiled at Big Yellow.

“Kaka! Of course, you badass!”

Big Yellow had a face of excitement. He now knew what Jiang Chen was trying to do.

“Absorb it now, dragon transformation skill.”

Jiang Chen uttered a low shout. In the blink of an eye, all the Immortal Qi in the room was sucked into his body. This was only the beginning. After that, the Immortal Qi in the next room was also sucked dry in an instant. Those neighbouring outer sect disciples who were trying hard to absorb as much Immortal Qi as they could suddenly felt like they were sucking in nothing.

Chapter 1153 – Being Filled with Indignation

Being Filled with Indignation

2/8 chapters!

Don't hesitate to support us in Patreon if you are able to!

“What’s going on? How could the Immortal Qi be gone all at once?”

“Who was it that did this? It’s like all the Immortal Qi has been extracted clean from the room.”

“Could it be that something’s wrong with the formation? Could it be the formation that cause all the Immortal Qi to vanish at the same time?”

.....

Many outer sect disciples from the other rooms were startled. This wasn’t the first or the second time that they cultivated in Martial Palace. There had never been such a thing that happened before. If there were some modifications in the formation, the sect would definitely give prior notice first.

Furthermore, this situation didn’t stop. The Immortal Qi in countless of rooms were being sucked out. This made many of the outer disciples think that it had to the problem of the formation. They all knew that the Immortal Qi in the palace was way richer compared outside. It wasn’t logical for a cultivator to absorb all of these Qi in such a rapid speed.

A dozen of minutes later, the entire palace was filled with sounds of banging when the rocky doors were pushed open by all the disciples inside the rooms. They rushed out but couldn’t find the cause of all of these.

At this time, Jiang Chen pushed open the rocky door, walked out along with Big Yellow who was wagging his tail flamboyantly and

vanished in just a brief moment.

“Kaka! You are a vicious arse! Those disciples won’t know what just happened.” Big Yellow shouted excitedly.

“This is just the first day.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. He had to admit that the rich Immortal Qi did bring some benefits to him. Although it didn’t help him condense any new dragon marks, it had strengthen his foundation a bit.

“If you continue like this every day, you won’t be able to stay peacefully in the outer sect.” Said Big Yellow.

“That was why I said that I wouldn’t be stuck in the outer sect.” Replied Jiang Chen.

The inside of the Martial Palace had turned messy. Plenty of outer sect disciples had gathered together to discuss about the previous incident.

“What’s the matter here? Nothing like this has ever happened since the establishment of the Martial Palace. If there were some problems with the formation, the elders ought to inform us about it. Plus, even if there’s really something wrong with the formation, there should still be some Immortal Qi left in here. How could all the Immortal Qi be sucked off in an instant?”

“Look, there’s nothing wrong with the formation. The Immortal Qi seems to be gathering inside the palace again. This is the effect of the formation, but at such speed, it will take at least one day for it to restore to its previous concentration, which means we can only return here tomorrow.”

“Since there’s no problem with the formation, what has happened just now? Could it be that something has sucked up all the Immortal Qi here?”

“Not possible. The Immortal Qi in here is too rich. No one in the outer sect have such capability.”

.....

Everyone started discussing about it, but neither of them could find the key reason. At first, they thought it was because of the formation, but now that the formation was still circulating at high speed and constantly collecting Immortal Qi in here, it proved that nothing was wrong with the formation. So, the situation had gotten stranger.

“Guys, come and look.”

Someone saw some disciples lying in the room where Jiang Chen was at just now. When the others approached the room, they were shocked to see roughly twenty people lying on the floor. Each had one of their arms broken. And they also seemed to be beaten up quite badly because they couldn’t even stand properly.

“What happened? Who has beaten you all up?”

A half-step Heaven Immortal outer disciple asked with a frown. He was called Wang Tao, one of the best disciple in the outer sect. With his current cultivation, he only needed one more step to advance to the true Heaven Immortal realm. He was also the one who was most likely to advance to the Heaven Immortal realm in the shortest possible time and become a genius in the inner sect.

“It’s...it was the newcomer...Brother Wang have to seek justice for us.” Someone cried.

“What? A newcomer dared to beat up senior disciples? That’s outrageous!”

“And the attack was apparently vicious. However, I think that that man was still holding back. Although their arms were broken, it’s just a fracture, like a scratch on the skin, it can be healed in just a short period of time.”

“That man has serious guts! How dare he respond so viciously even if there was a disagreement?”

.....

A commotion sounded from the crowd. They were shocked by the vicious attack and the strength of this unknown newcomer because there were few amongst the victims who were late Earth Immortal experts. In other words, the attacker must be at least a half-step Heaven Immortal expert.

“By the way brother Wang, all the Immortal Qi here was sucked dry by that newcomer as well.”

Someone spoke. They had been in this room all the time. They saw how Jiang Chen did it clearly. There was no doubt about it.

“What?”

This time, everyone exclaimed, this had answered all of their doubts, but none of them believed it. Even if that man was a half-step Heaven Immortal expert, he wouldn't be able to absorb all the Immortal Qi of the palace within such a short period of time. There was an immense Immortal Qi in here because of the constant circulation of the formation that kept on collecting and compressing the Immortal Qi from outside. That was the reason why so many disciple had come here for cultivation and why the Immortal Qi here wouldn't be depleted.

“Are you serious?”

Wang Tao frowned. This incident was after all too hard for anyone to believe.

“It's the truth. That bastard brought a dog along with him. He has a very powerful strength, he even robbed my hassock. Because of one disagreement, he knocked all of us to the ground, then used some kind of means to absorb the Immortal Qi in the room in an instant and the entire palace as well. That man's body was like a bottomless hole. It's scary now that I think about it.”

Someone felt chills running in his skin while recalling the previous event.

“What was that man's cultivation?” Asked Wang Tao.

“I didn’t notice it. However, the fact that he could enter the palace for cultivation proved that he possessed an identity jade card, which means that he must be an Earth Immortal expert.” One of them said.

“Impossible. There’s no way for an Earth Immortal expert to be so powerful.”

“The Immortal Qi in Martial Palace is extremely rich. Not even a half-step Divine Immortal would be able to suck all the Immortal Qi away within minutes, let alone an Earth Immortal newbie.”

.....

No one believed such an abnormal Earth Immortal, because they had never seen it in their lives.

“Where’s that man now?” Asked Wang Tao.

“He has left before you all came in, and I have no idea where he has gone to.” Someone answered.

“Where else can a newly-arrived disciple go to? It has to be the dormitory area. Let’s head over there and check him out. This abnormal newbie shouldn’t be this selfish. After sucking away all the Immortal Qi, what else can we do in Martial Palace?”

A disciple said indignantly. Under the lead of Wang Tao, a large number of outer sect disciples headed towards the dormitory area.

Chapter 1154 – Arrogant and Domineering

Arrogant and Domineering

3/8 chapters!

Don't hesitate to support us in Patreon if you are able to!

Outside the dormitory area was a vast square. Jiang Chen was lounging lazily and crossing his legs on a rattan chair that wasn't supposed to be there, under the warm sun. That was a kind of enjoyment. Big Yellow who was next to him, glared angrily at him, but Jiang Chen just turned a blind eye to it.

The reason that Jiang Chen sat here was naturally because he was waiting for those furious outer sect disciples to come and look for him.

Not long after that, a large group of outer sect disciples emerged in sight, heading towards the direction of the empty square. There were at least a few hundred of them which proved that Skycloud Pavilion was worthy of being regarded as a major power in One-Line-Sky. The aura of these outer sect disciples alone was incomparable to any average group. Amongst them, there were at least five to six half-step Heaven Immortal experts and plenty of late Earth Immortal experts.

There were thousands of disciples in Skycloud Pavilion and this group of disciples was only a portion of the whole.

These angry outer sect disciples saw Jiang Chen at the first glance. Although they didn't know who Jiang Chen was, they had heard the description of Jiang Chen's appearance and the fact that he was accompanied by a dog – was the easiest way to identify Jiang Chen.

Very quickly, hundreds of outer sect disciples were only a few distance away from Jiang Chen. Behind them was another large group of disciples returning to the dormitory area. It seemed like

Jiang Chen had already offended all of them.

“You are probably the first newbie who isn’t welcomed by the community in the history of Skycloud Pavilion.” Big Yellow said while shaking his tail.

“So what?”

Jiang Chen shrugged. His face didn’t show any sign of fear while facing the blazing eyes of the disciples.

“So you are that newcomer? The newcomer who hurt people in his first day.” A half-step Heaven Immortal genius said.

“They messed with me first. Naturally, I would need to teach them a lesson. I have used the truth to tell them that they wouldn’t end up well if they provoke me. Therefore, it’s best that you all stay away from me as well.”

Said Jiang Chen plainly. His body remained lounging casually on the chair.

F*ck! This bastard surely had too much arrogance. There were at least a few half-step Heaven Immortal experts on the scene. They were all the top geniuses in the outer sect. No one here had ever dared to disdain them, but this bastard didn’t even raise his head to look at them, as if they were invisible.

“Dammit! How did this bastard get into Skycloud Pavilion? Is his pair of eyes grown on top of his head? He’s way too arrogant.”

“Arrogance! I have never seen someone as arrogant as him. We have to teach him a good lesson today; this newbie shouldn’t act arrogantly, or else he will bear a consequence beyond his imagination.”

“Stop wasting your breath with him and finish him off.”

.....

A lot of disciples couldn’t stand it anymore. Some were grinding with their fists, preparing to beat this arrogant bastard up badly.

Although this bastard was very powerful and could defeat roughly twenty outer disciples, there were a hundred of them here. Plus, there were six half-step Heaven Immortal experts amongst them and the talented Wang Tao. Everyone knew Wang Tao's strength very well. Given the situation that no one here can fly, he had once defeated an early Heaven Immortal elder with his half-step Heaven Immortal realm.

“Are you the one who absorb all of the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace?”

Wang Tao spoke. His aura was strong. It drifted in the air and pressed against Jiang Chen.

“Yes. My cultivation law is quite special. I have to absorb a great deal of Immortal Qi every time I cultivate.” Said Jiang Chen disapprovingly.

After listening to what he said, a lot of them were shocked. How could there be such a powerful cultivation method that could do this? It was impossible and Jiang Chen must be lying to them, but there was one thing that they were certain about, and that was the loss of the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace was definitely related to Jiang Chen.

“I don't care who you are and what kind of means you used to absorb all those Immortal Qi, brat! Your actions have disrupted the normal cultivation of the other disciples, therefore you have to pay a price for that,” Said Wang Tao.

“Price?”

Jiang Chen slowly stood up from the rattan chair and approached Wang Tao. His eyes squinted a little and spoke, “What price do you want?”

Hiss!

Wang Tao's heart trembled. For inexplicable reason, he felt uneasy and his soul couldn't help but shiver under the stare of

Jiang Chen. His intuition told him that this young man in front wasn't as simple as he looked, however, this wasn't the time for him to shrink back. He had already stood up for his fellow disciples, as the saying goes, the arrow that was on the bow should never be put back into the quiver. If he chose to retreat at this moment, the other disciples would look down on him and he would lose all of his reputation in the outer sect.

“Humph! It's very simple. You have injured so many of my fellow disciples. I want you to bear their medical cost. I want you to bear the loss of the Immortal Qi as well by apologizing to all of us here.”

Wang Tao harrumphed coldly. As far as he was concerned, such price was considered a very small one.

“It was a nice speech. Unfortunately, none of you have the power to tell me to do so. Here's a piece of advice for you all. When any of you see me in the future, stay as far away from me as possible. Don't try to mess with me. Also, from now on, all of the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace belongs to me. You all have to go and search for other places for your own cultivation.”

Said Jiang Chen with such arrogance that it crossed their line of tolerance.

“Damn! This bastard is overly proud. The Martial Palace is a cultivation venue opened to all of us. How dare he seize it away from us? This is unacceptable!”

“Motherf*cker! Finish him off!”

.....

Many of them had lost their patience. Some of them had already unleashed their Immortal Qi in preparation to strike Jiang Chen.

“Courting death! Let me teach him a good lesson. I want to see what he has to be so arrogant.”

A half-step Heaven Immortal disciple standing next to Wang Tao was infuriated. He roared and sent out a punch with powerful Qi

towards Jiang Chen.

Pa!

In the face of this man's attack, Jiang Chen didn't even look at it. He just sent a slap indifferently on the disciple's face. The half-step Heaven Immortal expert uttered a miserable cry and was sent flying away by the slap, he then landed on the ground 30 meters away with a puff, spurting out blood with two broken teeth.

“What?”

Everyone, including Wang Tao was gaping at the scene in disbelief. The disciples who were only seconds away from lunging at Jiang Chen immediately withdraw their Qi due to shock.

How strong was this guy?

Everyone knew that attacker was a half-step Heaven Immortal expert, an outstanding genius in the outer sect and a genius of the geniuses. How could such a powerful figure couldn't even stand a slap from a newbie? No one would ever believe this if they didn't saw this with their own eyes. By now, they finally knew why those injured disciples looked so miserable back in the room.

Chapter 1155 – He’s Jiang Chen!

No one wasn’t surprised by it. The whole scene had become silent. A half-step Heaven Immortal expert was one of the most powerful disciple in the outer sect, however, he was still sent flying away by just a single slap, totally powerless. How could this thin and weak-looking newbie have so much power?

“How did this happen? Who the hell is this guy? How could such a powerful man come to the outer sect? Is the sect trying to bring us trouble?”

“That’s right. He’s should be in the inner sect. Why is he competing with us in the outer sect?”

“There must be a reason for him coming here. A newbie would always be assigned to different departments according to their cultivation. The fact that this man came to the outer sect proves that he hasn’t reached the Heaven Immortal realm yet. In that case, this showed that he is a very scary expert. How could a mere Earth Immortal be so powerful?”

“Correct. He’s just too strong. Even Master Tian wasn’t this powerful when he just arrived here. What is the origin of this guy?”

“There’s no need to be concerned about his background. He has already affected our normal cultivation and he must compensate us for that loss. Let’s attack together, I don’t believe he can handle all of us.”

.....

These outer disciples were frightened and angry at the same time. Some of them were gnashing their teeth. Even Wang Tao had dispelled the idea of lunging at Jiang Chen. Although he was a little stronger than the half-step Heaven Immortal disciple who attacked just now, it couldn’t guarantee that he won’t end up just

like the previous disciple.

“Brat, do you know what you are doing? You are making the whole outer sect your enemy. This won’t do you any good.”

Wang Tao said ruthlessly, cracking his fists, but didn’t dare to attack.

“I didn’t seem to have done anything wrong, did I? You took the initiative to provoke me. It was him who attacked me first. I just defended myself against his attack. About the absorption of the Immortal Qi inside the Martial Palace, it was because of my ability. Didn’t you guys also absorb the Immortal Qi when you enter the Martial Palace? The thing was I could absorb faster and capacity is greater than you. So was that against the rules of the sect?” Said Jiang Chen plainly.

“Uh...”

After hearing his explanation, the outer disciples were petrified. Their faces were full of astonishment. This bastard had sucked away all of their Immortal Qi and hurt their comrades, but none of them could rebut the points he said. The purpose that the Martial Palace was built was for disciples to absorb as much Immortal Qi as possible in the building. Jiang Chen could absorb all of them at once, he only displayed his competent ability and that didn’t violate the rules of the sect at all.

“So, you guys better not provoke me when I didn’t provoke you, because I’m not the kind of person that can be trifled with.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. Big Yellow was grinning and laughing next to Jiang Chen. He was really impressed by Jiang Chen. If one was trying to find the description of smartness, this scene would be a good example for it. Jiang Chen was able to back his actions with rationale. Even if this news was brought up to the institute of elders, it wouldn’t concern him as he had more than enough justification for his own actions. When someone attacked a person, the person surely had to defend himself instead of standing

there waiting to be beaten up like a dummy.

“Brat, what’s your name?”

Wang Tao gritted his teeth. It seemed like he had no solution for today’s incident. He couldn’t use force on this man as they couldn’t even measure how powerful this man was. It seemed like he would need the help of some inner disciple to teach this ignorant newcomer a lesson, but he had to know the name of this culprit first.

“Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen declared his name loudly. There was nothing else for him to hide as he had already become an official disciple of Skycloud Pavilion.

“Jiang Chen? This name sounds somewhat familiar to me.”

Someone frowned as if the name sounded familiar, but he couldn’t remember where he had seen or heard it.

“Jiang Chen! He’s Jiang Chen! The one that made Profound Sun Sect issue the order to kill.”

Finally, someone remembered Jiang Chen’s name and exclaimed on the spot.

“What? He was the one who destroyed the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect and managed to escape the pursuit of a late Heaven Immortal expert? How did he come to our sect?”

“There’s no doubt about it, it has to be him. No wonder he’s so powerful. I heard that he was able to fly even though he was only an Earth Immortal expert, he could even fight against Heaven Immortal expert. I had never expected that this monstrous genius will join our sect. Oh, the Profound Sun Sect must be hunting him down everywhere. There’s no other place that he can go aside from our sect.”

“This evil star must be a very ruthless guy to have the guts to

destroy the ore mine of the Profound Sun Sect. At last, we have finally witnessed how powerful he is today. None of us is going to be a match for him.”

.....

A commotion was heard from the group of disciples. It instantly changed the way they looked at Jiang Chen. Their glaring eyes slowly displayed traces of respect. That was right. All of them were youngsters. The earth-shattering incident that Jiang Chen did drew their admiration. If Jiang Chen was replaced by them, even if they were capable of doing so, they might not have such a nerve.

After leaving his name behind, he turned and headed towards the dormitory area, ignoring all of the disciples on the scene. He had already achieved his objective in his first day of arrival. There would be more good shows to watch later on.

Looking at Jiang Chen’s fading back, hundreds of outer disciples were dumbfounded. They were supposed to seek justice from Jiang Chen for the disruption in Martial Palace, however, they had suddenly encountered a problem that was beyond their imagination.

“Brother Wang, what do we do now? I can’t believe this disastrous star has come to our sect. If we allowed him to cultivate with us in Martial Palace, we won’t have a chance to cultivate anymore.”

“Agreed. Given his strength, he should’ve already entered the inner sect. It’s unfair for us to compete for cultivation resources with such a genius in the outer sect.”

“What else can we do? We can only seek the inner sect disciples for help. There’s no one in the whole outer sect that is a match for him.”

.....

The disciples began to discuss the matter, agreeing to ask the

help of inner sect disciples to suppress Jiang Chen. Otherwise, Jiang Chen would become the ruler in the outer sect and all of them would be oppressed by him.

“Don’t go to the inner sect yet. Let me bring this matter to the institute of elders first and see whether they would be able to handle this matter.”

Wang Tao said. He naturally wouldn’t want to provoke Jiang Chen, but Jiang Chen’s existence would harm the interests of all other disciples. He had no other choice but to take action. It would be best if the institute of elders agreed to handle this matter on behalf of them, because things wouldn’t be controllable anymore when the matter was spread to the inner sect disciples.

Chapter 1156 – There's No Way We Can Live Our Lives like This

On the same day, Wang Tao gathered some of the half-step Heaven Immortal disciples to go along with him to the Institute of Elders. They wanted to let the elders know about the incident of Jiang Chen. The elder who greeted them was Elder Niu Mang as usual. After hearing the news, the elder was dumbfounded. If he remembered it correctly, Jiang Chen seemed to have arrived at Skycloud Pavilion very recently, like two hours ago.

“Ai! A genius is truly a genius. There are some people who couldn't be restrained by the condition of any environment they go.”

Niu Mang sighed and said to them. “You all should return now. There's nothing wrong with absorbing of the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace.”

What? That was it? It was true that Jiang Chen wasn't guilty for absorbing the Immortal Qi, but if this situation continued, their daily cultivation would be severely affected.

“Elder, that man is an abnormal being. He was able to absorb the Immortal Qi of the whole Martial Palace in just a dozen of minutes', leaving us with nothing. How are we going to cultivate in the future?” Someone wept.

“I think it was because Jiang Chen had yet to understand the rules of our sect in his first day of arrival. Hadn't you all found him and resolved the matter? I believe he won't do that again.” Said Niu Mang.

“‘He won't do that again?’ Elder, that man is extremely arrogant. I don't think he will ever stop what he was doing. If we were able to resolve it before this, we wouldn't have come here and seek for your help.”

Wang Tao was virtually speechless as the elder didn't seem to care at all.

“Alright, alright. Return now. Jiang Chen didn't do anything wrong anyway. It's not necessary for the Institute of Elders to get involved with this personally.”

Niu Mang prompted them to leave. The Institute of Elders normally wouldn't care about the strife amongst the disciples. Additionally, Niu Mang had a good impression of Jiang Chen and wanted to befriend this young newbie, because not everyone had the ability to absorb all the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace in an instant.

In the end, despite their reluctance, they had no choice but to leave the institute.

“Brother Wang, what should we do now? It seems like the Institute of Elders won't interfere in this matter. In my opinion, we should seek the help of the senior brothers in the inner sect. That Jiang Chen is exceedingly arrogant. We need to get him under control.”

Someone spoke. As a half-step Heaven Immortal expert and one of the top disciples in the outer sect, they had very frequent contact with some of the inner sect disciples. Given the situation where the Institute of Elders refused to lend them a hand on this matter, asking the help of some inner sect disciples was the only option left.

“Don't worry. We'll wait until tomorrow and see whether Jiang Chen continues his outrageous act. No matter how powerful and talented he is, I don't believe that he will oppose the will of all outer sect disciples.”

Said Wang Tao. There had been plenty of top geniuses in Skycloud Pavilion. None of them was foolish enough to make the whole community their enemy as that wouldn't do them any good.

The next day!

Soon after the level of Immortal Qi in Martial Palace was restored, a large number of disciples went into it, but the situation inside gave them the impulse to cough up blood. The whole tower was empty again. There wasn't a trace of Immortal Qi apart from common air.

“Damn it! That bastard came here again just now.”

“For God's Sake! He came here so early to suck away all the Immortal Qi again. This man surely did this on purpose. Motherf*cker! We can't cultivate in here today and must wait for tomorrow.”

“What if he comes much earlier than us again tomorrow? At this rate, our daily cultivation will be seriously disrupted.”

.....

It was shocking. A hungry wolf had come to their sect and rob all the cultivation resources they needed for daily cultivation. This was akin to giving the other outer sect disciples no chance of survival. If this went on, they wouldn't be able to make any kind of progress in their cultivation.

On third day, a similar thing happened. It was like Jiang Chen had already calculated when to absorbed all the Immortal Qi right after it was restored, he then ran away like nothing had ever happened.

Even though it was just the third day, plenty of disciples were driven to the edge of madness. The outer sect would be thrown into chaos if this situation was allowed to continue.

“No way. This guy is just too preposterous. He didn't even leave a bit of Immortal Qi in the palace. We can't allow it to go on like this.”

“Ai! Never expect that Jiang Chen to be so arrogant. Since he has already sent a clear message to us, we can't do anything about it.

The Institute of Elders already mentioned that they wouldn't take part in this matter, we can only seek the help of the inner sect disciples."

"Yes. We have to suppress him. Otherwise, our cultivation lives will be negatively affected."

.....

Jiang Chen's outrageous actions continued for three days straight which made him the public enemy of the outer sect disciples. He must be suppressed as soon as possible. Otherwise, no one else would have the chance to cultivate, no one in the outer sect was his opponent, let alone suppress him.

"I heard that brother Wang has a good relationship with brother Fang Hao of the inner sect. Why not we ask him to help us out?"

"Brother Fang Hao is a mid Heaven Immortal expert. He also has a certain status in the inner sect. So it isn't easy to ask for his help."

"We can't care about that anymore. How are we going to cultivate if we don't get rid of this Jiang Chen?"

.....

At this time, Wang Tao was elected to represent all the outer sect disciples.

"Okay. I will head to the inner sect now and see what brother Fang Hao has to say."

After he finished speaking, he raced towards the direction of the inner sect. At this moment, there was no way that he could avoid it anymore.

Shortly after that, two silhouettes were flying back to the outer sect and landed before the Martial Palace. A large number of outer disciples who had already gathered in the Martial Palace were astounded to see the two experts in front. One was Wang Tao and

the other was an inner sect disciple who hovered in the sky.

The incomer wasn't Fang Hao, but an early Heaven Immortal expert that everyone recognized, Liang Hong. He had been the follower of Fang Hao. So, he must be sent by Fang Hao himself. Everyone could see the rationale behind this. Given Fang Hao's status, he naturally wouldn't come personally to deal with an outer sect disciple. Therefore, everybody thought that it was already enough for an early Heaven Immortal to suppress Jiang Chen.

“Greet brother Liang.”

The outer sect disciples there moved forward and greeted with cupped fists. They wouldn't dare show any signs of disrespect in front of a Heaven Immortal inner sect disciple.

“En, where's that Jiang Chen?”

Liang Hong asked. He had already heard about the incidents related to Jiang Chen. Today was a good chance for him to meet this man. He was curious to find out what kind of figure Jiang Chen really was.

“That bastard must be staying in the dormitory area.” Someone said.

“Come on, bring me there.”

Liang Hong's Qi shook and radiated out.

Chapter 1157 – Being Humiliated by the Dog

Following behind Liang Hong, glimmers of hope started to ignite in their heads. Liang Hong was after all a true Heaven Immortal expert and a noble inner sect disciple. No matter how arrogant Jiang Chen was, he needed to lower his head in front of Liang Hong.

Without everyone's surprise, Jiang Chen was still basking in the warm sunshine with his legs crossed in the middle of the square. He was certainly enjoying his leisure time which gave the other disciples the urge to spurt out a mouthful of blood. That was too shameless. How could he sit there and enjoy his time after robbing all of their cultivation resources? although he was also one of the outer sect disciples, the difference between him and them was too big.

“Brother Liang, he's that Jiang Chen.”

Wang Tao pointed to Jiang Chen and said maliciously.

“He sure is arrogant.”

Liang Hong harrumphed coldly. How dare this lounging bastard ignore his arrival? That was akin to ignoring his existence and not putting him in his eyes. There was no way that a noble inner sect disciple like Liang Hong could accept this kind of treatment.

Liang Hong strode in front of Jiang Chen and yelled. “Get your a*s down here!”

“Big Yellow, who's making all the blaring noise here? Quickly help me get rid of it. I'm having my own beautiful dream.”

Without lifting his head and opening his eyes, he spoke in a strange tone.

Liang Hong's expression darkened instantly after hearing this. He felt like his lungs were about to explode. This was his first time seeing this. He had faced many kinds of powerful outer sect

disciples, but no matter how powerful or talented those geniuses were, they still hadn't forgotten to pay their respect to an inner sect disciple.

Big Yellow shook his tail and body while talking towards Liang Hong casually, and said disdainfully. "What is a son of a b*tch like you shouting so loudly here? Is this place your territory? Don't you know that it's immoral to bark around like a dog when other people is asleep? As an inner sect disciple, don't you know that we shouldn't cross other people's line?"

"Huh..."

The whole crowd was shocked. How could this dog say that Liang Hong was crossing the line when he just said a word? How brazen was this?

Plus, what was this dog? How could this dog be so arrogant that he didn't even put an inner sect disciple of Skycloud Pavilion in his eyes? there was a saying that said, a dog would always learn what its lord did.

Liang Hong's face turned red. Everyone could already feel his anger rising constantly. It was beyond his capacity. He was supposed to suppress the target, but instead, he was disdained and humiliated by a dog of Jiang Chen.

That was right. It was a humiliation. He was a dignified inner sect disciple and a Heaven Immortal expert. How could he still live his life after this?

"Dammit! This dog is so arrogant! Is it looking down on us?"

"F*ck! How dare this dog humiliate brother Liang Hong openly? That's preposterous!"

"Kill and skin him! We will eat dog's meat today."

.....

Countless of outer sect disciples were gnashing their teeth,

wanting to peel Big Yellow's skin and eat him raw, but that didn't concern Big Yellow at all. He was still showing the face of arrogance, just like Jiang Chen.

"Humph! You are surely outrageous Jiang Chen. I heard that you were able to escape a late Heaven Immortal expert pursuit, but I didn't know your combat power. Your actions have caused indignation amongst the outer sect disciples. You have damaged the benefits of the whole outer sect and became a public enemy. If you apologize and make the necessary compensation now, perhaps you may still have a chance." Liang Hong harrumphed coldly.

"How can you people be so shameless? I have said not to create disturbance while the other person is still sleeping. How can a dignified Heaven Immortal inner sect disciple have no sense of understanding at all?" Big Yellow continued.

Hong.....

Liang Hong couldn't stand it anymore. Not even a person that is more patient than him could stand the scolding of this brazen dog.

"Courting death! I will peel your skin off alive first."

Liang Hong raged. Immortal Qi shot out of his body. Immediately, he struck out a large brilliant palm that looked like a huge cage at Big Yellow.

"Ai! How dare you attack master dog? You must be getting fed up with your life already, isn't it?"

Big Yellow darted a glare at Liang Hong and charged forward with his head. Seeing Big Yellow using his skull to meet his palm strike, a trace of a cold smile was seen on Liang Hong's face. This dog sure was barbaric and laughable for using such a destructive way. He was almost certain that Big Yellow's skull would instantly be broken by his palm strike.

Unfortunately, he hadn't seen Big Yellow's hard and solid head before this. Or else, he wouldn't be able to make a joke about it.

Bang!

Liang Hong's large palms landed on Big Yellow's head, and was instantly crushed. Big Yellow's speed didn't slow down. With tremendous amount of force, his head smashed against Liang Hong's chest in a blink.

“Argh.....”

Ka Cha!

Accompanied by a terrible cry, Liang Hong was knocked off into the air and fell heavily 100 meters away. He spurted out blood, wriggled a few times before passing out. Many outer sect disciples could hear the bone cracking sound coming from him. Sure enough, a large portion of Liang Hong's chest was dented.

He had to thank Big Yellow for holding his power back, or else, the entire body of Liang Hong would've been penetrated by Big Yellow's head. His head was a true divine weapon that was on par with an Immortal Weapon. His current cultivation was already at the early Heaven Immortal realm. It was impossible for him to get a match with anyone who was on the same level as him.

“What?”

Looking at the motionless Liang Hong on the ground, the sound of countless exclamations immediately rang out. They turned at gaped at the dog, trying to study his dog once more. They all knew that Liang Hong was a powerful Heaven Immortal expert. It must be a joke that he was sent flying by a dog's mere head.

“What are you all looking at? Do you want to try my power also?”

Big Yellow showed a majestic face and warned them to stop looking at him and leave. Wang Tao carried Liang Hong and left speedily. This dog was too ferocious, just like Jiang Chen. If they continued to stay here, no one could tell what consequences they would get.

Outside the square was countless of pale-faced outer sect disciples

gathering around. The fainted Liang Hong hadn't woken up yet. Without the help of pills, he would surely take half-a-month to wake up.

“How could that dog be so powerful? I think this was the reason that Jiang Chen acted so arrogantly.”

“Brother Wang, what do we do now? Not even brother Liang can suppress Jiang Chen. We are out of options now.”

“That's right. That bastard was too arrogant. We won't lead a normal life with him staying in the outer sect.”

.....

Chapter 1158 – Swing the Man at the Institute of Elders

“I’ll make a trip to the inner sect and ask brother Fang Hao if he can help in suppressing Jiang Chen.”

Wang Tao gritted his teeth, decided to carry Liang Hong back to Fang Hao in the inner sect. In his point of view, Fang Hao was a powerful mid Heaven Immortal expert. If he agreed to help, Jiang Chen would definitely be suppressed, but if he refused, they would be really out of options.

In the inner sect.

Inside a quiet courtyard, there was a white-clothed man that looked like twenty plus year old. He had a clean face and a brilliant pair of eyes. Currently, his attention was focused on the body that was lying motionlessly on the ground.

“Wang Tao, are you sure that dog used his mere head to cause Liang Hong such injuries?” Asked Fang Hao.

“Yes, brother Fang. We didn’t imagine that dog would be so ferocious, even more ferocious than Jiang Chen. Plus, both of their attitude were extremely arrogant, absolutely not putting us in their eyes and were lawless, like they had become the king of the outer sect.”

Wang Tao was disgruntled, but he had to admit the ability of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. He told everything that happened on the scene without any attempting to hide anything.

“That’s a very powerful dog. Observe Liang Hong’s injuries. It showed that the dog held back his power. Which means this dog’s combat strength is relatively on par with mine.

Said Fang Hao. It was astonishing that an expert was able to tell one’s strength by just observing the injuries. This was also what shocked Fang Hao. Ever since Liang Hong entered the inner sect,

he had been following him. He knew very well how strong Liang Hong was, but he couldn't even stand one strike from Big Yellow. He was thinking of the possibility that he might not be Big Yellow's opponent as well.

“No way. Even if this dog is very powerful, how can he have the same strength as brother Fang? I hope brother Fang can teach Jiang Chen and that dog a good lesson on behalf of all the outer sect disciples. In that case, brother Fang will build a great prestige in the outer sect which is very beneficial to the both of us.”

Wang Tao said pleadingly. He had no other choice. Ever since Jiang Chen entered the outer sect three days ago, it had caused the entire outer sect to fall into chaos. None of the existing disciple was able to cultivate. Every one of them was complaining incessantly. The whole situation had been filled with noises of complains.

“Wang Tao, I'm afraid that I'm not competent enough to teach those two a lesson.”

Fang Hao shook his head.

“What?”

Wang Tao looked at Fang Hao with astonishment. If Fang Hao refused to interfere in this matter, did that mean he was allowing Jiang Chen to act as lawless as before? And could that mean that Fang Hao was afraid of Jiang Chen as well?

“It isn't because I'm afraid of Jiang Chen. I can't interfere in this matter for two reasons. Firstly, I already have an estimation of the dog's strength. Even if I interfere in this matter personally, I may not be a match for him. To put it bluntly, if the unfortunate side happened – I would be defeated by a dog – wouldn't it put me to shame. I can't afford to let that happen. Even if I win, there's nothing for me to be proud about. Secondly, I have already investigated the background of that Jiang Chen. He was recommended and brought here personally by Fu Hui. Fu Hui has

very good connections in the inner sect. I don't want to get into conflict with Fu Hui because of this."

Said Fang Hao. These two reasons were straightforward and true, especially the first reason. If he chose to pick a fight with them, he must have the certainty that he would win. Once he lost the match, his reputation would surely fall drastically. He would then become a laughing stock in the whole inner sect. On the contrary, if he won the match, there was nothing for him to gain, because after all, he was a mid Heaven Immortal genius in the inner sect.

Adding the fact that Jiang Chen was personally recommended by Fu Hui, it deterred him even more from provoking Jiang Chen. Therefore, no matter from which angle it was viewed, he had all the reasons to not make a move.

"Ai! If brother Fang is not even willing to help, the whole outer sect will be ruled by Jiang Chen."

Wang Tao couldn't help but sigh. He wasn't a fool. He understood the concerns of Fang Hao. Whether it was Jiang Chen or that dog, they were way too powerful. If he put himself into Fang Hao's position, he too wouldn't make a move.

Moreover, as a dignified inner sect disciple, it wouldn't be a pleasant news for a mid Heaven Immortal expert to confront an outer sect disciple. They were the geniuses who should be working diligently in breaking through into the higher realms instead of helping the outer sect settle their miniature strife.

As a matter of fact, even if Jiang Chen became the ruler of the outer sect, as long as he didn't affect the daily cultivation of the other disciples, it wouldn't be a problem at all, but the current situation was just too overbearing. Jiang Chen had cut off their supply of resources, not leaving even a tiny bit for them. At this rate, the outer sect was going to be very unproductive in the long run.

"Although I can't confront them, I can give you an idea." Said

Fang Hao with a smile.

“What idea?” Wang Tao’s expression froze.

“It isn’t appropriate for an inner sect disciple to get involved in the matters of the outer sect. If Jiang Chen is an inner disciple and acts so arrogantly, there will naturally be countless of us who will make him understand the word ‘miserable’. Unfortunately, he is an outer sect disciple. We will only become laughing stock if we go and deal with him personally. The one who can truly suppress him is the Institute of Elders. Regardless of how arrogant that Jiang Chen is, he won’t dare offend the Institute of Elders. One should know that there are late Heaven Immortal experts guarding the Institute. You can go to the Institute and sue him, letting the Institute to decide for you.” Said Fang Hao.

“We have already sought for their counsel before this, but they were uninterested in helping us. Brother Fang, you know that the Institute always doesn’t care about the strife amongst the disciples. Although Jiang Chen has crossed our line by absorbing all of the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace, he hasn’t committed any crime.” Wang Tao shook his head.

“Like you said, it was the time before this. Now, Jiang Chen is getting more and more arrogant. You can gather a large number of people to visit the Institute every day to pressure them. Then, they will have no choice but to lend you all a hand. As outer sect elders, they can’t allow the entire outer sect to be thrown into chaos, otherwise they won’t be able to explain it to their superiors.” Said Fang Hao.

Wang Tao contemplated for a while and nodded. “It seems like this is the only way left. I will take my leave.”

After bidding goodbye, he returned to the outer sect. This time, he prepared to gather plenty of outer sect disciples and head over to the Institute of Elders to sue Jiang Chen. At this current moment, there was only the Institute of Elders that could help

them.

In the afternoon of that day, hundreds of outer sect disciples gathered at the entrance of the Institute, blocking the path entirely. The Institute of Elders was a supreme and unparalleled existence in the sect. No one would dare to disrespect the institute. For the first time in the history of Skycloud Pavilion, such a large-scale rally was happening outside the Institute of Elders.

Chapter 1159 – Niu Mang Makes the Trip Personally

There were only Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in the large dormitory area. The other disciples had went to the rally outside the Institute of Elders for their common interest. As for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, both of them had become the enemy of the community.

“Little Chen, those disciples have gone to the institute and sued us.” Said Big Yellow with a smile.

“En, this is what I wanted. Just wait. We’ll wait for the Institute to call for us.”

Jiang Chen had a casual look. If these people didn’t hold a rally outside the Institute of Elders to complain about Jiang Chen, his three days of effort would be in vain.

“Jie Jie You sure is a sinister brat, but I like it.”

Big Yellow chuckled delightfully. He liked Jiang Chen’s wisdom and crafty mind that always manipulate people’s decisions.

Standing before the gate of the Institute were hundreds of outer sect disciples. Inevitably, the whole scene turned chaotic. These outer sect disciples were gnashing their teeth, Jiang Chen was the person they hated the most for ruining the conducive cultivation environment in the outer sect.

“Not even brother Fang is willing to help us, we can only rely on ourselves. The Institute of Elders has to provide us an explanation for this. Otherwise, we will keep on rallying outside their premise.”

“That’s right. That Jiang Chen has already gone mad. If the Institute of Elders doesn’t solve this problem right now, all of us won’t have a chance to cultivate in the future anymore.”

“Abominable! Jiang Chen must be punished and must pay the price for what he did.”

.....

The resentment among the crowd was unbridled. No one as insane as Jiang Chen had ever existed in the sect since the establishment of Skycloud Pavilion.

Creak!

The door of the Institute of Elders was opened. Three elders emerged on the doorway. All three of them were early Heaven Immortal experts. The leader amongst them was Niu Mang.

“What are you all doing here instead of cultivating?”

Niu Mang yelled with some anger. The action of these disciples was already a disrespect to the Institute of Elders. If it wasn't because there were too many of them in this rally, the elders would have punished them on the spot.

Cultivate? Where else could they cultivate at? The elders should suggest a place for us to cultivate so that us disciples didn't have to stand here.

“Elder Niu, that Jiang Chen is a frenzied being. He has already absorbed all of the Immortal Qi in the Martial palace for three days straight, robbing our chance of cultivating. We plead the Institute of Elders to seek justice for us.”

“We plead the elders to suppress and punish Jiang Chen for us. The Martial Palace is a public place of cultivation, it doesn't belong to Jiang Chen alone.”

“That's correct, elders. We can't live like this. That Jiang Chen is way too strong. We can't even fight against him. Many of us were injured by him and even an inner sect disciple couldn't stand against him. And that dog of his was truly powerful. We can't afford to have to fight them. Otherwise, we wouldn't come here ourselves.”

“I plead for the Institute to take charge and make sure that the thief get what he deserve.”

“Jiang Chen must be punished so that the outer sect can become peaceful again.”

.....

Every disciple's emotion was churning inside of them. Some of them who had been beaten by Jiang Chen were shedding tears when they thought about the suffering they had been through.

The scene was so spectacular that it made the three elders stand there like solid rocks. Nothing like this had ever happened since the Institute of Elders took charge of the outer sect.

“Ai! Genius always breaks the law. It seems like another twisted devil king is going to be born in Skycloud Pavilion soon.” An elder couldn't help but sigh.

“It seems like our Institute has to interfere in this matter. Or else, the whole outer sect will be thrown into chaos. I would like to see what that Jiang Chen really is. How dare he acted so ruthlessly to them! I'll go and find him.” An elder spoke.

“Let me go to see him. I have already met him once. I was the one who handed his identity jade card.”

Said Niu Mang. Wang Tao and a few other disciples had come to the Institute to find him before. At that time, he thought that it was probably another tiny conflict amongst the disciples. So he didn't put that in his heart. It was beyond his expectation that a newcomer would cause such a conflict to this extent.

“Well, you all can leave now. I will personally find Jiang Chen in a while. I believe he will listen to this old man.”

Niu Mang waved at the crowd, asking them to leave, then, he headed towards the dormitory area.

The outer sect disciples finally calmed themselves down when an

elder of the Institute agreed to solve the matter. They started to see a glimmer of hope. As far as they were concerned, no matter how arrogant Jiang Chen was, he would never dare disrespect the elders. The same went to the other monstrous disciples who were once in the outer sect. None of them had the nerve to oppose the elders.

On the square of the dormitory area, Jiang Chen was still sitting on the rattan chair. Next to him lay a dog which had already dozed off. It seemed like the both of them were just trying to kill the time by doing nothing.

When Niu Mang saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, his face revealed a smile. His gaze deliberately fell on Big Yellow. When they first met, he didn't pay this dog much attention, thinking that it most probably was an ordinary pet beast of Jiang Chen. It was surprising to know that the inner sect disciple, Liang Hong couldn't even withstand one strike of this dog.

Naturally, he wouldn't dare to show off himself in front of this dog. Given his combat strength, he wasn't even a suitable opponent for Liang Hong, let alone Big Yellow.

"Jiang Chen." Niu Mang called.

Jiang Chen stood up from the rattan chair and held his fists at Niu Mang. "Ah, Elder Niu Mang. I wonder what brings you here."

"Oh, Jiang Chen. We are all smart people. I think you already know what I came here for. The outer sect has already become chaotic because of your actions. If this continues, the Institute of Elders will lose its reputation. I hope you can consider the reputation of the institute by being a little more modest and generous."

Niu Mang said straightforwardly. Like he said, every one of them were intelligent people. So it was senseless to beat around the bush.

“Elder Niu, that was just how I cultivate. I don’t think that I have violated any of the rules. Plus, they were the ones who pick a fight with me first. I have yet to go to the institute to sue them.” Said Jiang Chen with an aggrieved face.

“Jiang Chen, I know that you aren’t guilty, but the current situation is very peculiar. Your ability to absorb Immortal Qi is just too powerful, it has affected the peace of the outer sect. I hope that you can leave some for them. If you become the enemy of the community, it won’t do you any good.”

Niu Mang said bitterly. A genius like Jiang Chen would definitely have immeasurable achievements in the future. Niu Mang was merely a puny outer sect elder. He wouldn’t want to offend this genius because of this tiny matter.

“En, alright, I understand. I’ll think about it carefully.”

Jiang Chen said plainly, then turned and headed towards his dorm, leaving Niu Mang behind.

Chapter 1160 – Grand Elder Yuan Kui

“Ai!”

Niu Mang made another sigh. He could only turn and leave. He didn't take Jiang Chen's arrogance personally as he knew that geniuses were born with this proud behaviour. As an elder of the outer sect, he had seen too many of such geniuses. Jiang Chen was considered as the one who had given a lot of respect to an elder. Although Niu Mang was an elder in the Institute of Elders, he wasn't qualified to represent the institute.

“Why didn't you tell the old bastard your conditions just now?” Big Yellow asked, puzzled.

“What difference will it make? Does Niu Mang have the power to decide for the institute? I have to wait for the one who is in charge of the institute to come and look for me.”

Jiang Chen smiled casually. He knew Niu Mang's position in the institute very well. It wouldn't change anything even if he stated his conditions out. His demand to enter the inner sect by passing the Iron Puppet Array wasn't something that Niu Mang could decide. That was why he skipped all the unnecessary crap with this elder.

After Niu Mang returned to the institute, he told those outer sect disciples that Jiang Chen had already agreed to him and that he wouldn't absorbed all of the Immortal Qi, but that didn't seem to satisfy them. They, after all thought that Jiang Chen had to receive some kind of punishment.

However, they understood that geniuses would always have special privileges. As long as Jiang Chen didn't absorbed all the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace and disrupting all of their cultivation, it would be fine even if he becomes the king in the outer sect. They just needed to remember not to provoke this ruthless genius.

However, things weren't going as smoothly as they had expected. It turned out that Niu Mang was truly not significant enough to suppress a lawless newcomer.

The next day, when a large number of outer sect disciples rushed to the Martial Palace, the same situation happened. It left all of them dumbfounded. Many of them hadn't progressed, they weren't able to cultivate in the past three days, most of them wanted to recover their lost time by cultivating as much as they could.

“Argh...it's that bastard again. He sucked all the Immortal Qi dry again! This is driving me crazy!”

“Lawless! It is truly lawless! Does this son of a b*tch really think that the outer sect belongs to him? He didn't even listen to the elder.”

“What now? This man has gone completely insane and has no scruples in his actions at all. He has robbed all of our cultivation resources.”

.....

The outer sect was thrown into turmoil once more. Many of them had the urge to find Jiang Chen immediately and shred him to pieces, but they wouldn't dare to do so because they were still sane people, and could imagine the consequences.

Likewise, they blocked the front gate of the institute again. There was no one else that they could rely besides the Institute of Elders.

Unfortunately, the elders were reluctant to interfere in this matter anymore, so the gate didn't open.

In the following three days, Jiang Chen became even worse. Every day, he was the first to arrive the Martial Palace and sucked away all the Immortal Qi, leaving nothing for the other disciples. What he did had completely angered them.

This time, the whole outer sect was in chaos, a tremendous

chaos. Swearing and cursing could be heard everywhere. The huge number of outer sect disciples had made the area outside the premise of the institute congested.

“Help us chase away that Immortal Qi sucker, elders!”

“I beg the elders to return the peaceful outer sect to us and get that Jiang Chen out of here.”

“We can’t live like this. We absolutely can’t. If the Institute of Elders still refused to resolve this issue, we will kill ourselves in front of your gate.”

“That’s right. We will commit collective suicide. My blade is already ready to do so. I’ll be the first to end my life.”

.....

Frenzy. The entire outer sect had gone mad.

There were more than twenty elders gathering inside the institute which was very rare because there wouldn’t even be a meeting every year.

The blaring voices of the outer sect disciples were crystal clear. It caused each and every elder to frown and have a headache. Nothing as difficult as this had ever happened since they took charge of the outer sect.

“What’s with that Jiang Chen? Why didn’t he learn from the previous incident? Isn’t he deliberately stirring the whole situation up?”

An elder in a large robe spoke with great displeasure. He was sitting on the seat of honour. His cultivation had already reached the peak of late Heaven Immortal realm, one more step to hit the half-step Divine Immortal realm. He was the Grand Elder of the outer sect, Yuan Kui, the person who was in charge of the whole Institute of Elders. Given his identity, he was also given the right to speak for the inner sect.

As the head of the institute, he had never manage things personally. As such, it was imaginable how serious the trouble Jiang Chen had caused this time to force the Grand Elder into emergence.

“Grand Elder, this matter must be resolved quickly. Or else, I’m afraid that the chaos in the outer sect will be spread to the higher ups.”

“It’s true, Grand Elder. That Jiang Chen is too arrogant to begin with. Regardless of how talented he is, he still needs to show some humility. Presently, he has infuriated all the outer sect disciples. So if we don’t settle this matter quickly, our institute will suffer a huge loss in reputation.”

.....

All the elders agreed that the matter had to be resolved as soon as possible. Otherwise, the chaos would only grow larger and disturb the higher ups as well.

“Elder Niu Mang, go and summon Jiang Chen here. I would like to see if the genius who destroyed the ore mine has three heads and six arms.”

Yuan Kui spoke to Niu Mang. At this critical moment, he felt compelled to meet this Jiang Chen personally.

“Yes, Grand Elder.”

Niu Mang held his fists at Yuan Kui and left the compound. As soon as he stepped out of the gate, he was surrounded by the disciples.

“Don’t panic, all of you. This time, the Grand Elder has agreed to resolve the matter on behalf of you all. He has ordered me to bring Jiang Chen back to see him.”

Said Niu Mang loudly. And then, he flew towards the dormitory area.

“Good, Grand Elder has finally intervened in this matter this time. He will surely be able to solve our problem.”

“There must be a settlement today. Or else, we will continue to block the gate of this premise.”

“Count me in. We can’t let this problem go unresolved. Our cultivation has already been severely affected.”

.....

Commotion and uproar sounded from the crowd, but they felt a lot more secured after hearing that the Grand Elder was taking this matter into his own hands. In the outer sect, the Grand Elder had very high reputation. None of the monstrous geniuses would dare to disrespect this elder unless that genius had decided to leave the sect.

In the dormitory area, Niu Mang had already found Jiang Chen in the previous place. But this time, Jiang Chen wasn’t lounging on the rattan chair. He was standing with his hands behind his back and smiling at Niu Mang’s arrival, as if he had been expecting him. Jiang Chen had never missed anything in his calculation.

Chapter 1161 – Difficult! That's Too Difficult!

“Greet Elder Niu.” Jiang Chen held his fists and greeted Niu Mang without waiting for the elder to speak.

“Jiang Chen, this old man has already warned you before this, asking you to be modest, but you became worse, causing an unprecedented turmoil in the outer sect. All the disciples in the outer sect have gathered outside the front gate of the institute. This matter has even alarmed the Grand Elder. Your presence is required by him.” Said Niu Mang.

“Okay, lead the way Elder Niu.”

Said Jiang Chen with a smile. His response surprised Niu Mang. He thought that Jiang Chen was going to show a face of fear after knowing that Grand Elder had personally intervened in this matter. This young man didn't show any sign of concern, instead, there was a trace of delight on his face.

Niu Mang couldn't help but sigh in his heart, saying to himself that it wouldn't be easy to understand the mind of geniuses.

Jiang Chen arrived outside the institute along with Niu Mang. This time, he didn't bring Big Yellow along because not every place allowed pets entering it.

The outer sect disciples had an expression of joy on their faces when they saw Jiang Chen. In their point of view, the Grand Elder would surely punish Jiang Chen severely for his crimes.

While watching Jiang Chen and Niu Mang entering the institute, someone gritted his teeth and said, “You must punish him well. Otherwise, it will be hard to get rid of our hatred.”

“That's right, this bastard has made us lose a few days of cultivation. It will be unjust if he doesn't receive the punishment he deserves.”

“Punishment? From the aspect of reason, Jiang Chen has done

nothing wrong. Absorbing the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace isn't going against the rule. I am not confident that he will receive any kind of punishment. I'll be satisfied as long as he stops making trouble in the Martial Palace."

.....

Speaking of hatred, neither of the disciple on the scene didn't hate Jiang Chen. After all, nothing as big had ever occurred in the outer sect. Jiang Chen had affected their normal cultivation and that was why everyone hated him. However, there were some wise disciples amongst them that knew that Jiang Chen hadn't done anything wrong. What Jiang Chen did was cultivate normally. They couldn't blame someone just because his cultivation method was a lot stronger than them.

Jiang Chen strode into the main hall, glancing at nearly twenty Heaven Immortal elders. His facial expression remained unchanged.

It seems like there are stronger experts in the institute. There's even a late Heaven Immortal elder.

Muttered Jiang Chen in his heart. The higher the cultivation base of the Grand Elder, the more delighted he was, because high cultivation was equivalent to authority.

The eyes of the elders fell on Jiang Chen the moment he stepped into the main hall. They had already heard about his name a long time ago. They all wanted to see closely how the guy who dared to destroy the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect looked like.

There was surprise in all of the elders' eyes. Anyone who saw him for the first time would be shocked because he was too young and looked liked a scholar. Judging from his appearance, it was very hard to relate him to the evil and ruthless man.

"Never thought that he's such a young genius. And his facial expression didn't even change in the slightest after seeing so many

of us. He may have a very rare disposition.”

“This man is indeed an outstanding talent. A genius like him will have boundless of achievements in the future, however, he’s not very good in dealing with people. He has offended the entire outer sect just after his arrival in Skycloud Pavilion. Ai!”

“It’s truly rare for a youth to have such composure. One should know that this is the Institute of Elders. Any outer sect disciple who came here became flustered.”

.....

This was the first impression that Jiang Chen had given them, which could be said to be quite good. The institute was always pleased to see the appearance of new genius because that will also raise their reputation.

All of them, including Yuan Kui was impressed that Jiang Chen was able to remain calm despite being in front of so many Heaven Immortal elders. As a matter of fact, none of these people could make Jiang Chen nervous. If they really engaged in a fight, they couldn’t defeat Jiang Chen even after combining all of their strengths.

“Jiang Chen, this is Grand Elder Yuan Kui.” Niu Mang said in a low tone.

“Greet Grand Elder, I wonder what’s the reason the Grand Elder summoned me here?”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at the Grand Elder and said formally.

He didn’t know the reason why he was summoned here? How could his bastard play dumb at this time?

“Jiang Chen, I see that you are also a clever person. You should already know the reason of you being summoned here. You have offended the entire outer sect just after you arrive, throwing everything into chaos, giving us a hard time to focus on our cultivation. How do you think should we solve this matter?”

Yuan Kui showed a face of solemnity and said coldly. In front of any disciple, he wouldn't forget to show his authority.

"I don't quite understand the meaning that the Grand Elder is trying to imply. I definitely don't wish to see the whole outer sect being thrown into chaos. Ever since I joined the Skycloud Pavilion, I have been performing my cultivation as usual, but due to my special cultivation method, I always needed a massive amount of Immortal Qi everytime I cultivate, which means that the other disciples won't have a chance to absorb any Immortal Qi. You can't just blame me because of this. And as for the injured disciples, I swear to the Heavens that it was them who attacked me first. I was only defending myself. Likewise, you also can't blame me for that because it would be foolish of me to just stand there and wait to be beaten by them."

Jiang Chen said with an aggrieved face. The Institute of Elders was a place for reasoning. Since he had grasped the reasons behind his actions firmly, he wouldn't have any problem explaining the actions that he made.

"Uh..."

After the cheap and well-behaved words came out, all the elders who were present were stunned and shocked. They were deeply aware of how shameless this guy was, but what he said seemed to make them unable to refute it, what he just said was the fact. He definitely wasn't guilty for absorbing the Immortal Qi. He also wasn't guilty for defending himself.

In that case, what was the reason for punishing him? There seemed to be no reason for doing so.

Should they impose restrictions on him every time he entered the Martial Palace? That would be too unfair. In the history of Skycloud Pavilion, there had never been a case where they had to prevent a disciple from entering the Martial Palace for cultivation. If restrictions were imposed on those monstrous geniuses, who

else would want to join the Skycloud Pavilion?

This was tough. How could such a strange being exist in the outer sect? Punishment was no longer an option, but they couldn't impose restrictions on Jiang Chen too. So how were they going to deal with the outer sect disciples outside?

No doubt, this was indeed a difficult case to resolve. This was the first time that the Institute of Elders ever felt troubled by a small matter. It was ridiculous that they were feeling helpless at the current moment.

Chapter 1162 – Jiang Chen's Condition

Looking at the melancholic expression that was shown on these elders' faces, Jiang Chen was pleased. Everything went according to his plan. The current situation was what he wanted the most and was one of his plans.

“Jiang Chen, you are right about the nature of the matter, but the fact remains that you are the main cause of the chaos in the outer sect. I think that you'd better not go and practice in the Martial Palace in the future so that the outer sect can return to its peaceful days.”

Yuan Kui took a while contemplating before he made a decision. The current outer sect was in disorder. He needed to figure out a way to resolve this matter quickly, finding the root cause of the problem and came up with a solution, which was to prevent Jiang Chen from entering the Martial Palace.

All of them had to admit that they were astounded by Jiang Chen's ability to absorb all of the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace in such a short period of time. They couldn't imagine how he did that, but they knew there were some geniuses in this world that couldn't be measured using common sense. This type of geniuses always had their own trump cards and means.

“I can accept that option, but the Grand Elder has to find another place for me to cultivate.”

Said Jiang Chen. His tone was calm and respectful, not showing any signs of opposing the Grand Elder's decision. What he said was reasonable. If he wasn't allowed to enter the Martial Palace, he needed to cultivate somewhere else. So it wasn't excessive for him to request another place for cultivation.

After listening to Jiang Chen, the Grand Elder exchanged glances with the other elders. Eventually, they couldn't help but shake their heads. It must be a joke. The Martial Palace contained the

richest Immortal Qi in the outer sect and that wasn't enough for Jiang Chen to absorb. Where else could he go to cultivate?

If they failed to provide a place for Jiang Chen's cultivation, he certainly wouldn't accept it. When the other disciples could cultivate, but he couldn't, it would be no different than what he did to the others previously.

This was something that all the elders understood. A monstrous genius like Jiang Chen would have immeasurable achievements in the future. As an outer sect elder, they knew very well what their position was. Even the most honourable Grand Elder, Yuan Hui wouldn't be willing to offend a genius like Jiang Chen.

Then again, where else could Jiang Chen cultivate? For a monstrous genius like Jiang Chen, only the inner sect had the capacity to accommodate him.

"I see that every elder is finding this matter difficult to deal with. So, I would like to suggest a solution to you all that can guarantee fairness to all." Jiang Chen said when he saw the opportunity.

"Oh? Why not you tell us more about your solution?" Yuan Kui looked at Jiang Chen with curiosity.

"It's very simple. Let me challenge the Iron Dummy Array. As long as I can join the inner sect, the outer sect will return to its peace. This will not only give the other disciples the chance to cultivate, but also me. It is a win-win situation. I suppose that every elder here is already very clear that the outer sect can no longer keep me given my current strength. Although I'm just an Earth Immortal expert, I already possess the combat strength of a Heaven Immortal expert."

Said Jiang Chen. As a matter of fact, he had done all those things just to create a chance to challenge the Iron Dummy Array, because there was no way that he could enter the inner sect by following the rules of the sect.

“No way. You have just gotten to Skycloud Pavilion. According to the rules, you aren’t eligible to challenge the Iron Dummy Array yet or you will violate the rules.”

“That’s right. Any disciple who is in the sect for less than a year aren’t qualified to challenge the Iron Dummy Array. This is the rule of Skycloud Pavilion. Your idea isn’t plausible, Jiang Chen.”

.....

Several elders shook their heads disapprovingly. They thought that Jiang Chen would come up with a good solution, but what he said was going against the very rule of the sect.

“Rules are dead but people are alive. Plus, if I continue to stay in the outer sect, I’m certain that I will go to the Martial Palace every day.” Said Jiang Chen.

After hearing this, most of the elders couldn’t help but roll their eyes, but judging from the development of the situation, if Jiang Chen really stayed in the outer sect for another year, the result would be beyond imagination. Furthermore, they had no reason to ban him from entering the Martial Palace to cultivate. According to the rules, every disciple in the outer sect was qualified to enter the Martial Palace, and the absorption of the Immortal Qi would depend entirely on the disciple’s ability.

If one claimed that Jiang Chen broke the rules by challenging the Iron Dummy Array, one should also realise that banning Jiang Chen from entering the Martial Palace to cultivate was also another rule-breaking act.

“Jiang Chen, the Iron Dummy Array isn’t an easy task. You are new here and surely don’t know the scariness of the array. In the history of the sect, only very few geniuses succeeded.” Said the Grand Elder.

“This is my choice.” Said Jiang Chen resolutely.

“Alright, I will allow you to challenge the Iron Dummy Array.”

The Grand Elder contemplated for a moment and said.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He had never thought that the Grand Elder would be so assertive in making decisions. This had instantly improved his impression of him.

“Grand Elder, this has never happened before in the history of the sect.”

“That's right. Moreover, the Iron Dummy Array is under the control of the Institute of Inner sect Elders. Anyone who ever challenged the array will be personally supervised by the inner sect elders.”

The other elders began to voice their concerns out, which made Jiang Chen harrumphed coldly in his heart. This bunch of old men were surely stubborn and lacked an open mind. People like them wouldn't achieved anything great wherever they went to. The Grand Elder on the other hand was a shrewd person. He knew how to weigh the problem of the frenzied outer sect disciples outside and Jiang Chen. If he could get Jiang Chen into the inner sect through the Iron Dummy Array, it would be good for either them. Sending Jiang Chen away was akin to sending a big trouble away.

Yuan Kui waved, gesturing the others not to speak anymore. He then shifted his gaze at Jiang Chen. “Jiang Chen, I will allow you to challenge the array. As for the Institute of the Inner sect Elders, I will handle them personally, but you have to promise me one thing.”

“No problem. If I failed the Iron Dummy Array, I will never step into the Martial Palace, disrupting the other disciples' cultivation.”

Jiang Chen was intelligent enough to take the words out of Yuan Kui's mouth before he spoke. As for the Iron Dummy Array, although he was very curious about it, he didn't put that array in his eyes. He had very strong combat power after all. With his dragon-form, he could easily kill Yuan Kui if he used his full strength.

Yuan Kui's eyes began to be filled with admiration when he looked at Jiang Chen. It was always a very pleasing thing to converse with smart people because there were some words that you didn't have to speak directly.

“Alright. Since you have already agreed to it, you can return to your dorm now. Tomorrow, come over to this compound and I will bring you to the Iron Dummy Array in the inner sect.” Yuan Kui waved, gesturing Jiang Chen to leave.

“Thank you, Grand Elder.”

Jiang Chen held his fists and brushed his robe, he then turned and left the main hall, heading towards the front gate of the compound.

Chapter 1163 – Breaking the Iron Dummy Array (1)

In the Institute of the Inner Sect Elders.

As the Grand Elder of the outer sect, he was the only one in the outer sect who was permitted to enter the inner sect any time. This was the privilege given by the sect. At this moment, he was seeing several inner sect elders that were essentially different from him, especially their cultivation base.

In the Institute of the Outer sect Elders, the lowest cultivation base was early Heaven Immortal realm, while the highest was late Heaven Immortal realm. In the Institute of the Inner Sect Elders, the lowest realm was a half-step Divine Immortal realm, while the highest was the Grand Elder's cultivation base, late Divine Immortal realm.

Therefore, Yuan Kui looked somewhat tensed and excited after arriving here. After all, the difference between them was spectacular. These few inner sect elders in front of him were all Divine Immortal experts, certainly a lot higher than Yuan Kui's realm. The Grand Elder of the inner sect, Li Zhong was also among them, a scary late Divine Immortal expert.

Whoever reached this realm would gain boundless respect and a high status in Skycloud Pavilion.

“Grand Elder, if you really let that Jiang Chen challenge the Iron Dummy Array, it will break the rules, however, the fact that Yuan Kui has come here in person indicates that there was no other way.”

“Is that Jiang Chen really that scary? If he's really a rare genius, our sect has to nurture him nicely. It doesn't matter if it breaks the rules, but I wonder if he really has the ability to defeat the Iron Dummy Array.”

“This man has already become famous ever since the Profound Sun Sect issued the order to kill, but neither of us know how powerful he really is.”

.....

After listening to Yuan Kui's story, the elders were slightly astonished. They were the seniors in Skycloud Pavilion and had seen countless of geniuses, but none of them could compare to Jiang Chen who was just a newly-recruited outer sect disciple but had already caused trouble even to the Institute of Outer sect Elders.

“Alright, we'll break the rules for him then. If he can really pass the Iron Dummy Array, the sect will surely nurture him well. If he can't, it means that he's a person with extreme arrogance but only have superficial talent. At that time, he won't be able to enter the Martial Palace anymore.”

Grand Elder Li Zhong spoke. The Iron Dummy Array was in his control. When he said that Jiang Chen could challenge the array, then Jiang Chen could. Plus, even though Yuan Kui was an elder of the outer sect, his status had given him the privilege to talk about the Iron Dummy Array. This was also the reason he could promise Jiang Chen about it.

“Okay, when will the day of the challenge?” Said Yuan Kui.

“Three days later. I'll activate the array three days later. Frankly, it has never been activated for such a long time. I would like to see whether that Jiang Chen, who has recently caused a commotion across the entire One-Line-Sky can break out from the Iron Dummy Array.” Said Li Zhong with a smile.

On the same day, the words were spread across the whole Skycloud Pavilion's inner and outer sect, causing a great stir. Every time the Iron Dummy Array was activated, it would be regarded as something big to anyone in the sect.

Whether it was the higher ups or the disciples, they were all very concerned about those who had the nerve to challenge the Iron Dummy Array because anyone who succeeded in breaking the array would be a genius of the geniuses that was destined to have limitless future and would receive personal attention from the higher ups.

In the past, some of those who had broken past the array were taken by those Golden Immortal elders as their true disciples, causing their position and status to skyrocket.

“Have you heard about that Jiang Chen before? He is going to challenge the Iron Dummy Array. How audacious! But this is a favourable thing for us. If he succeeds, he will enter the inner sect, and thus giving us back our peace in the outer sect. Plus, he has already reached an agreement with the Grand Elder, if he fails, he will never step into the Martial Palace to cultivate anymore, and avoid disrupting our cultivation.”

“That’s correct. Such a decision is truly good for us. At least we have already resolved the problem of our future cultivation. However, it was a miracle that Jiang Chen was able to make the Institute of Elders activate the array for him.”

“Because there isn’t any solution left. That bastard is too strong to stay in the outer sect. Do you want him to be the king of the outer sect? I suddenly realised that he was sucking away all of the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace unscrupulously because he wanted to create a chance to challenge the Iron Dummy Array, forcing the Institute of Elders. He’s truly a smart person, all of us have been fooled by him.”

“Who cares? We can’t afford to offend him anyway. It’s better if he joined the inner sect.”

.....

When the people of the outer sect heard the news, each and every one of them was pleased and delighted that the disaster was finally

sent away. Even if he failed in the trial, it wouldn't affect their cultivation at all. They just have to ignore the existence of Jiang Chen if they saw him in the sect.

“This is fun. Someone is trying to challenge the Iron Dummy Array again. Let's go and watch three days later. I would like to see how this Jiang Chen looked like. He has indeed become very famous recently.”

“What's the big deal about it? He only came to Skycloud Pavilion to take refuge. If Skycloud Pavilion had refused to accept him, he would've already died in the hands of Profound Sun Sect in a matter of days. That man is overly arrogant and surely doesn't know when to stop. The outer sect has been thrown into chaos because of his recent arrival, which forced the Institute of Elders to personally activate the array for him. Humph! I don't believe that he can break through the array.”

“Don't underestimate that man. What if he really succeeds? At that time, he will directly receive the attention of the higher ups. He will probably be taken by a Golden Immortal elder as a true disciple as well.”

“True disciple? Don't joke around. Golden Immortal elders are usually very busy. Why would they waste their effort on him? In addition, do you think it's that easy to break past the array? That year, I too have gone into the Iron Dummy Array and almost died in it. If it wasn't for the elder who rescued me at that time, I would have already been torn into pieces by the savage dummies.”

.....

Some people were very optimistic about Jiang Chen, but most of them had little faith in him. After all, not many people could successfully pass the array. Plus, Jiang Chen's exceedingly arrogant attitude had left a bad impression on many disciples.

In the dormitory area of the outer sect, the first person who came looking for Jiang Chen after hearing the news was Fu Hui.

Chapter 1164 – Breaking the Iron Dummy Array (2)

“Brother Jiang, you have really caught me off guard.”

The first thing that Fu Hui did was sigh. He hadn't paid any attention to the situation in the outer sect in these past few days until the news reached his ears. And immediately, he knew that only Jiang Chen could cause such a record-breaking incident.

Fu Hui was very surprised. He thought that he had already discovered Jiang Chen's potential. After hearing the news, he found out that he had still underestimated Jiang Chen. There was certainly no genius except Jiang Chen that could suck away all the Immortal Qi in the Martial Palace all by himself.

“I have always wanted to enter the inner sect. If I didn't create some stirring incidents, I doubt that the Institute of Elders will allow me to challenge the Iron Dummy Array.” Jiang Chen shrugged.

“Haha! It seems like you have already made up your mind after I told you about the Iron Dummy Array. The current situation is already in your favour anyway. Given your ability, the outer sect certainly didn't have enough resources to accommodate you, but it isn't easy to break that array. You have to prepare well, brother Jiang.”

Fu Hui reminded. He now realised that someone like Jiang Chen would never bring peace to any place he went.

“There's nothing much to prepare. I'll just let things run their course. I too is eager to experience the legendary Iron Dummy Array, and see how difficult it actually is.”

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated. Skycloud Pavilion was the brainchild of Ouyang He and Tian Muyun was merely a thief that robbed away his fruit. Jiang Chen has two objectives now. One was to

avenge Ouyang He's murder, and lastly, help Ouyang He's sect shine and prosper and eventually became the sole ruler in One-Line-Sky.

Therefore, he had to build his own prestige in Skycloud Pavilion, taking every step to the pinnacle until he gained full control over this major power.

However, this was destined to be an incomparably difficult process. Tian Muyun had already assumed control of the sect for the past two years after all. Additionally, he had a very powerful cultivation base, extraordinary talent and had gained the trust of the majority of experts in the sect. To Jiang Chen, all these experts would be his stumbling stones and enemies.

So, the seemingly peaceful appearance of Skycloud Pavilion was doomed to turn chaotic after Jiang Chen's arrival.

Of course, this would be his biggest secret. He definitely couldn't tell that to Fu Hui.

"I believe that brother Jiang will be able to break through the Iron Dummy Array, creating another miracle."

Said Fu Hui. Jiang Chen's confident response had subconsciously influenced him. That was the kind of confidence that came from one's bones.

In the next three days, Jiang Chen didn't go to the Martial Palace as he was no longer interested in it. If it hadn't been for his own motive, he wouldn't have competed with other disciples for the Immortal Qi inside the palace.

This situation was no doubt a great thing for the disciples. They no longer had to worry for their cultivation in Jiang Chen's absence.

Three days later, many of the disciples had gathered at the border between the outer and inner sect where there was a beautiful scenery of a mountain. There was no building on the

summit except for a very ordinary palace. At the top part of the door three big words were engraved – Iron Dummy Array.

This was a very important place in Skycloud Pavilion, because anyone who could walk out of this place would be acknowledged as the genius of the geniuses and leader of the elites.

It had been a long time since someone came and challenge the array, but every time someone tried to break it, it would always attract lots of bystanders, especially the outer sect and inner sect disciples. Once the person succeeded in the trial, he would be recognized and befriended by many, but of course, there would also be some people who envied and would try different ways to humiliate the person.

Apart from that, outer sect elders and inner sect elders would also be present. The Iron Dummy Array was controlled by them. There would be even more powerful elders paying attention to the scene in secret, having a new exceptional genius in the sect was a great news. All of them understood the severity of the array and as long as the candidate broke out from the array, that candidate would be regarded as an extraordinary being.

Some powerful Golden Immortal elders would judge one's true potential according to the candidate's performance in the array. If the candidate caught their eyes, the experts would personally appear and probably take the candidate as their true disciple. To the disciple, it was undoubtedly like picking up a treasure that fell from the sky. From that point onwards, the disciple would surely soar to the top.

The front gate of the palace, several elders of inner and outer sect stood by, however Yuan Kui and Li Zhong hadn't appeared yet. Top figures like them would only normally show up at the most critical time.

There were more and more people gathering on the mountain, eager to see whether Jiang Chen could walk out of the Iron

Dummy Array. But according to the ratio of the candidates who succeeded in the past, they didn't have high hopes for Jiang Chen.

"Why hasn't that Jiang Chen appeared yet? How could he let us all wait here?"

"That's right. Could it be that he is too scared to show up now? That's going to bring him tremendous amount of shame."

"I don't think so. He was after all the one who suggested to take on this challenge. So I think he will have his own means in dealing with the array, otherwise he wouldn't dare insist on this idea."

.....

Just as the crowd was immersed in their topics, a silhouette flew over them from the direction of the outer sect in a quick speed. All of their attention was attracted to it. Their eyes fell upon the silhouette hovering in the sky. He was a white-clothed youth with a pair of burning wings and dazzling eyes. His presence had drawn amazement and admiration from the other disciples.

"Look, it's Jiang Chen. Sure enough, he can fly. That's really admirable for an Earth Immortal to have the ability to fly."

"No wonder he was able to destroy the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect and escape from the pursuit of a late Heaven Immortal expert. He indeed isn't a simple youth."

"Earth Immortal experts aren't able to control the spatial law yet, so it's rare that he can fly. Plus, it's even rarer for him to possess such a flying ability. It made people jealous seeing his extraordinary pair of wings."

.....

All the exclamations were made by the outer sect disciples. As for the inner sect disciples, they didn't admire him as much because all of these inner sect disciples were already Heaven Immortal experts. Jiang Chen on the other hand was merely an Earth Immortal expert. Anyone who was at his level or lower longed to

have the ability to fly.

The outer sect disciples' eyes were blazing with excitement. Regardless of how much they hated Jiang Chen before this, they had to admit the huge difference between them and Jiang Chen after seeing his magnificent way of arrival.

Chapter 1165 – Breaking the Iron Dummy Array (3)

At this time, there was nothing more for Jiang Chen to hide. His flying ability wasn't a secret anymore to the public since his clash with Profound Sun Sect. However, it was just that he had never shown his Flaming Wings in front of any outsider before. Now that he was challenging the Iron Dummy Array, he naturally needed to make sure that his entrance was as impressive as possible.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen kept his Flaming Wings and landed from the sky, right outside the palace. He then held his fists to greet the elders. "Disciple Jiang Chen. Greet elders."

All the elders were nodding their heads subtly. Judging from Jiang Chen's appearance and demeanour, he was certainly the best of the best and incomparable to any other peers.

Shortly after that, the Grand Elder of inner sect, Li Zhong and the Grand Elder of outer sect, Yuan Kui arrived at the same time, which had attracted a lot of respectful gazes, especially the arrival of Li Zhong. The whole scene turned silent because of the aura that was emitted from the late Divine Immortal Li Zhong wasn't bearable to all outer sect disciples.

Li Zhong's eyes shifted to Jiang Chen and spoke plainly. "Jiang Chen, I have to warn you that all the iron dummies inside have been specially trained. They have no intelligence, are cold-blooded and ruthless. Once you enter the array, you have to bear a tremendous amount of risks. There were some self-proclaimed geniuses in the past that couldn't bear the array and were crippled in the process. Since then, they have never recovered and turned into useless talent."

All these words were meant to remind him that every disciple

who had decided to challenge the Iron Dummy Array had tried their best and was proud individuals. With so many bystanders watching it today, he couldn't back down even if he failed. He couldn't afford to lose his reputation just like that.

“This disciple has already made up his mind.”

Said Jiang Chen. This was his objective. There was no reason for him to shrink back.

“Alright. Give your identity jade card to me.” Li Zhong extended his hand.

Jiang Chen turned his palm and handed it to Li Zhong.

He took Jiang Chen's identity jade card and walked towards the gate of the palace. He then inserted the card into the centre of the gate where there was a lattice with a size similar to that of the identity jade card.

Ka... Ka...

The door creaked all of a sudden and opened gradually. Perhaps it was because it hadn't been opened for a long time which made it sound particularly harsh and unpleasant. The identity jade card of Jiang Chen was radiating a golden light.

“Jiang Chen, after the gate is open, you can enter the palace. The brightness of the jade card represents your situation inside. As long as you can stay inside the array for ten minutes, the dummies inside will stop by itself, but it will only stop for ten seconds, which means that if you don't come out during that short period, the dummies will continue to attack you and it won't stop anymore unless you call for help or wait for me to save you when I see your jade card growing dimmer. Of course, if I personally go in there to rescue you, it will mean that you have failed the trial. Do you understand?”

Li Zhong explained every rule of the array to Jiang Chen.

“This disciple understood.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head, then proceeded towards the palace without any hesitation. He had basically understood the principle of this array. The identity jade card of every disciple was the key to opening the gate of the Iron Dummy Array. When the jade card was inserted into the lattice, it would connect to the Qi of the array. The golden light on the jade card would represent the status of the candidate inside the array. Strong light indicated a good state while a dim light meant critical state.

After entering it, the gate of the palace closed itself. No one could see the situation inside clearly. The only way to know about Jiang Chen's status was by observing the brightness of the jade card on the gate outside. No one knew whether he would succeed, but at least they knew that Jiang Chen was still in good shape now.

“Do you think Jiang Chen would be able to come out of the array successfully?”

Asked the Grand Elder of the inner sect, Li Zhong with interest.

“It's really hard to tell because not many were able to succeed in this trial.”

“That's right. We all know the situation inside the array very well. The stronger the candidate, the greater the strength of the dummies. There are twenty eight of them that cooperated flawlessly. It is a one versus twenty-eight match. It's too hard for him to stay inside there for ten minutes.”

“Let's not draw a premature conclusion. I think that Jiang Chen may be able to succeed in this trial. If that's the case, another extraordinary genius will be born in our Skycloud Pavilion.”

.....

Many elders were guessing whether Jiang Chen could succeed in this trial, but majority of them didn't have much faith on him, because it was too hard for one to succeed in this array.

Grand Elder Li Zhong and Yuan Kui were both having a smile at

the corner of their mouths, but no one knew what they were thinking.

Inside the palace, after the gate was closed, it was as dark as ink and almost colourless, but that didn't affect Jiang Chen at all. With his present cultivation level, day and night didn't have much of a difference to him anymore. He was able to see everything inside the palace clearly.

Hu... Hu...

There was a cold wind blowing through under this feet, sending chills up his spine. He could see dark dummies everywhere. Every dummy was a humanoid, but was much sturdier than a normal person and was as tall as 3 meters.

There were a total of twenty eight of them. None of them breathed and moved. They were just standing there silently like motionless statues.

People might find the positions of the dummies normal, but it wasn't the case to Jiang Chen who was a master in various types of formations. The twenty-eight of them were divided into seven positions and every position was besieged by four dummies.

“What a powerful Iron Dummy Array. The twenty-eight of them have occupied seven different positions, leaving no blind spots when they attack. Once one is trapped within it, one will be attacked consecutively. Because of the formation they have formed, it makes their cooperation more fluid and fluent than a group of experts. I have to study this formation well to find a way to break it.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. In order to gain a clear understanding about the iron dummies and the formation, he needed to make a move first, otherwise he would get no result about it.

Ka Cha!

The twenty-eight dummies had obviously sensed the presence of

someone in their array. All of them lifted their skulls almost at the same time. Their empty eye sockets were staring at Jiang Chen and their stiff bodies flicked, producing a cracking sound.

Chapter 1166 – Encountering Dummies that Only Got Stronger

The array had already started to circulate the moment Jiang Chen entered it. As the formation was circulated, all the dummies were alerted by Jiang Chen's presence. Every pair of the dummy's empty eyes were unusually cold. Even though it didn't emit any kind of cold light, it still gave people the feeling of falling into an ice cavern. The aura carried by these dummies were oppressive. If it was an ordinary expert coming in, he would already be scared to death. It was imaginable what would happen after that.

However, Jiang Chen wasn't an ordinary expert. It was impossible to suppress him with this kind of aura. In his eyes, these dummies were merely killing machines without a soul. Therefore, there was nothing that he should be afraid about.

“Come on. Show me the exceptionality that you dummies have.”

Jiang Chen unleashed a wave of combat intent. He wanted to see if these dummies could do stop him from staying in the array for 10 minutes.

Ka!

As soon as his words faded, a dummy lunged at him all of a sudden with incredibly fast speed. Almost as soon as it had just moved, it appeared in front of Jiang Chen and launched a simple punch. But no one should underestimate the punch because it was quick and violent. Jiang Chen couldn't help but be taken aback despite his agility.

“That's fast!”

Jiang Chen's eyes flicked, but he didn't pay too much attention to it. Even though this dummy had an incredible speed, it was still weaker compared to him. He clenched his fists and launched it out. He had never lost before in a fist fight with brute force.

Bang!

The two fists collided with each other, creating a large spark that temporarily lit up the corner inside the palace.

That dummy obviously had underestimated Jiang Chen's strength. Its entire sturdy body was sent flying away by Jiang Chen's punch. Its arm was crushed and turned into pieces by Jiang Chen's brute force.

"Vulnerable."

Jiang Chen shook his head because the Iron Dummy Array was always claimed to be a marvellous creation in Skycloud Pavilion. If these dummies only had such power, he could easily destroy all of them in half-a-minute.

However, what happened next surprised him. The formation around him shook once more. The pieces that was dropped on the floor flew up towards the dummy's broken arm until the original arm was reconstructed. It now became as new as before, like it had never been damaged.

"Is this for real?"

Jiang Chen was stunned, he suddenly understood what this array meant. It was much more powerful and unusual than he had imagined. The broken or damaged dummies could be restored with the help of the formation. That was to say, these dummies couldn't be killed. So, the only thing that the candidate could do was to keep on defending for ten minutes and it would be considered a success.

Hu... Hu...

The chilling wind around was getting more and more intense. This was the result of the rapid circulation of the formation. As it continued to circulate, Jiang Chen could clearly feel that the cold Qi coming from the dummy was getting stronger. In other words, the strength of these dummies were improving rapidly.

“I understand it now. These iron dummies will adjust their strength based on the expert who came in. This is where the real terror is. That attack just now was merely a tentative one, which meant that it was just testing my power. Then, it will start to launch the real attack. This is getting more and more interesting.”

Jiang Chen wasn't a fool. He instantly figured out the key to it. At the same time, he couldn't help admiring this wonderful array. He had to admit that the person who created this array must be a genius. The truth was that this array was invented by Ouyang He himself, helping the sect find greater talents in the outer sect, however, Jiang Chen didn't know about it. Additionally, not many people had succeeded in this array. Tian Muyun was one of the minority who succeeded.

Ka... Ka...

The moment the adjustment of the formation was finished, one dummy in each of the position moved. Every one of them moved at a speed that was even faster than before. Seven of them had an incomparably close coordination as they launched their attack on the target from seven different directions.

This was an all-directional attack. Because Jiang Chen was restricted by the formation, it was difficult for him to dodge. It was indeed not easy to deal with such swift and violent attack.

“You all come at the right time.”

Jiang Chen shouted fearlessly. A black light radiated below his feet as he moved equally speedy. He swung out both of his fists and launched seven punches in the blink of an eye, colliding with the fists of the seven dummies.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

A dull sound was heard and huge sparks were produced, but this wasn't like the former collision. The seven dummies were forced two steps back but were still intact, unlike the previous scene

where one arm of the dummy was crushed.

“Damn! I have no idea what these dummies are made of. How can their physiques reach such a solid extent as the formation continues to circulate and readjust? The endurance of their physique is relatively on par with mine, but such a primitive collision is going to be a blessing in disguise. I can take this opportunity to enhance my physique and foundation.”

Jiang Chen’s competitive desire had been ignited, deciding to have a nice match with these dummies.

Ka... Ka...

This time, there were fourteen of them instead of seven, doubling the previous number. They attacked from different directions and at a faster pace.

Jiang Chen took a deep breath. While facing so many powerful dummies, if he was replaced by an ordinary expert, that expert would immediately become shaky and shiver in fear. He began to understand why the people outside would describe this formation as a scary one.

“Nine Phantom Wolves.”

Jiang Chen shouted once more, casting out the incredible movement skill. For a moment, the whole array was full of Jiang Chen’s illusions. It immediately disturbed the perception of the dummies, directly disrupting their coordination. This had reduced much of Jiang Chen’s pressure.

“What a good movement skill!”

At the top of a mountain, in the core region of Skycloud Pavilion was another palace. In the palace, a fiftyish elder was staring unblinkingly at the crystal ball that was showing the scene of Jiang Chen in the Iron Dummy Array. He found it a little boring at the beginning, but when he saw Jiang Chen’s Nine Phantom Wolves, he complimented Jiang Chen immediately. Then, he started to pay

full attention to the crystal ball. Surely, he had been attracted by Jiang Chen's way of dealing with the Iron Dummy Array.

Chapter 1167 – Tianji Zi

From the outside, not even Li Zhong and Yuan Kui could see the situation inside the array. The brightness of the jade card was the only way to determine Jiang Chen's status. As for the elder, he could clearly see the situation inside through the crystal ball. Apart from that, the elder personally possessed a private cultivation palace that was built on a mountaintop in the core region of the sect. This only showed how high his status and position in the Pavilion.

A simple move from this elder could exude a Qi that was totally beyond the Divine Immortal realm. He was a true Golden Immortal expert that had comprehended the profound meaning of Great Luo.

Normally, this level of expert would never pay attention to the matters related to the inner and outer sect as they were too high in the hierarchy, however, some of them who were just trying to kill some time would probably go and have a watch of the latest incident. This was the reason why some outer sect disciple who succeeded in the array would be kept as a true disciple of these Golden Immortal experts.

It was a coincidence that today was the day of Jiang Chen's trial and a boring day for the elder. At first, he only watched the scene out of curiosity. A moment later, Jiang Chen's performance had totally caught his attention. He would've switched off the crystal ball if the candidate was worse than he thought, but now, he had decided to continue watching.

In the Iron Dummy Array, Jiang Chen and the fourteen dummies were having an intense battle. To him, it was an exhilarating and energizing fight. During the collisions with these dummies, he felt the muscles in his body was starting to heat up. These dummies not only had very fierce attacks, but also had incredible speed, leaving him no room for complacency. This taxing fight had

activated all the functions in his body which was going to bring large benefits to him.

Ka... Ka...

A new round was about to begin. This time, all the dummies reacted. A total of twenty-eight of them had locked on Jiang Chen's position. As the formation was circulating, the twenty-eight of them were changing positions, making everything around blurry. The coordination among them was flawless. They moved at a very fast speed and looked the same. For an instant, the whole array was filled with the images of these dummies, like there were a thousand of them that made people feel dizzy.

"All twenty-eight of them have been activated. This was going to be the most frightening moment in the Iron Dummy Array. The configuration and aura are already intimidating enough. I would like to see how this kid is going to deal with it."

The crystal ball made the old man's eyes light up once more. Commonly, any genius who entered the array would take at least seven to eight minutes to activate all the dummies. This was the time when the candidates had almost used up all their skills and the dummies would increase the strength of its force based on the power of its opponent. Many disciples failed before they could active the entire army of dummies.

Jiang Chen on the other hand had only used two minutes to active all the dummies. Plus, his current state seemed very casual and relaxed, like he was still far from being exhausted.

"It seems like I'm going to have some great harvest today. I can reap more benefits from this battle than cultivating in the Martial Palace for a few years. All of you, let's fight at once!"

Jiang Chen's body was filled with combat intent. His Qi was getting stronger and stronger. An image of a blood-red dragon was hovering above his head. That was the dense blood Qi of a dragon. As he could transform into his dragon-form at will, his blood Qi

was many times stronger than the peerless great demons.

After unleashing his spiritual power and Great Soul Derivation Technique, the speedy dummies were no longer blurry. Every move of theirs were within Jiang Chen's range of sense.

Bang... Bang... Bang...

Next, he struck with lightning speed. He only fought with his terrifying physique without using any kind of combat techniques. The whole battlefield was chaotic. Shadows were everywhere, the shadows of Jiang Chen and the dummies. It was confusing and very hard to determine which shadow belonged to whom. Large sparks were created from every impact. As the impacts were happening too quickly, the entire array seemed like a sea of fire.

Every time Jiang Chen collided with a dummy, his arm would feel numb, but it quickly recovered after. Such high-intensity battle made his blood and Qi circulate even faster, constantly igniting the potential inside his body. To him, this was simply a golden opportunity.

The elder was naturally able to see everything inside clearly. He had no problem seeing Jiang Chen launching attacks at the twenty-eight dummies at practically the same time. It indicated Jiang Chen's versatility and accuracy in locating every one of those dummies.

"What a keen sense of perception! I'm amazed by his abilities. I want to make a calculation to see how his future fate is like."

The more surprised the elder was, the more he couldn't help calculating Jiang Chen's fate.

Speaking of divination, anyone in One-Line-Sky would know about the renowned elder named Tian Jizi who could predict people's future. Even though he was only at the peak of mid Golden Immortal realm, his position in Skycloud Pavilion was on par with those late Golden Immortal elders. Last time, even

Ouyang He would call him brother and Tian Muyun would address him as uncle whenever he saw him.

The so-called divination or calculation was knowing Heaven's will. Despite being a Golden Immortal expert, it still wasn't enough for him to reach the maximum capacity of calculating. Therefore, he couldn't predict everything. However, it was already considered scary enough. Tian Jizi had a very good relationship with Ouyang He. Two years ago, when Ouyang He was breaking through to the Immortal King realm, he had gone to the other region. Otherwise, he would've made some predictions for Ouyang He. Although he might not be able to extrapolate Tian Muyun would backstab his own master, he could at least predict some misfortune ahead of Ouyang He. He had felt remorse for two years after the death of Ouyang He.

After seeing Jiang Chen's extraordinary power today, he was itching to see Jiang Chen's fate. Then, he was astounded once more.

"What a great brat! I'm unable to calculate anything about him with my power. It's like this man doesn't lie within the Heaven's will. It seems like this man isn't any kind of ordinary being. I'm certain that he's a person with great fortune. He may become the game-changer in One-Line-Sky."

Tian Jizi was shocked. While he was calculating Jiang Chen's fate, he seemed to find nothing in it, like this man didn't exist in the Heavens and Earth, and was beyond the existence of fate. Because of this, Tian Jizi's curiosity rose drastically.

Chapter 1168 – Continue with the Fight

Five minutes had passed and Jiang Chen was still stuck in the intense battle. Currently, Jiang Chen had already fallen into some kind of ecstasy. To him, battling these dummies weren't a torture anymore, but a kind of enjoyment and a rare chance of cultivation, pushing his current condition to a higher state.

Since his potential was ignited, he had yet to notice the relentless movement in his Qi Sea. New dragon marks began to condense under the circulation of the dragon transformation skill.

Outside the palace, everyone's eyes were fixed on the jade card. It was shining brightly without any sign of faltering.

"He's amazing. It has been five minutes, but his condition is still so well. This dude sure is unusual."

"That's true. There is basically no change in the brightness of the jade card. That is to say, his current status is as good as in the beginning. It's truly unbelievable, however, I still wonder if he can last until 10 minutes."

"We'll see. I don't think it will be that easy. The terror of the Iron Dummy Array is beyond our imagination."

.....

Quite many of them revealed faces of shock. Although five minutes wasn't considered an impressive record, but the fact that he could maintain his vigorous state just like before was astonishing. One should know that battling those dummies would consume tremendous amount of energy. Such huge consumption wasn't bearable to any ordinary person.

"It looks astounding. Do you all think he will succeed?"

Li Zhong looked over at the other elders with a smile. Those elders were at a loss of words because they hadn't imagined such a result from Jiang Chen. Although no one was able to guarantee

that Jiang Chen would succeed in the array, their hearts were now full of anticipation, especially those outer sect elders because it had been a long time since an exceptional genius emerged from the outer sect. If Jiang Chen was able to break through the array, their faces would be filled with joy.

Inside the palace, Jiang Chen's clothes were drenched with sweat. His eyes looked obsessed, and had totally fallen into a state of enjoyment. Presently, he didn't have to deliberately observe the trails of the dummies anymore as he had virtually grasped their movements. The fight was getting easier and easier to him, like he was having fun with them. If anyone from the outside saw this, he was afraid that they would be shocked.

Tian Jizi's eyes didn't blink once while he staring at the crystal ball attentively. Jiang Chen's performance made him speechless. He wouldn't dare say if there was genius even greater than Jiang Chen in the Ethereal Immortal Domain, but he was certain that Jiang Chen was the most talented existence he had ever seen, a genius even greater than Tian Muyun.

Soon, four minutes passed, which meant Jiang Chen had stayed inside the array for nine minutes, leaving him only a minute away from success. At this time, the atmosphere outside was getting tense and restless.

“My God, only one minute left. How can his condition be still the same as he was before he entered? Does it mean that he is still intact after receiving so many attacks from the dummies?”

“That's too abnormal. It seems like he's going to break through the Iron Dummy Array in no time. He has maintained this vigorous state for nine minutes and I don't think there will be any changes in the last minute. It seems like another genius has appeared in Skycloud Pavilion.”

“Don't get too excited. The last minute is always the moment when mistake happens. Maybe he's actually not as good as it

appears on the jade card.”

.....

A commotion started to fill the air. Majority of them were full of excitement. Although they weren't the ones who was in the array, they felt joy watching the birth of a genius with their own eyes. After all, none had manage to break the array for a long time.

To Jiang Chen, the last minute passed very quickly. The fierce battle in the array finally came to an end. The twenty eight dummies stopped their attacks and returned to their original position.

Jiang Chen was petrified, then realized that the battle was already over, but he still hadn't gotten the sense of fulfilment from the battle.

“Ten minutes has passed?”

Jiang Chen shook his head, feeling reluctant. As he was about to leave the palace, he suddenly found out that two thousand new dragon marks had been formed inside his Qi Sea.

“Two thousand dragon marks have been formed. I never thought these dummies could bring me such tremendous benefits. Originally, I needed ten thousand dragon marks to reach the half-step Heaven Immortal realm. Now, I only need 8000 more. My potential hasn't been fully ignited yet and I haven't used my dragon-form. This is a rare opportunity. If I walk out like this, the loss will be great. If I transformed into my dragon-form and fight these dummies, they will readjust their strength to match mine, which means it's going to increase the intensity of the battle and enhance my physique even further.”

Jiang Chen was pleased and decided not to leave the array for now. This fearsome Iron Dummy Array had become the best place for him to cultivate. If this intense battle continued, he would certainly reach the half-step Heaven Immortal realm. Therefore,

he would never forgive himself if he missed this chance of advancement.

“Again. Dragon transformation.”

Jiang Chen spun and turned into his dragon-form. His combat strength instantly rose by ten times. Li Zhong had told him that he would have only ten seconds to leave the array before the dummies started attacking again. He had decided to stay in the array and fight the dummies once more.

“What kind of technique is this? How can it instantly increase his combat strength by tenfold?”

In the palace, Tian Jizi stood up abruptly when he saw Jiang Chen’s transformation technique. His face was full of astonishment. He could see that this was a transformation technique that was beyond any Forbidden Technique, this technique had really shocked him. What really shocked him was the sudden increase of Jiang Chen’s combat strength by tenfold. It was a heaven defying boost of strength that he would never believe if he didn’t see it with his own eyes.

“He has already succeeded, but why hasn’t he stepped out yet? Could he be thinking of continuing the battle with these dummies? It seems like he has obtained great benefits from the previous battle and he is now treating these dummies as his means of advancement. What an audacious kid! But did he not know that the Iron Dummy Array won’t stop anymore after this?”

Tian Jizi knew what Jiang Chen was trying to do and couldn’t help worrying for him.

Chapter 1169 – The Primitive Collision

Tian Jizi was a little unsettled. He already understood Jiang Chen's intention. Apparently, Jiang Chen had obtained plenty of benefits from the previous battle. Therefore, he had decided to pump up his combat strength to pursue greater advancement.

In other words, these dummies were no longer a meaningful trial to him as if it was only a piece of cake to him. What he wanted to pursue was higher level of stimulation. He had totally treated the Iron Dummy Array as his training ground.

When ten minutes had passed, many people outside the palace let out a sigh of relief while some were feeling incomparably excited, including Fu Hui. He had been paying all of his attention to Jiang Chen's jade card. He never thought that Jiang Chen would actually succeed. It had shocked and at the same time, exhilarated him.

I sure didn't pick the wrong person. Brother Jiang's future is going to be immeasurable. Surely, there will be boundless of benefits for me if I become his follower.

Fu Hui muttered in his heart, feeling delighted for his sharp eyes.

"Damn! This dude actually broke through the Iron Dummy Array. That's amazing! It has been a long time since someone had succeeded in this array. Jiang Chen has created another miracle."

"Indeed. The brightness of his jade card remained unchanged from the beginning until now. It has never dimmed once, which is very rare. It's only a matter of time before he receives the attention of the higher ups."

"I envy him so much now. Anyone who can survive in the array is destined to be extraordinary. Additionally, the fact that he can join the inner sect is favourable to us. Finally, he has been sent away from the outer sect. We never had a peaceful day ever since he arrived in the outer sect."

.....

Many disciples were sighing with joy, especially the outer sect disciples. Although they hated Jiang Chen very much, they were still relieved that Jiang Chen had succeeded. It was an event worthy of celebration as the disastrous being was finally sent away.

However, the front gate of the palace didn't open yet after ten seconds and Jiang Chen was nowhere to be seen.

“What happened? Ten seconds have passed. Why isn't this dude coming out yet?”

Grand Elder Li Zhong was the first to change his expression, as if he had noticed something unusual.

“That's right. Ten seconds have already passed but why isn't Jiang Chen out yet? Could it be that he wants to continue battling with those dummies? That's insane. Did he not know that once the dummies initiate another attack, it won't be a 10-minute-duration anymore, but a never-ending attack?”

“What the hell? Why hasn't he come out yet? Could it be that he's feeling very comfortable, staying in the Iron Dummy Array?”

“Time is already over and Jiang Chen isn't out yet. The dummies will definitely continue the attack. It's highly possible that this dude isn't coming out anymore.”

.....

Before everyone could react from the shock of Jiang Chen's success, another wave of shock hit them. Nothing like this had ever happened since the establishment of the Iron Dummy Array. In the past, any genius who had successfully passed the array would immediately leave the palace within ten seconds. Plus, those geniuses all looked exhausted, bruised and wounded. None of them were willing to stay in the array any longer after personally experiencing its terror.

But today, Jiang Chen had chosen to continue staying in the array. To many, this was an act of suicide.

“Grand Elder, what should we do now?” Asked Yuan Kui to Li Zhong.

“I guess this Jiang Chen must be trying to advance himself with the help of the dummies inside. We shouldn’t be overly panicking. His identity jade card is still shining brightly. I’ll wait until he can’t take it any longer to save him. I would like to see how long this kid can stay in there.”

Said Li Zhong. He was feeling extremely curious about Jiang Chen as this had never happened before. Not just him, the others also wanted to find out how long Jiang Chen could actually stay in there. No matter how long Jiang Chen stayed in the array, it would surely be recorded as a miraculous incident in the history of Skycloud Pavilion. They were also certain that no one would be able to break this record anymore.

The whole scene turned tense once more. The seemingly ending incident had become an all-new event. All the elders and disciples shifted their attention to Jiang Chen’s identity jade card again.

Ten seconds later, inside the palace, the dummies launched their attack on Jiang Chen once again. The formation of the array was circulated at a speed even faster than before.

Hong Long.....

After turning into his dragon-form, he felt as if he had entered a primitive state. The dragon bloodline inside his body was pounding continuously. Every punch he sent contained a dense ancient Qi. In just a moment, six to seven dummies were blasted to pieces, like a vulnerable trash can.

But in the next moment, those incapacitated dummies reformed once again and turned into new dummies. When they perceived Jiang Chen’s change in power, the formation began to change

again. Rays of light started to radiate from the dummies' bodies as they lunged at Jiang Chen once more.

In the private palace, Tian Jizi's facial expression changed. At the beginning, he didn't pay too much attention to the strength of these dummies, but after Jiang Chen's transformation, he began to notice the combat strength of these dummies and it had shocked him.

"This kid surely is a monstrous genius. The combat strength of these dummies have already reached the late Heaven Immortal realm and this kid's cultivation base is only a late Earth Immortal realm. He hasn't even reached the half-step Heaven Immortal realm yet. After he enhanced his combat strength by tenfold, he's able to stand strong against twenty eight opponents of late Heaven Immortal strengths. He's truly a monster."

Tian Jizi couldn't stay calm. As a high-rank elder in Skycloud Pavilion and a famous figure in One-Line-Sky, he had seen numerous geniuses. Tian Muyun was an example of an excellent genius, but comparing him to Jiang Chen created a significant distinction.

He had already developed a strong interest in Jiang Chen and even made a decision that he had never made before, accepting an outer disciple as his true disciple. Of course, this was just a tentative idea. It would all depend on Jiang Chen's following performance and see whether he had the fortune of being accepted as Tian Jizi's true disciple.

Bang... Bang... Bang...

Constant collisions were taking place in the array. Every collision was like two big mountains smashing against each other. This kind of battle was a primitive and barbaric way of fighting. If the combatant didn't have an extremely strong physical body, he wouldn't be able to withstand such an impact. Normally, the geniuses who went into the array only used their powerful combat

techniques. Jiang Chen on the other hand had been solely using his physique to fight those dummies.

Chapter 1170 – half-step Heaven Immortal

Jiang Chen's blood and Qi continued to stir, falling into a state of frenzy. He didn't locked on the position of those dummies and block their attacks. Sometimes, he would let the dummies' knuckle to pound on his body, causing his dragon scale to bleed.

But these injuries didn't seem to bother him at all. He had immersed himself in the fast-paced battle. The potential inside his body was incessantly being stimulated and new dragon marks were forming non-stop.

In the blink of an eye, twenty minutes had passed. It had been half an hour since Jiang Chen entered the Iron Dummy Array. To Skycloud Pavilion, this was a miracle of miracles.

“Dang! It has already been half an hour. Is he still a human? I feel that his identity jade card hasn't changed for a bit. It's still as bright as it was in the beginning. He is still maintaining the peak state after half an hour. How could that be possible?”

“He's a beast. He's truly a beast. I have never seen such an abnormal being. Staying inside there for half an hour? Is he still human?”

“I don't know how long he is going to stay inside. Half an hour has passed. Do you all think that he will stay for another half an hour?”

“That's hard to say. I won't be surprised if such a monstrous genius has created another great miracle.”

.....

At the current moment, many people were feeling numb. Some were speculating about the duration that Jiang Chen could stay inside, but none of them were able to give a conclusive answer. Although they had already been waiting for half an hour, none of them was feeling impatient. Conversely, they all looked energized.

It was very rare for them to be able to witness the birth of a miracle.

Tian Jizu's attention was entirely glued to the crystal ball. The longer he watched, the more shocked he felt. Given his eyesight, he was able to clearly see that Jiang Chen wasn't affected by the wounds despite him being injured continuously. Tian Jizi felt that this was an intentional move of Jiang Chen. If he used his full force, those dummies wouldn't stand a chance against him.

Seven thousand dragon marks had been condensed inside his body, leaving only 3000 to go before hitting the half-step Heaven Immortal realm. To him, it was an extremely rare opportunity. His potential hadn't been exhausted yet, so he was sure that he would achieve this advancement in the array.

Time passed slowly, but in fact, it passed in blinks. Despite that, Jiang Chen still didn't come out of the array. The jade card was still as brilliant as before, without the slightest bit of dimness.

At this time, even Li Zhong was losing his patience. He rolled his eyes from time to time. Such an incident was really hard for people to accept. How could there be such an abnormal being in the Heaven and Earth?

"Oh my god! It's already been an hour now! I can't take it anymore."

"We can ignore the fact of an hour, but how could his current condition be the same as before? Could it be that he didn't consume even a bit of his energy inside?"

"I can't take it anymore. I really have no idea how long he can stay inside."

Most of them were getting restless because it was just too scary. No one could stay inside the Iron Dummy Array for an hour.

After exactly an hour, Jiang Chen had achieved his objective. His Qi Sea started to stir. Three thousand dragon marks were fully

condensed. Adding the previous seven thousand, it made the total of ten thousand. Therefore, the total number of dragon marks inside his Qi Sea was 450 000.

450 000 dragon marks was the requirement to reach the half-step Heaven Immortal realm. The instant he made the advancement, he regained his senses and recovered from his frenzied state. Tremendous amount of Immortal Meta Stones were consumed extravagantly. Then, he took a deep breath.

“He has advanced?”

Tian Jizi couldn't help but be shocked by the situation inside the crystal ball. He instantly understood that this had been the intention of Jiang Chen. He wanted to exploit the dummies to stimulate his potential, helping him break through the bottleneck and made a new advancement.

“He's bold and crafty. Not bad.”

Tian Jizi praised Jiang Chen once more, but he was more curious about how would Jiang Chen be able to leave the Iron Dummy Array. Though he had made the advancement, the dummies wouldn't stop and their strength would continue to rise based on Jiang Chen's strength.

Ka... Ka...

The dummies had no intention of stopping and continued to attack their target, but now, Jiang Chen had lost his interest in battling these non-living things. He casted a massive spiritual power, using the Great Soul Derivation Technique to instantly enshroud the whole formation.

“It seems like I must get rid of these dummies in order to get out of here. These dummies are able to fight incessantly because of the support of the formation. Once I break the formation by finding its critical spot, all these dummies will be destroyed without a doubt, giving them no chance of reforming.”

Muttered Jiang Chen. As his goal had been achieved, he wanted to leave the place now, but he had already missed the ten second chance earlier, so the only option left was to eliminate all these annoying dummies.

Probably not even Ouyang He himself would think that an outer disciple would break the formation some day. No matter how much potential the outer sect genius has, it was impossible to break it. Unfortunately, the genius today was Jiang Chen.

Using the Great Soul Derivation Technique, he was able to grasp the trails of the formation quickly. This array had seven positions that interacted with each other flawlessly. So it was virtually impossible to find the weak spot among them. Even Jiang Chen failed to find it.

“This formation incorporated the profound meaning of stars’ changing position. Each position is linked with the other. It can be both significant and insignificant. There’s no way to break them.”

Jiang Chen shook his head, started to respect the person who invented this array. It indicated that the inventor must have great attainments in arrays.

He circulated the Great Soul Derivation Technique once more, began to spread his attention across and onto the dummies. In his opinion, there would always be a flaw in a formation no matter how flawless it was. Since the formation didn’t consist of such weak spots, he would have to find it in these dummies.

The Great Soul Derivation Technique turned into an invisible storm and swept across the palace back and forth, inspecting every dummy thoroughly.

Chapter 1171 – Nobody Wasn't Startled

Jiang Chen casted the Nine Phantom Wolves once more along with the Spatial Shift. Innumerable images of himself were shuttling back and forth in front of those dummies. His Great Soul Derivation Technique was scanning every dummy like invisible swords, attempting to discover the flaw within them.

All of a sudden, Jiang Chen's eyes locked on the middle of the brow of one the dummy. Although this dummy looked no different than the others at first glance, Jiang Chen's Great Soul Derivation Technique was able to detect something unique from this dummy. In between its brows was a small dark speck, so small that one could hardly see it.

This was the uniqueness of the Great Soul Derivation Technique – it could discover a tiny difference in something if it wanted to. Plus, Jiang Chen had the experience of an old ancestor after living one life, and this was already his second life. It gave him an advantage that ordinary human didn't possess.

“There you are.”

Jiang Chen revealed a trace of a smile at the corner of his mouth, pointed out a finger that radiated brilliant light and touched the spot between the dummy's brows.

Bang!

The instant the dummy was touched on the head, its skull exploded. Its huge and majestic body started to disintegrate, quickly turning into a pile of ruins. This time, the dummy didn't reform. Not only that, the whole Iron Dummy Array stopped circulating, the entire palace returned to its original silence. Those remaining twenty seven dummies halted and stood like statues.

Jiang Chen's face overflowed with a smile, surprised that it was that easy to find the weak spot of the Iron Dummy Array.

In the private palace, Tian Jizi almost leaped straight into the wall. Both of his eyes were wide and big, staring unblinkingly at the crystal ball in disbelief.

“What an incredible kid! He has actually broken the array. This array is personally invented by Master Ouyang. It was near perfection, but he was still able to break it so easily. Walking out of the array in such a way is really going against Heaven’s will.”

Tian Jizi was unable to remain calm. As a powerful Golden Immortal, he had a very composed disposition. There weren’t many things in this world that could create such a stir in his emotion. The fact that Jiang Chen produced three miracles in the Iron Dummy Array made him uneasy.

“This man is the son of the Heavens. He’s incomparable even to the likes of Tian Muyun. His appearance in Skycloud Pavilion is truly a blessing to us.”

After he finished speaking and making a great decision, he vanished from his private palace.

Outside the palace, everyone was still waiting. The tightly shut gate gradually opened all of a sudden. Jiang Chen emerged from the doorway in his white-robe. He had the same composed face just like before he entered. You could never see a sign of change in his expression.

The aura radiated from his body had totally changed. He had become a miracle inventor. A miraculous being that could still walk out of the array alive after an hour of struggling.

However, everyone wondered: how the hell did he come out? The Iron Dummy Array wouldn’t stop circulating and the dummies wouldn’t stop attacking. There was no way that he could walk out from the palace without the help of an elder.

“What’s going on? He just walked out on his own.”

“Ya. What happened inside? Could it be that he never once

battled those dummies? Look, you can't find a wound or anything from his body."

"Something isn't right here."

.....

Everyone was shocked. They weren't able to see the situation inside, so they had no idea what happened inside, but the fact that Jiang Chen could walk out alive indicated a miracle.

Li Zhong and Yuan Kui exchanged a glance, then flew towards the interior of the palace. The other elders followed. They must find out what had happened. It was impossible for Jiang Chen to walk out of the palace after reactivating the Iron Dummy Array. The result was beyond their imagination, so they have to find out the reason behind it.

When they arrived inside the palace, all of the inner sect elders and outer sect elders were dumbfounded. Their expressions were the same – wide eyes and hanging jaw. None of them could believe what they saw. The Iron Dummy Array had been broken. The formation was no longer circulating. One dummy had turned into ruins while the other dummies were still intact, but after losing the support of the formation, they were nothing more than scrap metals.

"My god, what has he done?"

"He has actually broken the formation and walked out of the array? How was that possible? It's absolutely impossible."

"This array was personally built by Master Ouyang. How could an outer sect disciple break it so easily?"

.....

Everyone was astounded. They couldn't imagine how an Earth Immortal outer sect disciple could break the great formation deployed by Ouyang He. Miracle was no longer the suitable word to describe this event.

“Let’s go.”

Li Zhong turned and left, arriving before Jiang Chen along with the other elders. He studied Jiang Chen from top to bottom in disbelief, but he couldn’t not believe the fact.

“Jiang Chen, you have actually destroyed the Iron Dummy Array.” Li Zhong’s voice was somewhat quivering.

“What? This dude has destroyed the Iron Dummy Array? How could that be possible? That was the creation of Master Ouyang.”

“My Goodness! Is he still human? Breaking the Iron Dummy Array and walking out from it leisurely? I have never seen such a scene before. Not even the outstanding talent, Master Tian could do this.”

“Abnormal! He’s overly abnormal! But the Iron Dummy Array is the symbol of our sect and he has just destroyed it. This is a great crime. He may be punished for that.”

.....

The whole scene burst into commotion, whether it was the crowd of inner or outer sect disciples. Jiang Chen’s performance today was no doubt going to be recorded in the history of Skycloud Pavilion. Putting aside the possibility whether he would be punished for destroying the Iron Dummy Array, no one could possibly imitate what he did.

“Yes, elder. I must break this array in order to get out of it and to prove that I have succeeded in this challenge.”

Said Jiang Chen fluently. This time, he didn’t just challenged the array but also destroyed it. If this wasn’t regarded as a success, what else could be the measurement of his success?

“Jiang Chen, you surely have succeeded in this challenge, but you have destroyed the Iron Dummy Array, it was a mark left behind by Master Ouyang. This is considered as a huge crime.”

Said Li Zhong. If the higher ups dug deep into this matter, the Grand Elder who was responsible for this array wouldn't be able to run away from providing sufficient explanation for the incident.

“There's no need to worry at all, Grand Elder. I have the means to destroy the array, it only means that I also have a way to restore it as well. Give me one day's time and I will return a completely intact Iron Dummy Array to the sect.” Jiang Chen smiled and said with extreme confidence.

Chapter 1172 – The True Disciple

“What did you just say?”

Li Zhong was stunned, doubting his ears had heard it wrongly. It must be a joke for Jiang Chen to claim that he could restore the broken Iron Dummy Array. How could a nobody fix the array that was created by Ouyang He?

“It’s ridiculous. This bastard must only be bragging. The fact that he can break the array is already a miracle of miracles. I firmly believe that he can’t restore the formation. I don’t think his attainments in arrays is even higher than Master Ouyang’s.”

“That’s right. This man is just overly arrogant. He should give it a second thought before bragging it out. To think that he can fix the broken Iron Dummy Array by himself? That’s absolutely impossible.”

“I don’t think that Jiang Chen is lying. Maybe he really has the means to repair the array. Before this, did anyone of you believed that he could destroy the array?”

.....

Most of them thought that Jiang Chen was just boasting about his abilities and it was just a joke. How could fixing the array be so easily done? however, some felt that Jiang Chen wasn’t lying. After all, he had already created miracles. What’s impossible to other people might be possible to him.

“There’s no need to be so surprised, elder. Disciple does have some knowledge in formations. Otherwise, disciple wouldn’t be able to break it. As long as disciple is given a day’s time, disciple can guarantee the complete restoration of the array. I have already fully grasped the features of the array. If I can’t restore it to its usual state, I’m willing to receive any punishment that’s deemed necessary.”

Jiang Chen said, holding his fists. His tone was brimming with confidence. If he relied only on himself to restore the array, it might be somewhat difficult, but with the help of Big Yellow, everything would be quick and easy. He believed in Big Yellow's knowledge regarding formation as that dog had mastered everything in the Formation Holy Book, which made him incomparable to Ouyang He. If one claimed that Ouyang He had the advantage over Big Yellow, it would only be the advantage of a higher cultivation base.

Jiang Chen believed that after the modification, the whole Iron Dummy Array would become even more sophisticated than ever before.

If he brought Big Yellow along with him into the array, he wouldn't need to waste so much effort to break the formation.

"Good, Jiang Chen. You have truly amazed me. I hope you aren't just bragging this time. If you can really repair the Iron Dummy Array, the sect will certainly reward you. Every genius who can walk out of the Iron Dummy Array will receive some prizes. With your talent, your future achievements are bound to be immeasurable."

Li Zhong nodded and praised. He had totally changed his view on Jiang Chen. Not just him, but many people's point of view of Jiang Chen had been changed by Jiang Chen's actions as well. Jiang Chen was the creator of miracles, the unbelievable miracles that petrified the bystanders. At this point in time, almost everyone was sure of one thing – Jiang Chen's talent had reached an unparalleled point. Although they didn't dare say it out loud, they knew that Jiang Chen's potential was even higher than Tian Muyun. In other words, this new genius was going to surpass Tian Muyun one day and become a super genius in Skycloud Pavilion.

Suddenly, a silhouette zipped past the mountains from the core region and landed on the scene. The instant this man emerged, the whole summit was enshrouded by a faint pressure, making the

others feel uncomfortable.

Everyone's eyes had fallen on the elder that suddenly appeared. He wore a clean robe, looked fifty plus years old, had a pair of bright sparkling eyes and a demeanor that drew the awe and respect from other people.

After his arrival, he ignored the other people around and locked Jiang Chen with his gaze. When he looked at Jiang Chen's face, he didn't feel that this Jiang Chen was the same as the one he saw in the crystal ball. What he felt from this young man was his calm posture, exuberant blood and Qi and a unique and vague aura that radiated from his body. He was sure that this young man was the son of Heavens, a genius with a boundless future.

"It's Elder Tianji Zi. My Goodness! Why has he appeared? Could it be that Jiang Chen's performance has alerted this mighty elder?"

"Even Elder Tianji Zi has come. He's a first generation elder in One-Line-Sky, the elder with the highest rank in Skycloud Pavilion. He is considered the deputy master of our sect. Besides, Tianji Zi has the hobby of isolating himself. I have been in Skycloud Pavilion for so many years and I have only seen him once, and this is only my second time."

"Elder Tianji Zi can see through the Heaven's will by means of divination. He's very close with Master Ouyang. Even Master Tian will have to pay his respect to him."

.....

The appearance of Tianji Zi caused a wave of restlessness among the crowd, but none of them would dare to speak loudly in front of someone like Tianji Zi. They needed to be extra careful even if they were only muttering, in case it annoyed or offend the elder. It was normal for the elder to kill someone on the spot without any reasons.

"Greet Elder Tianji."

Li Zhong and the other elders hastily moved forward and bowed before Tianji Zi with utmost respect. Although they were curious about why the supreme elder appeared here all of a sudden, they were certain about one thing, the elder was here for Jiang Chen.

This could be seen from Tianji Zi's actions. Currently, he had already put all of his attention on Jiang Chen and ignored everyone around, like they were just a mist of invisible air.

While Tianji Zi was studying Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen too was studying Tianji Zi. He only felt that this old man was unpredictable. There was a dimly discernible and unfathomable aura exuded from his body. It was like this old man was a master monk who had attained enlightenment and a banished immortal that had transcended the law of the world.

More importantly, he was a Golden Immortal expert, a mighty Great Luo Golden Immortal.

“Jiang Chen, quickly greet Elder Tianji Zi.”

Li Zhong said to Jiang Chen with a frown, then whispered to him using divine sense. “Jiang Chen, your great luck has arrived. Elder Tianji Zi is the most respected and noble elder in the sect. He lives an isolated and proud life. He's the best friend of Master Ouyang. Although Elder Tianji Zi only has the cultivation base of a peak mid Golden Immortal realm, his status isn't lower than those late Golden Immortal elders. He is proficient in divination and calculation and good at reckoning on something. Even Master Tian feels compelled to show respect to him. It seems like your performance in the Iron Dummy Array has aroused his attention. If Elder Tianji Zi is here to accept you as his true disciple, you have won the jackpot. From then on, you will soar to the top, having privileges even greater than your fellow inner sect disciples.”

Li Zhong told everything about Tianji Zi to Jiang Chen. It showed that Li Zhong also attached great importance to Tianji Zi. He was advising Jiang Chen, implying that he shouldn't miss this

rare opportunity.

Chapter 1173 – The Flamboyant Master and Apprentice

After listening to Li Zhong, Jiang Chen was slightly surprised, and immediately had a strong interest in Tianji Zi. This interest he was having was even greater than his interest in Ouyang He, because almost every skill that Ouyang He practiced was relatively similar to what he had practiced. Regarding the ability to calculate one's fate, he had never encountered anyone who had such godly ability.

The technique of divination was broad and profound. Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to resist the temptation. Just like what Li Zhong said, he had encountered a great luck.

“Disciple is Jiang Chen, greet Elder Tianji.”

Jiang Chen quickly held his fists at Tianji Zi. His gesture was neither haughty nor humble. There wasn't a single uneasiness in his eyes.

“What a good kid! Casual and composed while standing before this old man. Your disposition is excellent. Furthermore, I have seen the whole process of how you breaking the array. I discovered that you have an incomparably powerful spiritual strength, a necessary requirement for practicing the divination art.”

Tianji Zi praised generously as he was the only one who observed the entire match of Jiang Chen and had lost his calmness. His appearance today was to take Jiang Chen as his true disciple.

After hearing this, Jiang Chen was stupefied and apprehensive. It wasn't hard to know from Tianji Zi's words that the higher ups in Skycloud Pavilion had a way to see everything that happened inside the Iron Dummy Array. Luckily, he performed well inside and didn't expose any unnecessary trump cards, like the Qi of Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd.

As for his dragon form, it wasn't any kind of secret anymore. He had used it when he destroyed the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect. Plus, this was his unique means of attacking that needed no concealment.

“Jiang Chen, this old man wants to take you as my true disciple, and impart my lifelong knowledge about divination to you. What do you say? however, you have to think hard about this. The path of divination is dull, abstruse and hard to cultivate. I won't force you if you are reluctant to do so.”

Tianji Zi was gazing at Jiang Chen unblinkingly and blurted out his intention.

Hua.....

The word immediately caused a commotion in the crowd. Everyone's eyes were filled with both admiration, envy and hatred.

“What the hell? What kind of shit luck does this brat have? how could he possibly make a Golden Immortal elder accept him as a true disciple? Additionally, this elder is the renowned elder, Elder Tianji Zi.”

“This is absolutely annoying! Elder Tianji Zi is well-known for his isolated behavior and has been staying alone in the sect. He has never once accepted a disciple of his own. Today, he has come here just to offer Jiang Chen the chance to become his disciple. This dude must be having too much of luck lately.”

“Dammit! That bastard is still hesitating. For God's Sake, quickly send a lightning strike to kill him.”

.....

They admired, envied and hated the fact the luck didn't fall on them. Someone noticed that Jiang Chen was still contemplating the offer of the great Elder Tianji Zi. If he was replaced by another person, he was afraid that the person would immediately kneel down and kowtow without hesitation, in case Tianji Zi changed his

mind.

Jiang Chen lifted his head and stared at Tianji Zi. In truth, he had a very good impression of this old man as this old man wasn't as domineering and haughty. One should know that any Golden Immortal elder who came here offering a true discipleship would act high and mighty, and expect the chosen disciple to show admiration, appreciation and respect to them.

Tianji Zi on the other hand was showing a different gaze. Instead of expressing any kind of haughtiness, he showed appreciation and admiration, as if he had longed for such an incident to take place.

Moreover, he had given Jiang Chen the right to choose, not fearing that he would lose his face if Jiang Chen refused.

“Jiang Chen, what are you thinking? Quickly grab this great chance!”

Li Zhong and Yuan Kui were both tense and couldn't help, but remind Jiang Chen.

“Disciple has no intention of refusing.”

Jiang Chen bowed to Tianji Zi. He wasn't able to refuse the temptation of Tianji Zi. It was an irony that he refused Ouyang He's offer last time, but currently, it was a different situation. First of all, Jiang Chen was very intrigued to know more about the divination technique. Secondly, the identity of a true disciple would be of great help to his future growth. With Tianji Zi as his backer, he would save himself lots of trouble.

Furthermore, Tianji Zi was a good friend of Ouyang He which naturally qualified him to be Jiang Chen's ally. Taking in the fact of Tianji Zi's proud and lonely behavior, he would never be bribed by Tian Muyun. If Jiang Chen wanted to take revenge on Ouyang He's murderer, he needed to get close to someone like Tianji Zi. Therefore, it was certainly a good thing that Tian Jizi appeared on his own.

“Haha! Good, from now on, Jiang Chen will become the true disciple of Tianji Zi. From now on, no one in Skycloud Pavilion will dare to bully you anymore unless they want to go against me. As for you, you are permitted to bully whoever you want and I bet no one will dare to say ‘no’ to you.”

Tianji Zi laughed loudly and blurted out the words that made Jiang Chen feel ashamed.

Amazing!

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but raise his thumbs up for Tianji Zi. The aura of tyranny and lawlessness exuded from Tianji Zi was somewhat similar to Jiang Chen.

But the others just rolled their eyes. They knew all too well how domineering Tianji Zi was. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have such a supreme status in the sect. Jiang Chen on the other hand had also done some very domineering things. When this master and disciple came together, would there be peace anymore in Skycloud Pavilion?

“Congratulations, Elder Tianji on getting a highly talented disciple.” Said Li Zhong.

“En, the two of you have done a great job. These are the rewards for the two of you.”

Tianji Zi waved and two streams of light shot out and landed on their hands. Before they could see what the rewards were, they trembled with excitement, especially Yuan Kui who was merely a Heaven Immortal expert. Neither of them could imagine that they would be rewarded by a Golden Immortal elder.

“Thank you, Elder Tianji.”

Both of them replied. This was absolutely an unexpected harvest. They didn’t try to look at what treasure they had in their hands because they knew Tianji Zi would never give them something ordinary.

“Alright, Jiang Chen, come with me to Tianji Mountain.”

Tianji Zi said with a smile. He was quite delighted after accepting Jiang Chen as his disciple.

“Master can return first. I have promised to restore the Iron Dummy Array. I will head over to Tianji Mountain tomorrow once it’s done.” Said Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1174 – Rise to Fame

Jiang Chen always did what he promised. Plus, the Iron Dummy Array was an indispensable to the outer and inner sect. It could be used to find more talented genius in Skycloud Pavilion, so it was wasteful to leave it destroyed.

“Oh? You can repair the Iron Dummy Array?”

Tianji Zi was startled, changed his way of looking at Jiang Chen. It was too rare for a young genius to have a strong combat power, heaven defying means and proficiency in formations.”

“Yes. Disciple has some knowledge regarding formation. Plus, I have already fully examined this array. I can destroy it and also repair it.”

Said Jiang Chen with a confident smile that cleared off everyone’s doubts about him.

“Alright, I’ll be waiting for you at Tianji Mountain.”

Tianji Zi nodded his head. He had intended to help Jiang Chen fix the Iron Dummy Array, but since Jiang Chen was going to do it himself, it would be best as he could take a good look at his disciple’s true ability. More importantly, given the fact that Jiang Chen was already a true disciple of his, it was a different thing if his disciple repaired the array himself than a Golden Immortal elder fixing it. Due to Golden Immortal experts having a very high understanding about the Iron Dummy Array, it would be a very common thing for these elders to easily fix this array. Therefore, if a junior like Jiang Chen fixed the array by himself, it would project a different meaning and bring fame to the master.

Tianji Zi flew skywards and vanished in a blink. After his departure, the stifling atmosphere instantly returned to normal. Many of them couldn’t help but let out a sigh. The presence of a Golden Immortal expert created too much of a pressure for them.

Chuckle Chuckle

Li Zhong and Yuan Kui approached Jiang Chen. Despite being the Grand Elder of the inner sect and a late Divine Immortal expert, he didn't have the slightest disdain for Jiang Chen. No one would dare to show neglect towards the true disciple of Tianji Zi and no one wouldn't want to build good rapport with him.

“Jiang Chen, you have such a good fortune. Now that Elder Tianji has accepted you as his true disciple, no one knows how many other disciples will admire you. So, I have to congratulate you on this.”

Said Li Zhong. He and Yuan Kui were delighted, especially Yuan Kui. As the Grand Elder of outer sect, he had the feeling of exaltation upon seeing Jiang Chen's performance today. He even received a rare reward from Elder Tianji. This made him smile like a happy man.

“I'll have to thank the two elders for giving me this opportunity.”

Jiang Chen held his fists and expressed his sincere gratitude. Initially, he wasn't qualified to enter the Iron Dummy Array. If it wasn't for these the two elders giving him the exception, it wouldn't be possible for him to break the Iron Dummy Array and become a true disciple of Tianji Zi.

“Jiang Chen, just do whatever you can about the Iron Dummy Array. It's okay if you can't fix it.”

Said Li Zhong, in a tone that was changed completely. Before this, he was afraid that Jiang Chen would be punished because of his crime, but after being acknowledged as the true disciple of Tianji Zi, who else in the world would dare to punish him?

“Don't worry, elder. Jiang Chen will definitely fix it tomorrow.”

Said Jiang Chen. Fixing the Iron Dummy Array wasn't a difficult thing to him at all.

“Well, in that case, we'll make a move first. Currently, you not

only have become a true disciple, but also an inner sect disciple. Your current status is no longer the same as before. Should you face any problems in the inner sect in the future, you can just come and find me straight away.”

Li Zhong patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder, then left the scene with the other inner sect elders. Yuan Kui also left after bidding goodbye.

“A heaven defying figure has emerged in Skycloud Pavilion, but the competition among the inner sect disciples is too great. I’ve heard about the incessant friction amongst the true disciples as well. I think it’s hard for our sect to have its peace anymore.”

“Alright. We can’t get ourselves involved in this kind of competition. It’s a good thing for us that Jiang Chen has gone to the inner sect. We don’t have to worry about our cultivation anymore in the days to come.”

“That’s right. We have finally sent a disastrous being away from the outer sect. Before this, I was worrying for him that he couldn’t pass the Iron Dummy Array. Let’s return to the outer sect now. From now on, we won’t have anything to do with Jiang Chen anymore. We’ll just watch him bring disaster to the inner sect.”

.....

Those outer sect disciples felt envious and at the same time, relieved that a disastrous genius was gone for good.

“This bastard seems very proud of himself. If he thinks that he can roam lawlessly in the inner sect after becoming a true disciple, he’s making a big mistake, because there are plenty of geniuses like him in Skycloud Pavilion.”

“Correct. The competition amongst the disciples in Skycloud Pavilion is very fierce. It doesn’t only include the conflict among the disciples, but also many high-rank elders. The true disciples of different elders will also compete with one another. Tianji Zi has

made lots of enemies because of his eccentric behavior. Therefore, Jiang Chen's future daily life isn't going to be as pleasant it looks now."

"Come on! Are you trying to say that grapes taste sour because you can't taste it? He has become someone else's true disciple. Do you dare offend him?"

.....

Many inner sect disciples were envious of Jiang Chen's luck.

After the incident of the Iron Dummy Array was over, most of the inner and outer sect disciples had left. This incident was destined to set off a wave of attention in Skycloud Pavilion. It was believed that not long after this, it would also be spread to every corner in Skycloud Pavilion. Even those Divine Immortal core disciples and supreme Golden Immortal elders would know about Jiang Chen, a peerless genius that had been born from this incident.

There were a few of them who hadn't left, instead they walked towards Jiang Chen. The one leading was Fu Hui.

"Brother Jiang, it seems like I have underestimated you once more. It's truly intoxicating to see you succeed and become a true disciple. Congratulations.

Fu Hui held his fist and congratulated Jiang Chen from the bottom of his heart, but at the same time, he sighed in disbelief. Before bringing Jiang Chen to Skycloud Pavilion, he wouldn't have thought that Jiang Chen would be able to do such an earth-shaking thing in such a short period of time.

However, this also made Fu Hui understand the fact that Jiang Chen's ability and potential was far more terrifying than he had imagined. Now that Jiang Chen had become a true disciple, his status had transcended his. He was thinking of relying on his relationship that he built in the inner sect to support Jiang Chen,

but now, it seems like Jiang Chen had already found himself a supporter.

“It was all thanks to brother Fu’s guidance.”

Smiled Jiang Chen. Fu Hui did play a great role in making all of these happen by bringing Jiang Chen into Skycloud Pavilion.

“Brother Jiang, let me introduce them to you. They are all inner sect disciples. We are now a family. This is brother Meng Jie who has already reached the late Heaven Immortal realm.....”

Fu Hui started to introduce his comrades and friends to Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1175 – Repairing the Iron Dummy Array

Fu Hui was good at making friends and had built quite a good prestige in the inner sect. So naturally, he had made a few close friends in the inner sect. Each of his friends were considered top geniuses in the inner sect. If it was before, they wouldn't come forward to make friends with a half-step Heaven Immortal disciple. However, after witnessing Jiang Chen's ability themselves, none of them dared to look down on him anymore. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had become the true disciple of Tianji Zi. His future achievement would surely be limitless.

Whether it was in the aspect of status or position, Jiang Chen had surpassed them in both. Befriending Jiang Chen would give them an advantage – indirectly getting a strong backer.

“Brother Jiang's talent is amazing and admirable.”

Meng Jie held his fists at Jiang Chen. Despite being a late Heaven Immortal expert, he wouldn't dare show his usual arrogance to Jiang Chen.

“That's right. Brother Jiang is a rare monstrous genius and destined to have an immeasurable achievement in the future. Now that brother Jiang has become the true disciple of Elder Tianji, brother Jiang's status in Skycloud Pavilion will soar to the top. I even have to rely on brother Jiang in the future.”

“It's true. Although brother Jiang has only been in Skycloud Pavilion for less than a week, we have already heard a lot of your heroic deeds. Plus, a friend of brother Fu is also a friend of ours. So, brother Jiang will always have a spot in the inner sect.”

“Yeah. Although brother Jiang is also an inner sect disciple like us, brother Jiang now possess the status of a true disciple, a very noble position in the sect.”

.....

A few of them began to flatter Jiang Chen crazily. Jiang Chen's only response to these words was to chuckle pleasantly. They all knew Jiang Chen's current status very well, it was no longer the same as before. So, it was common for them to befriend Jiang Chen now.

“Brother Fu's friends are also my friends. Besides, we have to look after each other in the future.”

Said Jiang Chen with a smile. He naturally wouldn't refuse the good intention of these people. It was necessary for him to build more rapport with people around if he wished to shine in Skycloud Pavilion.

“Brother Jiang, although you are riding on the crest of success right now, you still have to be careful. There are also lots of true disciples in the inner sect. It's true that ordinary inner sect disciples won't dare to offend you, but it won't be the same to those true disciples. Additionally, Elder Tianji's eccentric and unreasonable attitude has created conflicts with numerous elders. As such, I'm afraid that those true disciples won't give you a peace of mind.”

Fu Hui warned. The other few also nodded in agreement. As disciples in the inner sect, they were far clearer than Jiang Chen about the situation in the sect.

“They'd better not mess with me.”

A cold light flashed off his eyes, sending chills down everyone's spine. Although they had only met Jiang Chen for the first time, they were well aware of Jiang Chen's past deeds and the things he did back in the outer sect. They deeply understood that this wasn't a guy to be trifled with, and now with the support of Tianji Zi, he was going to be all-powerful.

It seemed like Skycloud Pavilion would become even livelier than

before.

“If brother Jiang needs anything in the days to come, you can ask for my help and I’m sure that I will do my best to help you.”

Meng Jie patted his own chest and expressed a heartfelt promise. Normally, a late Heaven Immortal expressing his sincerity to a half-step Heaven Immortal disciple would be considered as a serious joke, but none of them felt this way, because this was the reality. The current Jiang Chen was no longer the previous Jiang Chen. He had potential and backer that everyone desired.

“En, if you all follow me, I’m certain that you guys will obtain boundless benefits. I’m going to fix the array now. You guys can make a move first.”

Said Jiang Chen. Although he didn’t have a very high cultivation base, he was born with a tyrannical aura, which couldn’t be compared to other people. Anyone who was with him would be easily influenced and subdued by this kind of aura.

After they left, only Jiang Chen remained. Shortly after that, a golden light flashed past and appeared next to Jiang Chen. He was no doubt Big Yellow.

“For God’s Sake, you surely are a lucky brat! Even the Iron Dummy Array is destroyed by you. That was nicely done!”

Big Yellow seemed very excited. Apparently, he had been observing the scene all this while. He had now jumped out because no one else was around.

“Big Yellow, you have come at the right moment. I’m going to need your help in fixing this array.” Said Jiang Chen.

“Give me some benefits or else I won’t do it.”

Big Yellow showed a dirty smile. He definitely was a being with good bargaining skills.

“You can have as many Immortal Meta Stones as you like.” Jiang

Chen chuckled generously.

“This is more like it.”

Big Yellow wagged his tail, satisfied, then walked into the interior of the palace.

“Given your knowledge of the Formation Holy Book, where do you think is the essence of this array at?” Asked Jiang Chen.

“There’s a formation named Seven Connecting Stars. Although this formation isn’t considered a profound one, it needs an incredibly meticulous mind to build it. The Iron Dummy Array was obviously built based on the concept of Seven Connecting Stars. The inventor of this formation was no doubt a master in formation.”

Big Yellow straightaway found the backbone of the array with just a glance. he was afraid that only Big Yellow had such a scary ability.

Jiang Chen raised his thumbs to Big Yellow. What Big Yellow said was similar to what he discovered inside the array. It was imaginable how simple it would be if he brought Big Yellow with him into the array.

“The uniqueness of the Iron Dummy Array is that its core isn’t located in the formation but in the body of a dummy. It’s going to be a cumbersome process to integrate the formation with the dummies closely. If I’m doing this alone, I’m afraid that it will take too long. So, I have to asked your help to see if there’s a way to quicken the process.” Said Jiang Chen.

“You have destroyed the core of the formation. Master dog can see that these dummies were built out of very rare materials. So there’s no way for us to restore the dummy that you destroyed. Originally, the dummies would be reformed after being damaged as the formation continued to circulate, but now, it won’t work anymore. Even if you re-initiate the circulation, those dummies

won't be able to rebuild itself anymore.”

Said Big Yellow. Then he continued. “However, the twenty eight dummies accurately occupy seven positions in the Seven Connecting Stars. Once a dummy is missing from the picture, it will tilt the balance and make the whole formation imperfect. Therefore, I suggest you to destroy another six dummies, leaving only three dummies in each position.”

“In that case, will that affect the power of the formation?”

Jiang Chen frowned, but Big Yellow had a point. Meticulousness was required in building the core of a formation. Once it had lost its balance, the formation created would never be complete.

Chapter 1176 – The Trouble Has Knocked the Door

In order to maintain the basic balance of the formation, it was necessary to destroy some of the dummies, because it was impossible for them to find exact same materials used to create these dummies.

But if some of the dummies were destroyed, the twenty eight dummies would be reduced to only twenty one. It was equivalent to the reduction of the force and was bound to affect the power of the formation, which was something that Jiang Chen didn't wish to see. This formation was invented and created by Ouyang He. Jiang Chen would never feel good if the creation of Ouyang He was destroyed under his hands.

“Don't worry. If it was an ordinary person who tried to reduce the number of the dummies, it would surely reduce its power, but if I, Big Yellow is the one to do it, I guarantee that there won't be a problem. I will add a new formation called Horn Array into the Seven Connecting Stars Array. Every three dummies will form a new formation and a triangular shape. This will give the most stable kind of coordination and can double the combat power of the three dummies. In other words, its combat strength will be equal to the strength of the previous six. Plus, the combination of the Seven Connecting Stars Array and Horn Array would not only cause any reduction in power, but enhance the overall power of it instead.”

Said Big Yellow proudly. This dog had two great advantages. One was the ability to find treasures and the other was his absolute knowledge in formation.

“Good.”

After hearing this, Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled, admitting that the Formation Holy Book was worthy of its reputation, and Big

Yellow's knowledge in this aspect definitely wasn't shallow.

"In this way, it will become harder for the geniuses to succeed in the Iron Dummy Array in the future. Anyway, this is a good thing as it can mold even greater geniuses."

Jiang Chen nodded and praised. It alleviated his feeling of remorse after knowing that the array would become more powerful than ever before.

"That's no big deal. Master dog can still make it more powerful." Big Yellow said arrogantly.

"Forget it. Or else it will be pointless."

Jiang Chen curled his lips. If the array was too overpowered, no genius would be able to come out of it, destroying its original purpose and eliminating all the motivation for the outer sect geniuses to improve further.

A while later, he approached a dummy, sent out punches, crushing six dummies in a row. The twenty eight dummies were now left with twenty one.

What happened next would solely rely on Big Yellow. He continuously spat out complicated patterns while both of his hooves were sweeping in the air. Lines of profound symbols of formation emerged all of a sudden.

Seeing Big Yellow so familiar with his technique, Jiang Chen didn't feel the need to help out. Big Yellow alone would be able to deal with this kind of formation. Furthermore, he didn't have a very clear understanding about the backbone of the Horn Array. So he might as well moved to one side and kept a lookout for Big Yellow.

Although Jiang Chen was the bystander, he knew that the process of combing the Seven Connecting Stars and the Horn array would be a slow process. Even with Big Yellow's ability, it would at least take a day's time to complete it. So what Jiang Chen needed

to do in this one day was to make sure that no one would disturb Big Yellow's work.

Deploying a formation was a complicated process that required precision and must be done in one time. Once the caster was interrupted, every effort spent would be in vain and a certain amount of damage would be delt to the caster.

Big Yellow was indeed skillful with the techniques, unceasingly sending out various kinds of imprints. The whole palace was filled with the Qi of formation. Streams of brilliant light was constantly shining at the different corners of the palace. Big Yellow's face was grim. He would appear at different positions at different times. Perhaps, he was now thinking that deploying a formation was a task that required seriousness.

The entire summit was silent as usual. No one emerged on the scene. The only purpose of people coming to this summit was for the Iron Dummy Array. It would remain quiet as long as no geniuses came to challenge it.

Late at night, after busting for almost a day, he finally restored the whole Iron Dummy Array, but what he had deployed was merely the Seven Connecting Stars. He hadn't even started to deploy the Horn Array yet. Even if he finished deploying the Horn Array, he still have one final process, integrating and placing the core of the formation inside the dummy – the most cumbersome process of all.

According to Jiang Chen's estimation, the entire formation would be fully deployed by daybreak tomorrow. Seeing Big Yellow working so hard, he couldn't help but reveal a trace of a smile. This dog had been making troubles for him, but was particularly useful at critical times. In Jiang Chen's heart, Big Yellow wasn't just a dog, he is also a noble Dragon-Horse Divine Beast and his sworn brother.

By dawn, Big Yellow had already finished the Horn Array and

was in the middle of the most critical step of integration. Once the integration was successful, the formation would be completed. This step was going to be the most difficult step of all.

He was afraid that only an abnormal being like Big Yellow could persist under such circumstances that required precision and intensity, despite the high pressure of the task. If Big Yellow was replaced by an ordinary person, that person would certainly be lying on the floor due to chronic fatigue.

Rustle!

There was a sudden rustling sound of footsteps coming from the outside of the palace. It wasn't loud but it couldn't escape Jiang Chen's ears.

Bang!

Before Jiang Chen could react, the gates of the palace were kicked open by a very savage brute force. Instantly, Jiang Chen frowned. No matter who the other party was, such an impolite practice was abhorrent. Presently, Big Yellow had already reached the most critical stage. He couldn't be disturbed.

Jiang Chen turned and saw three youths wearing Skycloud Pavilion's uniform breaking into the palace. The three of them were all Heaven Immortal experts. It went without saying that they were all inner sect disciples. The one who led the way was tall and burly, with a face full of moustache and beard. His appearance gave people the feeling of ferocity and evil, which didn't make him look kind than the others. His cultivation base was terrifying, late Heaven Immortal realm, whereas the other two were mid Heaven Immortal experts. Their faces had the same expression, arrogance and sulky, as if someone hadn't paid them money for a long time.

"I don't care who you are, you should all get loss immediately and silently."

Jiang Chen darted a glance at them and said very impatiently.

“What a good Jiang Chen, you sure is ignorantly arrogant.”

That youth with a hairy face was stupefied, he had never thought that Jiang Chen would be so arrogant, and would dare to use such words to his fellow inner sect disciples. However, he understood it after a moment of contemplation. Jiang Chen had become an elder's true disciple after all and he should have the guts to be this arrogant. If the youth was also a true disciple, he would've dominated lots of territories in the sect.

Chapter 1177 – Bringing Shame upon Oneself

“Get out of here, now!”

Jiang Chen’s voice had become incomparably cold. He didn’t know who these three guys in front of him were, but he could see that they were malicious, intentionally causing trouble despite knowing that he was the true disciple of Tianji Zi. This indicated that these men had someone very powerful supporting them, however, none of these concerned Jiang Chen. All this time, Jiang Chen had never been polite to these kinds of people, as he ensured that they always end up miserable. The more powerful their supporters were, the more miserable these people would end up.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, don’t get too arrogant. We came to check on the situation of the Iron Dummy Array under the orders of Senior Brother Qu Yuan. If you can’t repair the damaged array, you will be committing a serious crime and blaspheming the former pavilion master. I don’t think you can afford to bear that responsibility.”

A mid Heaven Immortal disciple harrumphed coldly, showing no sign of fear for Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, you truly have the guts to bring a dog into one of the most sacred places in Skycloud Pavilion. It is a blasphemy and outrageous to let it fix the array. Do you really think that you can do whatever you like after worshipping Elder Tianji Zi as your master?”

The other disciple denounced coldly.

Jiang Chen frowned deeper, realizing that these three men were just using excuses to cause him trouble. It seemed like that Qu Yuan wasn’t an easy opponent. What baffled Jiang Chen was why did Qu Yuan asked some disciples to come here and cause him trouble.

However, he remembered the internal competition in Skycloud Pavilion that Fu Hui and Meng Jie mentioned. Perhaps, Qu Yuan was also a true disciple of an elder as well. In the inner sect, no other disciples would dare to cause him trouble except those disciples with the same status as him unless they wanted a miserable consequence.

“Senior Brother Gao Yang, I think we should throw this dog out first before denouncing Jiang Chen’s act of blasphemy.”

That mid Heaven Immortal disciple spoke to the bearded youth named Gao Yang. Due to the limited number of late Heaven Immortal disciples in the inner sect, it was imaginable what Gao Yang’s position was in the inner sect.

“Go and capture that dog,” said Gao Yang with a cruel face.

“Yes, Senior Brother Gao.”

The man’s mouth overflowed with a cold smile. He strode towards Big Yellow, totally ignoring Jiang Chen’s existence. In their point of view, Jiang Chen merely had a great potential and was just a junior that hadn’t even reached the Heaven Immortal realm yet. Therefore, the gap between them had given them lots of confidence.

Pa!

However, as soon as the disciple had taken a step, he lost his mobility because a hand landed on his shoulder. The hand had the weight of a mountain, causing him to have difficulty in breathing.

“Jiang Chen, what are you doing?”

The disciple shook his head and said in a fierce tone.

“You’re tired of living.”

Jiang Chen’s face was ruthless. Force was exerted from his palm and a cracking sound was heard as the disciple’s shoulder was broken. Then, like a sandbag, the disciple was thrown out of the

palace by Jiang Chen.

“I know that you are targeting me. So come and settle the score with me.”

Jiang Chen looked over at Gao Yang and the other disciple, and said plainly.

The two of them were extremely astounded by Jiang Chen's strength. It seemed like Jiang Chen was much more difficult to deal with than what they had imagined. The one who was thrown out like a doll just now was a mid Heaven Immortal expert and an inner sect genius.

“Good...”

Gao Yang darted a glare at Jiang Chen, turned and walked towards the exit of the palace, knowing that it was inappropriate to start a fight here. Although he felt shocked, he wasn't scared because even if Jiang Chen could defeat a mid Heaven Immortal genius it didn't mean that he was a match for him. He was pretty confident in his ability.

After the two of them went out of the palace, Jiang Chen followed from behind and shut the gate tight. Currently, this was the most critical stage for Big Yellow. He should never be disturbed at this moment or else, their effort would only be in vain and worthless.

Outside the palace, the disciple who was thrown out got on his feet, but he wasn't able to lift his broken shoulder up. He didn't yell because of the acute pain, but his face seemed distorted.

“How was it? Are you alright?” asked Gao Yang.

“Senior Brother Gao, this man is more powerful than we had imagined. Despite him only being a half-step Heaven Immortal, I didn't even have the chance to resist his attack.”

The disciple whispered softly, staring at Jiang Chen with some fear. They hadn't expected Jiang Chen to be this powerful at the

beginning.

“I will give you a chance. Get lost now! I don’t care who that shit Qu Yan is, you’d better not mess with me again because you can’t afford to,” said Jiang Chen in an icy cold tone.

“Jiang Chen, you are too arrogant. It’s not a good thing to be this arrogant and bossy, you have just arrived in Skycloud Pavilion. I’ll teach you a good lesson on how to behave on behalf of Senior Brother Qu Yuan,” said Gao Yang haughtily.

“Is that so? Then I will make sure you won’t have a chance.”

Jiang Chen raged. He never liked to give people too many chances. He only dealt unappreciative people in a single way—make those people regret provoking him in the first place.

“I’d would like to see what’s so special about this new disciple who caught Elder Tianji Zi’s eyes.”

Gao Yang’s Qi fluctuated. Waves of Qi rushed out like tides from his body. The Qi of a late Heaven Immortal was fully unleashed, sending chills down people’s spine.

Tai!

Gao Yang shouted with anger. His entire body lunged towards Jiang Chen like a barbaric bull with his fist dazzling like a sharp divine weapon. He appeared before Jiang Chen in just a few blinks. The cultivation he practiced was even more domineering compared to others – Body Cultivation. This was why he had always been so proud of his unusually strong physique. Any ordinary opponent who faced this kind of overbearing momentum would surely be frightened to death.

Now that he was merely facing a half-step Heaven Immortal opponent, Gao Yang naturally had the confidence in defeating Jiang Chen. He thought that he would only need one punch to turn Jiang Chen into a cripple. So he needed to restrain some of his strength, otherwise, he would kill this junior and infuriate Tianji

Zi. His sole intention of coming here was to teach Jiang Chen a lesson, after all.

However, attempting to fight Jiang Chen with his mere physical strength was a great mistake.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen harrumphed coldly, revealing a hint of disdain on his face. He struck his fist with lightning speed at Gao Yang’s. There was only one result to those who competed with Jiang Chen in physical strength, and that was bringing humiliation upon oneself.

Chapter 1178 – They Couldn't Afford to Provoke What They Provoked

Pa!

The collision of brute force produced firebolts and sparks. The moment Gao Yang's fist collided with Jiang Chen's, his facial expression changed completely. The result was far beyond his imagination. The strength of this half-step Heaven Immortal was somewhat unacceptable to him.

He only felt a thunderous force that was sharp and vast coming towards him. A force he couldn't resist. Despite the fact that he had exerted almost all of his strength, there was still an obvious gap between his and Jiang Chen's.

Ka Cha!

A bone-cracking sound was heard and Gao Yang was sent staggering backwards. Immediately, his two comrades helped him stabilize his body. One of his arm was dangling. His forehead was beaded with sweat. He could clearly feel that his other arm was dislocated. It was a serious injury. He could also feel an acute pain in his palm, making him numb.

“How?”

Gao Yang couldn't believe the result. It was unacceptable that his physique that he was most proud of was so vulnerable in front of Jiang Chen.

“Senior Brother Gao, this guys is too abnormal. We're no match for him.”

The disciple who hadn't attacked yet changed his facial expression entirely. His face had lost all the arrogance that he had before. Qu Yuan had told them to come and teach Jiang Chen a lesson, but Jiang Chen's scariness had far exceeded their expectations. The shock was unimaginable when one found out

that there was such a powerful half-step Heaven Immortal expert. Only those who experienced it knew how scary that was.

“Jiang Chen, we won’t forget today’s matter. Let’s go.”

After knowing that he wasn’t an opponent of Jiang Chen, he turned and left after leaving a cruel remark. If they continued to get entangled with Jiang Chen, they would only be the one to suffer defeat and loss. Although they hadn’t gotten the chance to teach Jiang Chen a lesson today, they had at least found out his true strength and their injuries were only minor.

Swoosh!

However, it was too late for them to go, Jiang Chen would certainly not allow that. Just as they turned around, Jiang Chen’s silhouette appeared in front of them, blocking their way.

“Are you thinking of leaving just like that?”

Jiang Chen crossed his arms and spoke indifferently. Apparently, these three had come looking for trouble. He would lose his face and prestige if these people left intact. Tianji Zi might even think that he was a timid guy when this news reached him.

“Jiang Chen, what do you think you’re doing? Don’t go too far,” said Gao Yang with a frown.

“Haha! This is ridiculous. You all came here to cause me trouble even before daybreak, but now you are saying that I’m going too far. In that case, I’ll have to show you my true color. I have already warned you all that you shouldn’t mess with me because you can’t afford to.”

Jiang Chen laughed. He turned his palm, and a long sword appeared in his hand and dropped it. The sword clanged in the ground. Then, he spoke coldly, “Each of you has to cut one of your arms as punishment for provoking me. After that, I will let you all go.”

“What?”

Hearing this, the three of them exclaimed together. Demanding each of them to cut off an arm? That must be a joke. Even though it was normal for inner sect disciples to have fights against each other, generally, there wouldn't be any major casualties and incapacitation. The bottom line was that they should never kill or maim their fellow disciples, however, Jiang Chen wanted one of their arms because of a conflict. This was no doubt overly cruel.

“This is the last chance that I'm giving all of you. If you all don't act now, I will personally cut off both of your arms, turning you all into cripples.”

Jiang Chen's expression remained unchanged. His cold eyes were emotionless. All of a sudden, fear started to build up inside of them. They could feel that Jiang Chen wasn't joking around. That pair of eyes certainly wasn't a pair of joking eyes. That was a pair of cold-blooded eyes that had experienced countless of killings. Inside those very eyes, every living thing was just superficial and it was common to slaughter them right away.

Moreover, at this time, the three of them finally realized another side of Jiang Chen. Even if Jiang Chen cut off both of their arms and legs, he would still be fine as he was a true disciple of Tianji Zi. Even the Law Enforcement Palace would have to show respect to Tianji Zi.

“Jiang Chen, don't cross the line. We are followers of Senior Brother Qu Yuan. He's a half-step Divine Immortal expert in the inner sect, and a supreme genius and a true disciple of a Golden Immortal elder. If you hurt us, you won't be able to bear the consequences,” said Gao Yang while gritting his teeth.

At this moment, there was no other way besides using Qu Yuan as their shield because he was no longer an opponent of Jiang Chen. As for this unsettled score, he would naturally have a chance to settle them in days to come.

“It seems like you still can't see the situation clearly, truly an

ungrateful one.”

Light flashed from Jiang Chen’s hands, and another sword emerged. It was the sharp Heavenly Saint Sword that looked like a blood-red dragon. The sword was swung at such unavoidably close distance, it was impossible for Gao Yang to dodge it.

If it was before, Jiang Chen would need his dragon form to deal with a late Heaven Immortal expert, but after advancing to the half-step Heaven Immortal realm and igniting his potential, his current power was more than enough to deal with any ordinary late Heaven Immortal expert.

Pu Chi!

A blood-red light shone. Gao Yang’s arm was cut off by Jiang Chen’s sword. Blood gushed out from Gao Yang’s severed arm, like a beautiful fountain.

“Argh! Jiang Chen, how dare you...”

Gao Yang didn’t think that Jiang Chen would really strike right after speaking. He wanted to exclaim immediately, but before he could finish his sentence, Jiang Chen made another slash, cutting another arm of his.

“Ah.....my arm, my arm.....”

Gao Yang finally let out a shrill cry that made others’ hair stand on end. Losing two arms at the same time dealt an unbearably huge blow to him physically and psychologically. Although he was a late Heaven Immortal expert, he had basically become a cripple after losing both of his arms. This would restrict his future achievements, making it extremely difficult for him to advance. This situation really made him desperate.

“I’ve given you a chance, but you don’t know how to appreciate it. This is just a small punishment. You should be glad that you’re still here and can still scream like a crying wolf.”

This had always been Jiang Chen’s means. In the eyes of his

enemies, he would always be the most ferocious and devilish being.

Chapter 1179 – Qu Yuan

Gao Yang's miserable screams made people feel jumpy. His arms were chopped off at the same time and blood was pouring out. On the other hand, Jiang Chen's face was as cold as a bloodthirsty devil king. The other two disciples were in the midst of shock, shivering in fear and didn't dare speak a word. The pressure given by Jiang Chen was too great.

“You two, do you want me to do it or you'll do it by yourselves?”

Jiang Chen looked at the two disciples emotionlessly.

“Jiang Chen, the sect forbids disciples from killing each other. The Law Enforcement Palace will never show mercy to you for how you are treating us.”

A disciple spoke in a quivering voice, attempting to use the Law Enforcement Palace to oppress Jiang Chen. Unfortunately, he failed to understand what kind of person Jiang Chen was.

“Jiang Chen, don't bring this too far. Indeed, we have made a mistake for provoking you today. We are now apologizing to you. Please let us go.”

Obviously, the other disciple was more aware of the situation. Not only did he realize the current situation, but also the ferocity and ruthlessness of Jiang Chen. They would never get a favorable result by opposing someone like Jiang Chen. The more they threatened him, the more dangerous their situation would become. Gao Yang was a good example of it.

“Don't talk crap to me. If you two don't do it in the count of three, I'll do it for you.”

Jiang Chen glared at the two with an icy cold and emotionless expression. After experiencing countless of massacres, he understood one fact. In this cruel world, benevolence was wasteful. One could only survive by making oneself stronger. If it

wasn't because of his powerful strength today, he would've been oppressed and humiliated by by these three intruders . Therefore, he would never be lenient to them.

The two of them exchanged a glance and saw the desperation in each other's eyes. They knew that Jiang Chen wasn't kidding with them and would never let them go so easily. At this point, they began to regret it, regret coming here. If they didn't provoke Jiang Chen, they could've continued to lead a desirable life in the inner sect, but now, everything had changed. This was what people said—one misstep that led to lifelong regret.

In the end, they had no choice but to compromise because they had no power and leverage against Jiang Chen.

Both of them gritted their teeth. Instead of bending down to get the sword that Jiang Chen dropped on the ground, each of them took out a combat weapon. They raised the swords and severed one of their arms. Blood gushed out uncontrollably, making the whole scene incomparably tragic.

This was an act of self-harming. One needed to be cruel-hearted in order to cut one's own arm. The two of them were left with no other option. Losing one arm was still better than losing both. There were also many other experts with one arm. They could cultivate and battle like the rest of those experts, but if both of their arms were cut off, they would certainly turn into a cripple. As such, the second half of Gao Yang's life was fundamentally destroyed.

“Jiang Chen, can we go now?”

One of them asked in an unsteady voice because of the pain.

“Begone.”

Jiang Chen darted a glance at them and said plainly. He never knew what mercy was when it came to his enemies.

“Jiang Chen, we aren't done with this yet. We will have our

revenge later. You have harmed the disciples of your sect. We will bring your crime to the Law Enforcement Palace's attention, no, we'll bring it to Senior Brother Qu Yuan. He's going to give you what you deserve."

Gao Yang, who had lost both of his arms, spat out threats again, and this frightened his two comrades to death. Quickly, they vanished along with Gao Yang. They knew that Gao Yang had already lost his senses after losing both of his arms. Obviously, Jiang Chen wasn't a person to be trifled with. It was still fine to delay their revenge. If they irritated this man because of their incessant threats, they were afraid that their arms wouldn't be the only thing that they would lose.

After the three left, Jiang Chen's expression turned incomparably cold. "Qu Yuan, I don't care who you are. You'd better not offend me, or else you won't be able to bear the consequences."

To Jiang Chen, the process of growing was certainly filled with troubles and stepping on others that is blocking his path. What he needed to do was to crush every one of these stepping stones and walk forward leisurely.

Skycloud Pavilion was no exception. Since he had decided to make Skycloud Pavilion prosper in the future, it was necessary to have bloodshed in the sect. In order to establish his own position in the sect, he must be ruthless and prove everything with his actions.

At the heart of the inner sect, was a private courtyard with a very quiet environment where the Immortal Qi was evidently denser compared to other places. It was imaginable that the person who stayed here possessed a unique position.

This was the residence of Qu Yuan. Being a half-step Divine Immortal supreme expert, he was considered an outstanding disciple in the inner sect, but this alone didn't qualify him to have

such a special cultivation environment. He had another identity – he was also a true disciple. His master was Elder Yang Shu, a supreme Great Luo Golden Immortal expert.

The strongest experts in the pavilion were Tian Muyun and Daoist Yufeng, both of which were half-step Immortal King experts. Yang Shu was one of the two elders sent by Tian Muyun to guard the Regenerative Lotus. This showed how extraordinary Yang Shu's identity was in the sect. Thus, who would dare to provoke the disciple of Yang Shu?

Therefore, Qu Yuan was basically like a miniature emperor in the inner sect. No one would dare to offend him because those Divine Immortal core disciples alone were enough to deal with any of the offenders.

One should know that Qu Yuan wasn't the only true disciple of Yang Shu. There were even stronger Divine Immortal core disciples who were Yang Shu's true disciples.

Therefore, every distinguished elder except for Tianji Zi had their own forces in the sect, or it should be said that every elder in the sect was building their own sphere of influence.

Given Qu Yuan's identity and status, if Jiang Chen had only passed the Iron Dummy Array's test and became an ordinary inner sect disciple, he wouldn't take the effort to pay him any attention, let alone creating troubles for him.

However, Jiang Chen possessed the same identity as him. The identity of a true disciple was very sensitive to all true disciples. Plus, his master, Yang Shu, had never gotten along well with Tianji Zi. That was why he came to find trouble for Jiang Chen and use Jiang Chen to humiliate Tianji Zi.

That was why Qu Yuan had sent those three to cause Jiang Chen some troubles by using the excuse of checking the array's situation. However, Jiang Chen had exceeded his expectation. He failed to realize that the people he sent were too weak for Jiang

Chen.

Chapter 1180 – Qu Yuan’s Fiery Anger

In the courtyard, Gao Yang and the other two were wailing pitifully like a child who had been suffering endless grievance and suddenly saw their mother, wanting to express all of their sufferings at once.

In front of them was a young man in white holding a folding fan. He had a very good-looking face, thick eyebrows, big eyes, and tall in stature with extraordinary demeanor, but his current facial expression looked grim. Normally, he would be swinging the folding fan but now, the fan was closed tightly.

No doubt, this youth was Qu Yuan, a disciple of Elder Yang Shu.

“Speak, what happened?” Qu Yuan clamored.

The three of them had been following him. They were ordered to create troubles for Jiang Chen, but what they brought back was only humiliation. Every one of them had lost an arm, except for the strongest among them who lost both of his arms. Anyone who dared to do this was no different than slapping Qu Yuan on the face.

Qu Yuan had guessed that this had to be related to Jiang Chen, but he couldn’t make himself believe it. Jiang Chen was merely a half-step Heaven Immortal expert. Certainly, he wouldn’t have such power to injure Gao Yang and the others so badly.

“Senior Brother Qu Yuan, you have to seek justice for us. That Jiang Chen is too violent and arrogant. He absolutely did not put you in his eyes. When we went there to check on the situation of the formation, we saw a dog was there helping him fix the array. That was certainly a humiliation to the Iron Dummy Array. We stepped forward to stop him, but we never thought that Jiang Chen is so powerful. We were no match for him.”

“That’s true, Senior Brother Qu. That abnormal being was too

powerful. Not even Senior Brother Gao Yang could stand against him. He said that we have offended him, and we must pay a price for that. So he cut off one of our arm. Because Senior Brother Gao Yang became angry and refused, Jiang Chen cut off both of his arms.”

“Senior Brother Qu, you have to seek justice for us. That Jiang Chen thought that he could be lawless after being accepted as a disciple of Tianji Zi. We have also mentioned your name, but that didn’t fazed him at all. He said that if you dare to provoke him, you will end up like us.”

.....

They sobbed incessantly, telling everything that happened to Qu Yuan. They didn’t add any unnecessary elements in the story because Jiang Chen’s arrogance and dominance were too much.

Hong...

After listening to the three of them, Qu Yuan’s anger exploded. He had never been so angry ever since he was accepted as a true disciple. He had almost forgotten the feeling of being angry.

“Good, good, good, Jiang Chen. No one has ever dared to ruin my reputation. Now, a bastard newcomer is acting so arrogantly, thinking that he can be lawless and unruly after becoming a true disciple. There are many disciples in Skycloud Pavilion and many of them are arrogant too, but not as unruly as this one.”

Qu Yuan was angered. What Jiang Chen did not only insulted and provoked him. If this matter was spread to the others, his reputation would be in jeopardy.

“Senior Brother Qu, that bastard didn’t care if we were your comrades. He only knew how to destroy, totally ignoring the rules of the sect. Why not we just sue him on the Law Enforcement Palace and let them punish him severely?” One person said.

Law Enforcement Palace was the most important section in the

sect, but any ordinary matters in the inner sect and outer sect would always be dealt by the Institute of Inner Sect and Outer Sect Elders. Their main focus was on the matters of core disciples and some higher ups of the sect.

However, Gao Yang was a special case. Jiang Chen had already become a true disciple, even the Institute of Inner Sect Elders wouldn't dare to get involved in this, offending a Golden Immortal elder was equivalent to finding trouble for themselves.

Therefore, they had to bring this matter to the Law Enforcement Palace if they wanted to seek justice. As the highest authority in the sect, the palace would certainly punish Jiang Chen severely to compensate what he did.

Pa!

But as soon as that disciple just finished speaking, Qu Yuan's palm landed on his face.

"Trash! If we get the Law Enforcement Palace involved just because of this puny Jiang Chen, where would I put my face? Even my master's reputation will be damaged. In the inner sect, there's nothing that I can't resolve." Qu Yuan said coldly.

This must be a joke. He had to solve this matter personally in order to regain his reputation and position in the inner sect. If the words were spread to the Law Enforcement Palace, it would only prove how incapable he was. At that time, he would become a laughing stock in the inner sect, and his master, Yang Shu, would punish him hard because of that.

"Yes, yes. Senior Brother Qu Yuan is truly wise and all-powerful. That Jiang Chen is surely no match for you. I suggested that idea too hastily. I hope Senior Brother Qu can forgive my mishap."

That person was frightened to death. He quickly provided an explanation and admitted his fault.

However, inside that man's heart, he began to swear. What the

hell was this? He had already lost one arm just to complete a task for Qu Yuan. Instead of getting any consolation and compensation, he was slapped on the face instead!

“Humph! How dare a puny Jiang Chen start a direct confrontation with me? In that case, I won’t be polite anymore. I will personally settle this score for all of you. Take these pills to recover some of your injuries first.”

Qu Yuan harrumphed coldly. A trace of killing intent was exuded from his eyes. Although he had given the three some vulnerary pills, they understood very well that these pills could not fully heal their wounds.

“That arrogant bastard! He has entirely offended Senior Brother Qu Yuan. He’s going to suffer after this.”

Gao Yang said violently, but his senses was overwhelmed with pain and suffering. Even if Qu Yuan killed Jiang Chen, it would not be enough to compensate the loss of his arms.

“All of you go and cultivate first. I will pay a visit to that Jiang Chen and see what made him so arrogant that he didn’t even respect me.”

After he finished speaking, he disappeared in a flash.

The three of them left the courtyard of Qu Yuan. They weren’t permitted to stay for a long time in such a noble place. They had to return to their own cultivation place.

In the palace, Big Yellow had already finished the final restoration of the Iron Dummy Array. He had combined the Seven Connecting Stars and Horn Array perfectly. Twenty one of the dummies could now coordinate with each other flawlessly. With what Big Yellow had done, the entire array became even more powerful.

“Brat, you have to compensate master dog well,” said Big Yellow.

After a long period of concentration, his state started to falter.

“How about one lotus leaf?”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow’s head. When Big Yellow heard the lotus leaf, his originally withered body suddenly pumped up. His low-spirit suddenly vanished in a flash.

Chapter 1181 – Life-and-Death Stage

“The array has already been repaired. Let’s go to Tianji Mountain.”

Jiang Chen closed the gates of the palace and was ready to head for Tianji Mountain.

“Now that you’ve cut off the arms of those three guys, that son of a b*tch Qu Yuan will surely never give up this matter. It looks like your life here wouldn’t have any peace,” said Big Yellow.

He knew it the moment Gao Yang and the other two came to create trouble for Jiang Chen, even though he had put all of his concentration on the array at that time.

“When has my days ever been peaceful?”

Jiang Chen shrugged, showing that this was none of his concern. From his journey until now, he had faced too many enemies and Qu Yuan definitely wasn’t one of the most powerful enemies he had faced.

Just as the both of them were about to fly over to Tianji Mountain, a strong Qi rushed towards them from the inner sect. Apparently, the incomer didn’t come here with good intention because there was anger and killing intent within the Qi.

“He’s fast.” Big Yellow curled his lips.

“Since he has come, let’s go and meet him to prevent anyone from thinking that we are timid.”

Jiang Chen’s mouth overflowed with smile and his eyes glittered.

Bang!

A figure in white-robed landed heavily on the ground, right in front of Jiang Chen. He was no stranger, he was Qu Yuan.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

Qu Yuan studied Jiang Chen from top to bottom. This was his first time seeing Jiang Chen. Although he was different from his imagination, it didn't dampen his intention of killing Jiang Chen.

"I guess that I must be very popular for so many of you to come looking for me. I hope you haven't come here to create trouble because I have just crippled the previous three who came." Jiang Chen said plainly. He had already guessed the identity of this visitor.

"Humph! No one in the entire inner sect dared to injure my people. You are the first, Jiang Chen, and you have to pay for what you have done." Qu Yuan harrumphed coldly.

"Unfortunately, you aren't qualified to do that."

Jiang Chen refuted sharply, knowing this person's intention and purpose, a dispute was unavoidable. So, he naturally wouldn't be polite to him.

Despite the fact that Qu Yuan was already a half-step Divine Immortal expert and an inner sect genius that was difficult to deal with, he didn't scare Jiang Chen. Now that Jiang Chen had already reached the half-step Heaven Immortal realm, killing a late Heaven Immortal expert was no longer a problem and he could even kill a half-step Divine Immortal in his dragon-form. He had obtained tremendous benefits from battling the dummies. So there was basically nothing he should worry about while facing this Qu Yuan.

"Hubris. You are the most arrogant person I've ever seen. Unfortunately, you aren't qualified to do that in front of me. Anyone who had offended my people in the inner sect had always ended up being miserable." Qu Yuan said coldly.

Despite his pride, he couldn't deny that Jiang Chen was the most outrageous man that he had ever met. The arrogance that Jiang Chen showed was just too excessive.

“Then you should try and see. I would also like to know how powerful the genius of inner sect actually is.”

Jiang Chen’s combat intent was ignited suddenly, feeling that the conflict was getting more interesting. At least this conflict had stirred up his passion in fighting.

“Very good, Jiang Chen. I was afraid that you won’t accept the fight. In that case, how about the two of us fight it out on the life-and-death stage?”

Qu Yuan’s eyes glittered as he spoke, looking at Jiang Chen with anticipation.

After listening to this, Jiang Chen’s facial expression turned icy cold all of a sudden. He and Qu Yuan didn’t know each other, but this stranger had already challenged him into the life-and-death stage on their first meeting. One should know that only people who nursed great grievance and hatred would settle it on the life-and-death stage.

Jiang Chen had already figured out that Qu Yuan hadn’t lunged at him now was because he wanted him to enter the life-and-death stage. According to the law of the sect, disciples were forbidden to kill each other, but when both party mutually agreed to settle the conflict on the life-and-death stage, they will be given an excuse to kill each other.

The situation had stirred up Jiang Chen’s desire to kill Qu Yuan. He only had one response to those people who wanted to kill him—let the person reap what the person had sown.

Jiang Chen thought that he was ruthless enough when he severed the arms of those three bastards, but this Qu Yuan was even more cold-blooded. He was willing to kill Jiang Chen just to save his own face.

“What’s the matter? You won’t dare to do it? Didn’t you say that you wanted to witness the power of an inner sect genius? I know

that you have the strength to kill a late Heaven Immortal expert and I admit that you are the most heaven defying genius that I have ever seen, however, you have offended me, which means that you are now only left with one route, death. If you don't dare to meet me on the life-and-death stage, kowtow before me and apologize now; ,and I will treat everything as if it never happened. I won't even ask you for compensation for the losses that I've suffered. What do you say?"

Qu Yuan was staring at Jiang Chen enthusiastically. He was eager to know how Jiang Chen would answer. It would be the best if Jiang Chen agreed to the fight. He would make sure that Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to get off from the stage alive. If Jiang Chen refused the challenge, he would need to kowtow before him.

It was already considered a very face-saving act to only ask the new disciple of Tianji Zi to kowtow before Qu Yuan, but the most important thing here was that Tianji Zi would never be able to raise his head among the higher ups anymore. He would become a laughing stock to every elder. Qu Yuan's master would be able to laugh at Tianji Zi whenever his master wanted.

"As you wish, I accept your challenge."

There was no reason for Jiang Chen to refuse the challenge. He knew very well what Qu Yuan's intention was. The battle between him and Qu Yuan was no longer similar to those struggle that often happened in the inner sect. This was a fight between two true disciples. Generally, fights between true disciples would eventually involve high-ranking figures.

Jiang Chen would never bring shame to Tianji Zi because of this incident. Since Qu Yuan had the intention to humiliate him, he would make sure that Qu Yuan would be the one being humiliated instead.

"Very well, Jiang Chen, you really have the guts. Come with me to the life-and-death stage now," said Qu Yuan.

He then leaped skywards and flew towards the direction of the inner sect. The next moment, war drums sounded from the inner sect. Qu Yuan was the one who produced it. Once the drum was sounded, it meant that a life-and-death battle was going to start soon.

“It seems like this guy seriously lacks patience. Little Chen, do you have certainty in this?” Big Yellow looked over at Jiang Chen.

“What do you think?”

Jiang Chen smiled and then summoned the Flaming Wings and rushed towards the inner sect. Big Yellow was laughing pleasantly at the back. Jiang Chen had already created a big event yesterday. Another huge event was going to happen in no time. Others might not know Jiang Chen well, but not Big Yellow. Jiang Chen would never do things that he wasn't certain. Since he had agreed to take the challenge, Qu Yuan would surely not end up well.

“It's the sound of the war drum. It's coming from the life-and-death stage. Could it be that someone is having a life-and-death battle?”

“Quickly, let's go over there and have a look. It has been a while since there are people engaging in a life-and-death battle, which made the sound of the war drum strange to me. I wonder who are the ones who have such grievance.”

“Let's see who they are. There's going to be a good show today.”

.....

Chapter 1182 – Surprising the Inner Sect

Dong... Dong... Dong...

The sound of the war drum instantly reverberated across the sky above the inner sect. Although it had been long since they last heard the war drum, the sound of the drum was still very familiar to them. As with tradition, someone must hit the drum before a life-and-death battle started. This duel would be witnessed by innumerable disciples.

As the sound of the drum echoed from the stage, silhouettes of disciples could be seen flying towards the martial arena one after another. Every life-and-death battle that took place was a great event to the inner sect. Everyone was eager to find out who would survive in the battle.

If there was no deep hatred and grievance, disciples would never go to the life-and-death stage. Everyone knew that this stage was meant for resolving conflicts by using their own lives. Once the agreed parties stood on this stage, their lives would be destined by the Heavens and any death that happened in this stage was acceptable.

Therefore, once the two parties decided to use the life-and-death stage to resolve their issues, it indicated that the both of them were convinced that they could never resolve their grudges aside from this deadly stage.

The sound of the war drum not only alerted countless of inner sect disciples, it also alarmed the Institute of Inner Sect Elders.

“What’s going on? How could someone be hitting the war drum now?”

“Ai! This war drum hasn’t been sounded for a very long time. I wonder who those two disciples are. Why would they decide to resolve their issues and grudges using their lives?”

“Youngsters are always impulsive. Let’s go and check what’s going on. After all, a life-and-death battle isn’t a small matter. Plus, we are still unclear who are involved in this battle.”

.....

All of the elders came out from the institute. The life-and-death battle was a huge matter in the inner sect and as elders, they should be concerned about it.

On the life-and-death stage stood Qu Yuan formally. His face was brimming with pride and grin. This time, he was going to eliminate Jiang Chen openly.

“Look, it’s Qu Yuan, how could it be him?”

“He’s really Qu Yuan. Who is the blind person who offended this genius? However, that person must have too much guts to accept the fight on the life-and-death stage with Qu Yuan.”

“That’s right. Qu Yuan is a true disciple and an outstanding one in the inner sect. No one in the inner sect would dare to provoke him. Anyone who did never ended up well, seeing him on this battle stage is definitely the first time. I don’t know who has such a nerve to force Qu Yuan to do this.”

.....

Everyone seemed very surprised when they found out that the one standing on the stage was Qu Yuan who was regarded as a miniature ruler in the inner sect that no one would ever dare to offend. Today, however, someone had agreed to fight Qu Yuan on this stage. In truth, this was no different than seeking death. That person must have supreme guts to seek his death this way.

When the elders saw Qu Yuan, they were shocked. At this time, everyone started to show interest in guessing who Qu Yuan’s opponent was.

Just as everyone was preoccupied by their curiosity, a youth with sprouted Flaming Wings flew towards their direction and landed

on the stage, standing opposite of Qu Yuan.

“Jiang Chen!”

Almost all of them exclaimed when they saw the incomer. The elders’ eyes went wide, they couldn’t believe what they were seeing.

“Damn! This bastard again? He has already passed the trial of the Iron Dummy Array and today, he is engaging in a life-and-death battle with Qu Yuan? I don’t know anyone else that had this much audacity.”

“Is this guy really not afraid of death? He seems to be only at the half-step Heaven Immortal realm. On what basis can he fight with the emperor of the inner sect? Could he be thinking that he can do whatever he can after gaining the true disciple title? As soon as he stepped into the life-and-death stage, his identity as a true disciple isn’t going to work anymore. In addition, Qu Yuan is also a true disciple.”

“What surprises me is how did these two guys collided with each other. If I’m not mistaken, that Jiang Chen had just became an inner sect disciple a day ago and both of them haven’t met one another, let alone having any grudges between them. So why did they decide to seek for settlement on the life-and-death stage?”

.....

Numerous people found it hard to accept and couldn’t help rolling their eyes when they saw that Qu Yuan’s opponent was Jiang Chen. They wouldn’t have believed it if they didn’t see it with their own eyes. Although the both of them had the title of true disciple, the difference in cultivation base was just too great—a half-step Heaven Immortal expert fighting a half-step Divine Immortal expert? No one knew where Jiang Chen had gotten such a nerve from.

“Qu Yuan, Jiang Chen, what is going on between the two of you?”

Qu Yuan, as one of the elites in the inner sect, why would you engage in a life-and-death battle with a half-step Heaven Immortal junior? Did you consider the damage that will be done to your reputation in doing so?”

Grand Elder Li Zhong stood out and spoke. He had a very good impression of Jiang Chen, but he knew Qu Yuan even more. Jiang Chen could never afford to offend someone like Qu Yuan. In his point of view, there was a huge gap in cultivation between these two. Therefore, Jiang Chen only had one result, death without a burial place.

As a Grand Elder, as soon as he saw the difference in this duel, he naturally had to step up.

“Grand Elder, this Jiang Chen isn’t an ordinary half-step Heaven Immortal expert. Earlier today, I have sent Gao Yang and two others to check the progress of the restoration of the Iron Dummy Array . Unexpectedly, they saw this bastard letting a dog to do the repair. This is absolutely a humiliation to the Iron Dummy Array. When Gao Yang and the others reprimanded him for such insult, he amputated both of Gao Yang arms and each arm of the other two. Everyone should know that Gao Yang and the others are my people. When Jiang Chen incapacitated them, I can turn a blind eye to the fact that he has violated the taboo of maiming a fellow disciple, but I can’t accept the fact that he isn’t even respecting me. If I don’t seek justice in this matter, I am surely going to be the laughing stock in the inner sect”

Qu Yuan recounted what had happened to his three followers, giving him plenty of reasons to kill Jiang Chen.

“What?”

After hearing Qu Yuan’s words, everyone exclaimed. Countless pairs of eyes fell upon Jiang Chen. Apart from disbelief, they also felt shocked. Not just them, even Li Zhong was gaping at Jiang Chen. Gao Yang was a late Heaven Immortal expert, but he wasn’t

even a match for Jiang Chen. They wondered how powerful this Jiang Chen actually was. Wasn't it too much and heaven defying for a half-step Heaven Immortal expert to be this powerful?

“No wonder Qu Yuan proposed to have a life-and-death battle with him. This incident didn't give any face to Qu Yuan at all. Given his pride, he would surely never let go of Jiang Chen.”

“Is that Jiang Chen really that scary? Defeating Gao Yang as a mere half-step Heaven Immortal? I have never heard of such a terrifying combat power. How heaven defying is he actually? If this is really the case, he must have at least the combat strength of a half-step Divine Immortal expert. Furthermore, the fact that he has the nerve to fight Qu Yuan in the life-and-death stage proved that he was confident enough in this match. I'm truly amazed by this.”

“This Jiang Chen is too violent. How can he amputate Gao Yang and the others? It was akin to annihilating their future. According to the rules, he must be punished for it. However, I couldn't even begin to imagine that he would agree to fight a life-and-death match against Qu Yuan. It seems like he has no clue of Qu Yuan's power at all. And this will cost him his life.”

.....

Conversations filled the air like waves. Jiang Chen's power had gone beyond anyone's imagination. Even if he decided to have a life-and-death fight with Qu Yuan, it didn't make any of them optimistic. After all, they were very clear of Qu Yuan's means. Certainly, Qu Yuan wasn't an opponent that a mere half-step Heaven Immortal expert could handle.

Chapter 1183 – If You Can't Afford to Give Ground, then Don't Do It

While most of them were still in shock, they had already concluded the grudges between Qu Yuan and Jiang Chen. Everyone was very clear that Jiang Chen wasn't the one to blame for the root of the problem even though he was the one who amputated Gao Yang and the other two's arms.

Checking out the situation of the Iron Dummy Array ought to be the responsibility of the Institute of Elders. Qu Yuan was not the person in charge of such matter. He took the initiative to create trouble for Jiang Chen after he found out that Jiang Chen was the true disciple of Tianji Zi. After all, many of them knew the relationship between Tianji Zi and Yang Shu and the conflicts that had happened between them. In other words, the fight between Qu Yuan and Jiang Chen was no longer a fight between two disciples. This battle was also related to the conflicts of the two elders. So, even Li Zhong shouldn't involved himself in this.

“Jiang Chen, were all those things true?” Li Zhong asked with a frown.

“They are true, but I naturally had a reason for severing their arms, it was already a miracle that they are still alive.”

Said Jiang Chen plainly. There wasn't any change and nervousness on his facial expression while standing on the stage of life-and-death. This fact alone was admirable. In the inner sect, he was afraid that only Jiang Chen could stay so calm in front of Qu Yuan.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, you are being too arrogant. Unfortunately, your pride will only be trampled by my foot here.”

Qu Yuan harrumphed coldly. Now that they were on the life-and-death stage, not even the Grand Elder had the right to interfere in

their fight now. He currently felt that he had a hundred ways of killing Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, have you really agreed to fight a life-and-death battle with Qu Yuan?”

Li Zhong continued to speak. It seemed like as long as Jiang Chen say the word ‘no’, he would have the right to stop the fight. In his point of view, no matter how talented Jiang Chen was, he definitely wasn’t an opponent of Qu Yuan. Anyone could imagine how much potential Qu Yuan had to be selected as a true disciple by Yang Shu. There was basically no one in the inner sect that dared to offend him. Plus, there was a huge difference between Jiang Chen and Qu Yuan’s cultivation. As such, Jiang Chen could never beat Qu Yuan.

“Yes, elder. I have already come and is standing here. There’s no reason for me to back away now.”

Jiang Chen smiled, his face was brimming with unshakable confidence. Qu Yuan was indeed a very powerful opponent, but it was also because of this that it raised Jiang Chen’s interest in fighting him.

“Ai!”

Li Zhong shook his head and sighed, then stopped speaking anymore. These two were the best amongst the young generation. Each of them had their own pride. He was convinced that Jiang Chen would never listen to his advice and if he spoke too much to Jiang Chen, it would instead offend Qu Yuan which wouldn’t do him any good.

“This Jiang Chen sure is fearless. He is clueless about the terror of Qu Yuan.”

“That’s right. This incident was started by Qu Yuan. Given Jiang Chen’s wisdom, could he not see that the life-and-death battle was a plot of Qu Yuan? How could he agree to that?”

“I see that Jiang Chen isn’t any fool. He’s smarter than any one of us. The fact that he dared to confront Qu Yuan in the life-and-death stage only proved that he has enough confidence. Furthermore, he was able to defeat Gao Yang with ease using his half-step Heaven Immortal cultivation base. This indicated that his current strength is equivalent to the strength of half-step Divine Immortal. Perhaps he really can fight Qu Yuan.”

.....

Those inner sect elders sighed, feeling that Jiang Chen shouldn’t have agreed to Qu Yuan, because even an idiot can see through Qu Yuan’s plot, however, some of them believed that Jiang Chen had some kind of trump cards or means, or else he wouldn’t act so recklessly.

“Jiang Chen, I will let you attack first, to prevent you from saying that I’m bullying you. I will allow you to attack me three times before I attack.” Qu Yuan said with disdain.

Hong.....

As soon as Qu Yuan’s voice faded, Jiang Chen’s body changed. A surge of blood and Qi was unleashed from his body, then his appearance turned into a half-human, half-dragon. His transformation made countless pair of eyes went wide, including Qu Yuan. All of them had forgotten that Jiang Chen had a terrifying transformation technique.

“That’s a very horrifying transformation technique. His combat strength has been increased by at least ten times.”

“Yes, it sure is scary. I have never seen such a technique before. It’s even more powerful compared to those Forbidden Techniques. That’s tenfold increase in combat strength. That’s unimaginable.”

“Sure enough, this Jiang Chen has some very powerful trump card. Despite my late Heaven Immortal cultivation base, I can feel a huge difference in Qi between me and Jiang Chen. If I go into the

battlefield, I'm afraid that I will instantly be killed by him. He's truly a monstrous genius."

.....

Jiang Chen's dragon form immediately caused a commotion in the crowd. When the words about Jiang Chen destroying the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect spread across One-Line-Sky, none of them had paid any attention to the transformation technique that Jiang Chen used. So, it was only logical for them to be shocked by it the moment they saw it with their own eyes for the first time, except for Tianji Zi who had already seen this form using the crystal ball.

"It's just some unnecessary tricks. Do you think that this will make you competent enough to fight me? How ignorant!"

Qu Yuan showed a cold smile. Even after witnessing the scary transformation of Jiang Chen, he still didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes. Their difference in cultivation base had given him a huge advantage over his opponent and a boost in confidence.

"So, do I still have the three strikes?" Asked Jiang Chen.

"Of course. When have I ever broken my word?"

Both of Qu Yuan's hands were placed behind his back, looking arrogant to the extreme.

"Well then, here it comes."

As soon as Jiang Chen's eyes shivered, his entire body swooshed away from the ground, like an arrow being shot from a bow, appearing before Qu Yuan in the next moment. What charged forward at Qu Yuan was the True Dragon Palm – a scary and huge blood-red dragon claw that slammed forth with mountain-like force. The terrifying energy had already locked onto Qu Yuan's position and trapped all the airflow around him.

"What?"

Qu Yuan's face changed. He wouldn't have thought that Jiang Chen would be this scary. The force of this strike was enough to pull a mountain up. Even he would not dare to deal with this unguarded.

Immediately, he struck out a few brilliant palm seals, colliding with Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm. It caused the air of the void to roll and spark.

"You have already raised your guard on my first strike. If you can't afford to give ground, then don't say it in the first place. You are now embarrassed because of saying it."

Jiang Chen's taunt entered Qu Yuan's heart like a knife, giving him the urge to spit out blood.

At this time, Qu Yuan's facial expression had already darkened entirely. Just now, he was the one who declared to let Jiang Chen attack him three times before attacking. In the end, he was forced to block the attack of Jiang Chen's first strike. To put it bluntly, this was too embarrassing and humiliating.

"Jiang Chen, I have to admit that I have underestimated you earlier. But don't you get too arrogant because of that. Do you think that you can fight me with these petty skills? Your fate has already been doomed the moment you stepped on this life-and-death stage today."

Qu Yuan's black hair fluttered as the wind blew. That strike had made him lose all his face and had infuriated him. After this, he would never underestimate Jiang Chen anymore. He would kill Jiang Chen no matter what today.

Chapter 1184 – Evenly Matched

Hong.....

Qu Yuan was angered. He unleashed all the Qi of a half-step Divine Immortal. It flowed out like scary tides, waves after waves. If Jiang Chen was an ordinary opponent, he would already be frightened to death and lost the spirit to fight.

“Move the Mountains.”

Qu Yuan clamored and struck out a powerful combat technique. Previously, he had declared to let Jiang Chen attack three times first before he attacked, but in the end, he failed to even let Jiang Chen make an attack without defending it. It had caused him to lose a great deal of face, so there's no reason for him to be lenient with Jiang Chen anymore. He had decided to get rid of Jiang Chen in the fastest way to regain his own dignity.

For a moment, the entire platform was brimming with terrifying Qi waves. Qu Yuan's attack was undeniably powerful. The most important element in casting this skill was its momentum. When the scary waves of energy turned into fearsome tides, it had the force that could move mountains and could oppress opponents totally.

“You do have a very strong momentum, but it's nothing more than a piece of cake in front of me.”

Jiang Chen's combat intent was majestic. All of his combat intent had been fully ignited by Qu Yuan's power. Such an intense battle was something that he had yearned for. While facing Qu Yuan's technique, he casually struck out the Golden Dragon Seal – the most powerful attack amongst the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seals.

Roar.....

Dragon roars rumbled across the sky and three golden dragons

spiraled out. Each dragon was dozens of meter in size, alive and lifelike, like a real dragon, carrying an unparalleled destructive force. At three different directions, they smashed against the waves of Qu Yuan's technique.

Hong Long.....

Terrifying sound of explosion was heard. There were also sounds of tsunami and dragons. Destructive energy waves rippled all over the area, causing the void to tremble violently. The battle was intense. The scene had become unusually spectacular. Dazzling brilliance filled the sky above the stage. Even though it looked very beautiful, there was endless destruction behind this beauty.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

After the collision, Qu Yuan and Jiang Chen retreated three steps to stabilize themselves. Jiang Chen could feel his blood and Qi going chaotic inside, but after injecting a large amount of wood spiritual Qi into his body, he recovered instantly. His eyes had become incomparably sharp, like a cold blade, staring at Qu Yuan. Such an outcome was within his expectation. It was true that his cultivation base was enough to kill any ordinary half-step Divine Immortal expert, but Qu Yuan was no ordinary expert. Therefore, it wouldn't be easy for him to get rid of this target.

However, the more even their strengths were in battle, the higher the chance that it could stimulate Jiang Chen's fighting spirit, and battling a genius like Qu Yuan was very beneficial to him.

“What?”

Compared to Jiang Chen's composure, Qu Yuan was astounded. His eyes were fixing at Jiang Chen unblinkingly, he couldn't believe that this was real. He had gained a new understanding about Jiang Chen's terrifying combat strength. It seemed like he had underestimated Jiang Chen again.

The situation where the both of them were equally matched shocked the other inner sect disciples and elders. Every one of them widened their eyes, not daring to believe everything that was going on. Everyone changed the way they looked at Jiang Chen drastically, realizing that they had greatly underestimated Jiang Chen.

“My god! What is the extent of power of this abnormal genius? How could he and Qu Yuan possibly be evenly matched? I wouldn’t have believed this if I haven’t seen it with my own eyes.”

“That’s right. He’s merely a half-step Heaven Immortal expert. After so many years of living, I have never seen a half-step Heaven Immortal expert that possesses such a powerful combat strength, truly unbelievable. Although I’m reluctant to admit it, Jiang Chen was definitely the most monstrous genius that I have ever seen. His future achievements are bound to be limitless.”

“It’s too terrifying and completely not human. Is he really a half-step Heaven Immortal expert? Even if it’s because of the tenfold increase in his combat strength, he still can’t be this strong. Qu Yuan was able to become a true disciple because of his extraordinary gift and talent, but comparing him to Jiang Chen, it made him lose the eligibility of becoming a genius. If both of them were on the same level, I’m afraid that Jiang Chen could finish Qu Yuan off in one blow.”

.....

No one wasn’t startled. Although Jiang Chen and Qu Yuan only had one collision, it had undoubtedly caused a great uproar. At this point, no one dared to guarantee who would win in this match because Jiang Chen had no problem fighting against Qu Yuan.

“Never thought that this Jiang Chen is much stronger than we had imagined.”

An elder sighed with astonishment.

“It seems like today’s battle is going to be interesting. Jiang Chen’s power has exceeded everyone’s imagination. It won’t be easy for Qu Yuan to kill Jiang Chen. Also, Qu Yuan isn’t as simple as he looks. He has yet to show his powerful trump cards and means. Therefore, Jiang Chen is still in great danger.”

Grand Elder, Li Zhong said. Although he was still worried for Jiang Chen, his worries for Jiang Chen wasn’t as much as before. Now, he was even anticipating what the outcome of the next round of battle would be. If Jiang Chen was able to create another miracle by defeating Qu Yuan today, he would surely become a legend in Skycloud Pavilion.

Of course, Li Zhong thought that this was impossible. In his point of view, Jiang Chen was already considered strong for being able to stay alive in battle until now.

Hong Long.....

On the platform, Qu Yuan lunged once more, like an aggressive tiger, carrying an endless storm of energy towards Jiang Chen.

On the other side, Jiang Chen was still as calm. He struck out the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal and True Dragon Palm alternately, continuously colliding with Qu Yuan’s attacks. The two of them fought inextricably and became the center of the stormy whirlpool. There was no way to tell who was gaining the upper hand.

Such a fierce battle lasted for more than 10 minutes before coming to a stop. The two of them now stood opposite each other. Even until now, no clear victor could be determined. Most of them couldn’t help but exclaim once more. Those who had thought that Jiang Chen could resist Qu Yuan’s attack mainly due to luck had changed their point of view completely. A person could be lucky once or twice. It was certainly not luck that he could stay undefeated for more than 10 minutes. It was his true power and capability.

“Both are evenly matched. I can’t believe that he could actually force Qu Yuan into a draw. This makes him undeniably heaven defying. Even those half-step Divine Immortal experts in the sect, only very few of them could draw with Qu Yuan.”

“Such a figure has gone beyond our imagination. There will always be some unusual beings in this world. Their existence can never be judged based on common sense. This is what Jiang Chen is. He is a peerless genius, the son of Heavens and the envy of the other geniuses and disciples.”

.....

Chapter 1185 – Nine Ways to Perish

This was Jiang Chen's first time entering the inner sect right after his success in the Iron Dummy Array. It was indeed a very unusual way of entering the inner sect because every other disciple was required to obtain the identity jade card first before joining the inner sect.

Every inner disciple was stirred up by Jiang Chen's power, making him the center of attention; a pinnacle being on his first day of arriving in the inner sect. If he could defeat Qu Yuan today, his prestige would be establish in the inner sect. From then on, no one would dare to offend him anymore.

Of course, many were expecting Jiang Chen to create another miracle by defeating Qu Yuan. However, nobody had ever imagined that Jiang Chen would kill Qu Yuan. Despite this being the life-and-death stage, Qu Yuan had a very special identity. Even if Jiang Chen was extremely audacious, he wouldn't dare kill Qu Yuan, killing him would be similar to waging war against Elder Yang Shu.

"Jiang Chen, you've really enraged me. You have made me lose all my face by forcing me to such an extent. Next, I will end your life as quickly as possible so that your soul can stay on this stage forever!"

Qu Yuan's anger soared uncontrollably. Even with his level and ability, he couldn't believe that he hadn't won yet even after more than 10 minutes of continuous exchange. This was humiliating and a serious disgrace to him.

"What else do you got? Quit talking crap and show it all out."

Jiang Chen sneered, totally not putting Qu Yuan in his eyes. He had gained a better understanding of Qu Yuan's ability. If he wasn't mistaken, Qu Yuan would use his trump card sooner and by doing so, Qu Yuan's energy would be severely consumed after that,

while he, would still be as vigorous as before. Currently, he already had 450 000 dragon marks and exuberant blood and Qi. Anyone who intended to fight a war of attrition against him would only face one end. The moment Qu Yuan's energy was drained and he failed to maintain his peak state, the difference between the two of them would start to widen, creating more chances for Jiang Chen to kill him.

As a cultivator who had faced hundreds of battles, Jiang Chen's experience in battle was beyond anyone's imagination. Not even a hundred of Qu Yuan could match the experience that he had accumulated in both of his lives.

Qu Yuan remained silent while his eyes became dark and deep. An aura of perishing Qi emanated from his body, it drifted and lingered in the air above the stage. That was the Qi of destruction, the Qi of death. Even though it was faint, it frightened and drew fear out of people.

"This is the Nine Ways to Perish. Qu Yuan finally used his biggest trump card! I never thought that Jiang Chen could actually force Qu Yuan to such an extent. Even if Jiang Chen was defeated by the Nine Ways to Perish, he wouldn't be looked down upon."

"It is said that this combat skill is powerful enough to destroy the Heavens and Earth. Its Qi can make a person's soul tremble and arouse irresistible thoughts in the person's mind. It's very rare to see Qu Yuan using the Nine Ways to Perish in the inner sect. It seems like he is determined to kill Jiang Chen. But if a talented genius like Jiang Chen died just like this, it will be a great waste."

"I have heard that Qu Yuan has already reached the sixth style in the cultivation of Nine Ways to Perish, which makes it extremely powerful and deadly. If Jiang Chen didn't have a strong trump card to resist this attack, he wouldn't be able to survive."

"We'll see. This is going to be the moment that will decide the final victor. I'm full of anticipation."

.....

As Qu Yuan's perishing Qi continued to radiate out from his body, many bystanders began to tense up. As inner sect disciples, almost every one of them had heard of Qu Yuan's consummate technique that was passed down by Yang Shu. And with Qu Yuan's brimming talent, he had already reached the cultivation of the sixth style that only a few people in the inner sect could resist. Therefore, even though Jiang Chen was able to reach a draw with Qu Yuan in their previous exchange, it wouldn't be easy for him to keep himself alive under the Nine Ways to Perish.

Perish was equivalent to death. That explained why the Qi exuded from Qu Yuan consisted of the taste of death. Anyone that was enshrouded within the Qi of death would gradually lose oneself and eventually die in the hands of the caster.

"Jiang Chen, you just have to wait there for your judgment. There aren't many in the inner sect that can make me use the Nine Ways to Perish!"

Qu Yuan was furious as he hovered in the sky. The surface of his body was fully encompassed by strands of pale-grey perishing Qi, making him look like a mighty God of Death that collected the soul of all living creatures. Therefore, there would only be one outcome for his opponent, death.

"Nine Ways to Perish, First Style!" Qu Yuan shouted.

A black storm swept across the area and evolved into a scene of reincarnation. Traces of death could be felt everywhere. It allowed Jiang Chen to see the passage that lead to reincarnation. The passage was incomparably mystical as it could create a fantasy that affected people's mind.

If Jiang Chen was replaced by another person, he was afraid that the person would immediately be influenced by this illusion. Such effect, however, ceased to exist in front of Jiang Chen. After all, the Nine Ways to Perish was just an offensive type of attack instead

of an illusion-based attack. There was a huge difference compared to Jiang Chen's Great Illusion Realm. Therefore, there was no way that his mind would be influenced by the illusion ahead of him.

Ka... Ka...

A loud cracking sound was heard from the inside of the passage. Innumerable black storms converged and formed a giant scythe 30 meters long. It was entirely black and was radiating endless Qi of death.

It was the scythe of death, the power of the first style of Nine Ways to Perish. Everything created was based on this large scythe. One strike could penetrate the enemy's soul, making the enemy undergo an unending suffering until he die.

“Go!” Qu Yuan ordered.

The scythe of death screeched terrifyingly and charged towards Jiang Chen at an unparalleled speed. At this time, the audience couldn't help but feel nervous. They could clearly sense the strong Qi of death even though they were far away from the scene. It was unimaginable what Jiang Chen was feeling right at this moment.

“The Nine Ways to Perish is truly scary. I can feel my life being threatened. If I was the one on that battlefield right now, I'm afraid that I would die instantly under that giant scythe.”

“Can't agree more. Besides, this is just the first style, which means it will only get scarier. I really doubt if Jiang Chen could handle this.”

.....

People were shocked by the scariness of the first style of the Nine Ways to Perish. They now understood the danger of battling against Qu Yuan.

Chapter 1186 – The Ace Card

Even if the god of death emerged, Jiang Chen will still be as calm as always. There wasn't the slightest look of panic on his face because neither the scythe of death nor the Qi of death could influence his mind. To him, this Nine Ways to Perish was just similar to a powerful combat technique, it didn't have the advantage over him.

Jiang Chen pointed out his finger like a sword. It had been a long time since he used the Profound Nine Solar Finger, but there was no denying that it was also a very powerful combat technique and it had the attribute of supreme Yang, which was the natural enemy of the perishing Qi.

“Profound Nine Solar Finger!”

As Jiang Chen bellowed, the Flaming Wings behind his back began to flutter. At the same time, nine mighty golden light pillars were constructed. They were nine golden large fingers. They let out howls before fusing together speedily, turning into a giant golden finger with an extremely clear fingerprint, like it was a true finger, but no one knew how destructive this golden and dazzling finger was.

Hong Long...

The Profound Nine Solar Finger broke past the layer of death Qi and went directly into the reincarnation passage, colliding against the giant scythe of death. Under the tense gaze of countless of people, two distinct Qi exploded and intertwined.

Finally, both the scythe and the golden finger vanished into two waves of different color, dissipating in the horizon. Qu Yuan's facial expression changed once more. He had never thought that Jiang Chen could resist his Nine Ways to Perish so casually, but even if this was just the first style, Jiang Chen must be affected greatly. Even if he was still alive, he would at least suffer some

kind of injury and shock. However, Jiang Chen was still as relaxed as before, like he was unaffected by the death Qi at all. As such, there was no way that he wouldn't be astounded.

“Amazing! See, I knew that Jiang Chen also has his own trump card, but it was truly hard to imagine that he could even resist the Nine Ways to Perish.”

“Jiang Chen indeed has shocked all of us, but don't get too excited about it. That was after all only the first style of Qu Yuan's attack. He has cultivated this until the sixth style. Now that Qu Yuan is infuriated and resolute to finish Jiang Chen, he will definitely send out more powerful attacks. I just doubt if Jiang Chen still has ways to take on the next strike of Qu Yuan.”

“We'll see. This is getting better and better. No matter who's the winner today, it's worth watching this match.”

.....

Conversations and comments were getting louder. Innumerable inner sect disciples had utterly changed their views of Jiang Chen. At the beginning, they all paid very little attention to Jiang Chen and had already concluded that he was going to die the moment he agreed to pick a fight against Qu Yuan, but now, it showed an entirely different circumstance. Even after Qu Yuan had struck out his Nine Ways to Perish, it neither defeated nor wounded Jiang Chen. This fact alone earned Jiang Chen the right to be arrogant. Also, his powerful ability indicated Tianji Zi's sharp foresight. All along, Tianji Zi refused to accept any true disciple, but after seeing Jiang Chen, he made an exception.

At this moment, Qu Yuan's heart began to pound hard. Despite being enemies, he too had changed the way he look at Jiang Chen.

This man's blood and Qi has become so exuberant after the transformation, it's like the energy in his body is inexhaustible. If I continue to fight him this way, it will do me no good. I have to continuously strike out the Nine Ways to Perish, killing him as

quickly as possible.

Qu Yuan muttered to himself. Jiang Chen's power was greater than his imagination. He could no longer continue the battle in the previous way. This time, he had to act without stopping.

Hu... Hu...

Chilling gale continued blowing. The death Qi from Qu Yuan's body intensified, tensing up the atmosphere to the extreme. Even Jiang Chen's expression had turned grim because he had tasted the scariness of the first style and he knew that Qu Yuan was going to bombard him frenziedly this time.

Therefore, Jiang Chen had to do whatever he could to defend himself.

“Nine Ways to Perish!”

Qu Yuan clamored once more. The reincarnation passage was constructed once again. In the interior of the passage, flashes of black light condensed into a new deathly scythe. As Qu Yuan was unceasingly channeling energy into it, the number of scythe increased along with its attack power.

“Look, Qu Yuan is acting seriously this time. He casted out the fifth style of the technique in one shot. This kind of power is unbelievable.”

“We'll see if Jiang Chen could handle this.”

The scene began to tense up for real!

Swoosh... Swoosh... Swoosh...

Each and every terrifying scythe rushed out. Whether it was in the aspect of number or power, it was definitely stronger than the first style. Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to resist these attacks even if he incessantly casted the Profound Nine Solar Finger.

“It's good that it has come. I like this kind of battle the most.”

Jiang Chen also unleashed all of his Qi. His body was covered

with blood-red light, and then a large amount of blood and Qi converged to form a dragon-shaped item. With the roar of the Heavenly Saint Sword, it appeared in his hand. The current Heavenly Saint Sword no longer looked like a sword. It was like a complete blood dragon, a battle dragon and the sword of assassination.

“Dragon Sword Storm!”

Jiang Chen displayed one of the best skills he had. His whole body fused together with the Heavenly Saint Sword. 450 000 dragon marks rippled frantically while he’s channeling boundless energy into the sword.

Swoosh... Swoosh... Swoosh...

Rays of dazzling sword light exited from him. Powerful long swords were everywhere, flooding the area like a sea of swords. Judging from its momentum, it wasn’t any weaker to Qu Yuan’s Nine Ways to Perish and the number of dragon swords exceeded the deathly scythes.

Clang... Clang... Clang...

The dragon swords clashed together one after another. The intense collisions produced great deal of sparks. The power of the Heavenly Saint Sword was now stronger compared to any kind of ordinary Heaven Immortal Weapon. Plus, it was also his natal weapon. As such, this weapon was able to flawlessly project all of his combat power.

Destructive Qi waves enshrouded the sky above the stage. Every spectator couldn’t help but hold their breaths. Despite the far distance, the shockwaves of the collisions made them palpitate.

It was a formidable match. This type of battle was unimaginable to any ordinary inner sect disciple. In such a violent exchange of blows, even a late Heaven Immortal expert would instantly be turned into dust.

The void rippled and collisions were non-stop. Either to Jiang Chen or Qu Yuan, such a battle would consume immense amount of their energy.

When Qu Yuan saw Jiang Chen withstanding his attack, the shock that he was feeling in his heart sore to an unprecedented level. The thing that he had a hard time to believe was that the perishing and death Qi hadn't affected Jiang Chen's soul and mind even the slightest bit.

Chapter 1187 – Fusion of Dragon and Sword

The shockwaves of the battle escalated. Jiang Chen and Qu Yuan had always been well-matched in this battle. Even though Qu Yuan had used his powerful Nine Ways to Perish, it still couldn't deal a damage on Jiang Chen. He started to realize that Jiang Chen's means was beyond heaven defying. That scary long sword of Jiang Chen had no problem blocking all the strikes of Qu Yuan's scythe of death!

“Grand Elder, this Jiang Chen is simply a miracle. He becomes more and more aggressive as he fights and his momentum is still in full swing, like nothing has changed since the start, just like what happened in the Iron Dummy Array yesterday. Qu Yuan, on the other hand, has apparently consumed much of his energy after casting the Nine Ways to Perish.”

One of the elders said with astonishment. None of them had ever imagined such a scene at first.

“Jiang Chen is indeed astounding. As long as he doesn't die, his future will be boundless. Qu Yuan only has one move left. If the sixth style of the Nine Ways to Perish can't deal substantial damage to Jiang Chen, the winner today will probably be Jiang Chen instead of Qu Yuan.”

Grand Elder Li Zhong's eyes sparkled. Jiang Chen had brought him too much surprise from the first time he saw him. Given the unique eyesight of a late Divine Immortal expert, he was able to tell that Qu Yuan's momentum was dropping. If the sixth style still failed to defeat Jiang Chen, it would be Jiang Chen's turn to strike back because Qu Yuan wouldn't be able to keep his peak state after such massive consumption of energy.

“Nine Ways to Perish, the sixth style!”

Qu Yuan didn't dare reserve his energy anymore. Immediately, he struck out the sixth style without waiting for the fifth style to

subside. Once again, the scene turned chaotic. The power of the sixth style was twice the power of the fifth style. Even the width of the reincarnation passage and the number of scythes were doubled.

The interior of the reincarnation passage was now filled with a big ocean of scythes. There were even wails and cries of ghosts that raised people's goose bumps and gave them an unpleasant feeling that couldn't be described. It was imaginable what the consequences were if someone entered this passage.

“Qu Yuan has casted his final attack, the sixth style of Nine Ways to Perish. This strike is going to be many times powerful than the previous strikes. Truly scary, I'm afraid that only a few inner sect disciple could withstand this attack.”

“Ai! I've never really thought that Jiang Chen could force Qu Yuan to such an extent.”

“That's right. Jiang Chen is indeed a miracle, the most heaven defying genius that I have ever seen. He's such a peerless being in my opinion. It seems like the victor will emerge soon, however, I wonder if Jiang Chen could handle this attack this time.”

.....

At this point, everyone knew that the battle had reached its climax as Qu Yuan had already struck out the sixth style, which was the most powerful strike that he ever had.

On the opposite side, Jiang Chen's expression turned incomparably grim as he could already sense the power of the Nine Ways to Perish. Even with his pride, he had to admit the terror of this technique.

This truly is a scary combat technique. If Qu Yuan had managed to cultivate the seventh style, I'm afraid that I will be no match for him. However, we are just equally matched and we'll eventually see who's stronger.

He was slightly shocked by the scariness of the Nine Ways to Perish, but he wasn't frightened. The stronger Qu Yuan was, the more competitive he became.

“True Dragon Emperor, unite the dragon and the sword to fight!”

Jiang Chen let out a dragon's roar. His body flickered and turned from half-dragon into a real blood-red dragon. The true dragon aura was radiated from his body. This was his first time using the full-dragon form in battle. At this moment, he had become the True Dragon Emperor that disdained the whole world.

Whoo!

The Heavenly Saint Sword let out a howl. It appeared extremely excited after being affected by Jiang Chen's combat intent. It then turned into a dragon sword and fused with Jiang Chen's body.

“See, that's a true dragon. How is that possible? Dragons are divine beasts and legendary supreme beings. How can such a being appear in this world?”

“No, that's Jiang Chen's transformation technique, but it looks so lifelike, completely like the legendary dragon in the myths. His technique is heaven defying and divine!”

“However, I really feel that he is really like a true dragon. So, is he a dragon or a human?”

.....

Countless people lost their calm because they had never thought that Jiang Chen could turn into a real dragon. A dragon was a legendary noble creature and a true Divine Beast. After Jiang Chen's transformation, the dragon Qi had fully filled the air. While he was still a human, there wasn't a single trace of beast Qi that could be detected from him. Therefore, fundamentally speaking, he was still a human but his marvelous transformation blew everyone's mind.

The essence of the dragon transformation skill lay in the process

of transforming a human to a dragon. Jiang Chen's journey would include transforming into a true dragon, a dragon king, a dragon ancestor and a being that surpassed all noble creatures.

Roar...

Dragon roars reverberated in the sky as the dragon charged into the reincarnation passage. Countless blood light radiated from his body and formed into sharp swords. Under the control of Qu Yuan, the reincarnation passage continuously exerted pressure against Jiang Chen, but it did no harm to him.

Jiang Chen's body wobbled, smashing against the scythes of death. Jiang Chen's physique was originally very solid, and after fusing with the Heavenly Saint Sword, his body became indestructible. Every scythe of death that slashed on his body created sparks that dealt him no harm.

“Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal!”

Jiang Chen roared once more. As this was the final moment of the battle, he too wouldn't hold back. A dozen dragons with different colors exited his body and rushed back and forth in the reincarnation passage.

The scene was too frightening. The bystanders were too shocked to speak. There were dragons everywhere, it had totally turned into a world of dragons.

Ka... Ka...

In the end, due to Qu Yuan consuming too much of his energy, he wasn't able to support the reincarnation passage perfectly. Under the frenzied attack of Jiang Chen, cracking sounds were heard from the passage. Lines of cracks became visible and the number of deathly scythes inside began to reduce rapidly.

“My god! Qu Yuan seems like losing control. How can this happen?”

“He has consumed too much energy. On the contrary, Jiang Chen

seems to have limitless energy and his means are too heaven defying. He can transform himself into a dragon and fuse with the sword, and the damage he dealt is astounding.”

“He’s only a half-step Heaven Immortal. How are we going to call ourselves geniuses in the future?”

.....

Chapter 1188 – Incapacitating

“What!?”

When he became aware of the cracks in the reincarnation passage and the possibility that it could break at any time, and the incessant reduction of the scythes of death, Qu Yuan lost his calm and exclaimed immediately. He now deeply felt the terror of Jiang Chen, especially after Jiang Chen transformed and his momentum was pushed to its peak. His momentum alone gave people tremendous amount of psychological pressure.

Moreover, Qu Yuan had consumed too much of his energy after casting the sixth style of Nine Ways to Perish. Now, it became strenuous enough for him to hold the reincarnation passage, let alone launching another attack.

“Qu Yuan, you can’t hold it any longer. Your reincarnation passage has no effect on me, the same goes to your death Qi. Stop it right now!”

All of a sudden, Jiang Chen shouted. His large dragon body twisted violently and innumerable blood-red sword light were launched at different directions inside the passage.

The energy was like an ocean of unending tide, shocking everyone around. Of course, they were most astounded by the battle between Jiang Chen and Qu Yuan. No one had ever imagined that Jiang Chen could still cast such a powerful attack at the final stage of the battle.

Anyone should know that a battle would consume lots of energy, particularly in a life-and-death battle like this. Qu Yuan, being a half-step Divine Immortal supreme expert, naturally had more energy stored in his body compared to any average expert, but currently, his energy was already almost depleted. Jiang Chen’s momentum, however, was still soaring. That was to say, he had never consumed a bit of his energy in this intense battle, the

energy in his body was inexhaustible. Undoubtedly, this was horrifying and scary to hear.

“Jiang Chen is way too scary. His energy seems boundless. Even at this point, he’s still able to launch such an attack, an attack even scarier than before.”

“Abnormal. He sure is a super abnormal being, even Qu Yuan can’t hold it any longer.”

“If that’s the case, Qu Yuan has virtually lost this battle, which was a shocking result to all of us. If Jiang Chen can really defeat Qu Yuan, who else in the inner sect will dare to offend him?”

.....

Everyone was getting apprehensive because Jiang Chen’s power had become indescribable. If he defeated Qu Yuan while only being a half-step Heaven Immortal, he would be the first and only inner sect disciple who had established a supreme position on his first day in the inner sect.

Hong Long...

Finally, Qu Yuan lost his control over his skill against Jiang Chen’s fierce attack. Countless of sword Qi penetrated through the reincarnation passage. Then, with a burst, all the deathly scythes were destroyed.

“Argh...”

Qu Yuan uttered a wail and spurted out a big mouthful of blood. His body sagged and was blown away by the immense energy, landing on the life-and-death stage with so much impact that it shook the entire platform.

In the sky, Jiang Chen had already returned to his human form. His white clothes fluttered in the breeze. He now seemed no different from the person in the beginning of the battle. He still had a full momentum as he radiated an aura of superiority and majesty.

He glanced below at Qu Yuan coldly, and then flew downwards and stepped him on his face.

“Arghh!”

Qu Yuan roared out of anger. He struggled violently but couldn't break free from Jiang Chen's foot. Being trampled by someone in front of numerous inner sect disciples and elders flooded his mind with boundless humiliation. This was worse than being killed!

“Jiang Chen, how dare you step on me!” Qu Yuan clamored.

“Do you really think that I will just step on you? This is the life-and-death stage.”

Jiang Chen said with an incomparably cold voice. Qu Yuan's body shivered as Jiang Chen words reminded him of something important.

That was right. This is the life-and-death battle stage. On this stage, Jiang Chen had the right to kill him. So being trampled on was nothing compared to being killed.

“Jiang Chen, you dare to kill me? Who do you think you are? You have to pay a high price for what you did today!”

Qu Yuan absolutely didn't believe that Jiang Chen would dare to kill him. He knew his own identity. He was a genius in the inner sect, a true disciple of a Golden Immortal elder. Even if Jiang Chen had the guts and even if they were on the life-and-death stage, Jiang Chen would never dare to kill him.

“Not good, it seems like Jiang Chen has already decided to kill him. Do you all think he would dare to kill Qu Yuan?”

“Of course he won't. Although Qu Yuan was defeated, he is backed by someone powerful. If Jiang Chen really killed Qu Yuan, Elder Yang Shu will never let his matter go. Besides, in Skycloud Pavilion, no one had dared touch Qu Yuan.”

“Agreed, Jiang Chen won't dare do it. Putting aside the fact that

this is the life-and-death stage, Jiang Chen is already very impressive for defeating Qu Yuan. He has already established his prestige in Skycloud Pavilion. No one else will dare to provoke him anymore from today onwards.”

.....

The present result made innumerable people sigh as this was something beyond their imagination. As to whether Jiang Chen would really kill Qu Yuan, plenty of them felt that he wouldn't dare do it. After all, killing Qu Yuan was similar to waging war against Yang Shu and this would make his life incredibly hard.

Pa!

Jiang Chen yanked Qu Yuan to the air like a dead pig.

“Jiang Chen, I have told you that you won't dare to kill me and it's only a matter of time before I have my revenge.”

Qu Yuan stared at Jiang Chen ferociously and said.

“Qu Yuan, I have to admit that you have a very low intelligence. I can't believe that you could still speak such words even at this point. I really have no idea where you got all those sense of superiority from. If you begged for mercy just now, I might just spare your life. Unfortunately, you continued to threaten me. In that case, you will definitely die under my hands.”

A trace of a cold light glowed in his eyes. He could never accept someone threatening him, especially his enemies. If he didn't kill Qu Yuan today, he would have loads of troubles in the future. So, he might as well get rid of the root of the problem today.

“Jiang Chen, you have already won. Give this old man face and forget about everything today.”

Great Elder Li Zhong spoke hastily. What he said was for Jiang Chen's own good. After all, Jiang Chen wouldn't get any benefits if he really killed Qu Yuan.

“Alright. I’ll give Grand Elder face. I won’t kill you today, but I will cripple you so that you can put away your nasty sense of superiority from now on,”

Said Jiang Chen, and then his palm was launched towards Qu Yuan’s Qi Sea.

Chapter 1189 – Yang Shu’s Anger

“Wah...”

Jiang Chen’s action created commotion from the whole crowd. Everyone’s eyes went wide, they couldn’t believe and accept the scene ahead of them. Jiang Chen had too much nerve to disable Qu Yuan. One should know that crippling a genius like Qu Yuan was no different than taking his life.

Moreover, the consequences that Jiang Chen would face after this would be serious. Everything changed when he incapacitated Qu Yuan. This would no longer be a common fight between inner disciples. By that time, Yang Shu would never let this matter go easily. While Jiang Chen also had a powerful backer, Tianji Zi, who was a person that couldn’t be trifled with, both of these elders would without a doubt clash.

“Jiang Chen, stop!”

Seeing what happened, Grand Elder Li Zhong was shocked. He had never thought that Jiang Chen would have such audacity. The repercussions would be unimaginable if Jiang Chen crippled Qu Yuan today.

Li Zhong took the decisive move to block the attack without having the time to think. Although interfering at this time would violate the regulations of the life-and-death stage, he felt compelled to do so. As the Grand Elder of the inner sect, he could never watch a true disciple being killed. He would be at a loss of words when the mighty Golden Immortal elder found out about this.

However, Jiang Chen was just too fast. Even with Li Zhong’s speed, it was too late to stop the attack. With a sound of ‘ka cha’, Jiang Chen’s palm landed heavily on Qu Yuan’s vulnerable Qi Sea.

Barf!

Qu Yuan opened his mouth and spewed out another mouthful of blood before his Qi Sea shattered. All of the energy inside dissipated in an instant.

Qu Yuan was dumbfounded while feeling his present state. His face was pale-grey and in deep despair. His ability to reach the half-step Divine Immortal realm at his age showed how special his talent and how bright his future was. But now, everything was finished.

He was supposed to be one of the top geniuses in the pyramid. All of a sudden, he was transformed into a cripple that could no longer cultivate. That wasn't something that anyone could bear. Although he was still alive, he was nothing more than a walking corpse.

“No...”

Qu Yuan let out a despairing roar. He now felt that his life had suddenly become dark, dim and meaningless. Although he hated Jiang Chen to the bone, he couldn't do anything about it, he knew that he wouldn't have a chance of taking revenge.

At the same time, he was in complete regret. That was right, he was regretting. He regretted provoking a disastrous star like Jiang Chen for no good reason. If he didn't do so, he wouldn't have ended like this, both of them would never have any clashes and he would still get to be the miniature emperor in the inner sect.

However, there wasn't a medicine that could cure regret.

“Jiang Chen, you...”

Li Zhong's facial expression changed dramatically when he reached the stage. He had never thought that Jiang Chen would be so decisive and cruel.

Jiang Chen turned, stared at Li Zhong fearlessly and spoke coldly, “Grand Elder, haven't I given you face by keeping him alive? Did you think that your reputation was enough to guarantee

his safety? This is the life-and-death stage and you rushed here just to stop me. Aren't you afraid of breaking the rules? Moreover, saving Qu Yuan is similar to going against me. You said that Qu Yuan wasn't a person to be trifled with, didn't that apply to me as well? Qu Yuan has a strong backer, but the same goes to me. Grand Elder, I advise you to stay out of this matter."

Jiang Chen's words were incredibly apathetic. There were no politeness and respect for the Grand Elder. Regardless of what the reasons were, the fact that Li Zhong attempted to stop him disgusted him. If it wasn't because of the old man helping him before, he would never show any quarters to this old man.

Hiss...

Grand Elder was shocked by Jiang Chen's cold eyes and his innate superior aura even influenced the elder's soul.

Grand Elder let out a sigh and kept his silence, Jiang Chen was right. It was true that Qu Yuan wasn't a person to be trifled with and it was also true that he should never offend a person who had the ability to kill a half-step Divine Immortal genius while being only a half-step Heaven Immortal and had the support of Tianji Zi.

At this point of time, Qu Yuan had already been incapacitated. Although he wasn't able to stop him in time, he had done what he could. So even if Yang Shu demanded an explanation, the blame would be shifted to Jiang Chen instead of him. The fight between true disciples always gave him a headache, as such, it was best to stay out of it.

"Ruthless and ferocious. Skycloud Pavilion is going to change soon now that this monstrous genius is here. Those geniuses are going to be under a great deal of pressure after this."

"Young Emperor Qu Yuan is incapacitated just like this. I only have the feeling of admiration for Jiang Chen now. I'm afraid that he is probably the only one in Skycloud Pavilion that dares to do such a thing. From now on, the rest of Qu Yuan's life will be a

waste.”

“However, this matter will never be left to rest. Yang Shu will definitely seek Jiang Chen for explanation and compensation. When a dignified Golden Immortal elder’s true disciple was incapacitated by someone, it is without a doubt slapping the elder on the face hard.”

“But then again, Jiang Chen also has Elder Tianji Zi behind his back, which makes him unafraid of all these. Additionally, this incident was started by Qu Yuan himself and they were fighting on the life-and-death stage, which isn’t an ordinary battle. What Jiang Chen did wasn’t wrong. Even if this matter is brought to the Law Enforcement Hall, he has elder Tianji Zi’s support. Moreover, Jiang Chen’s performance was incomparably dazzling. He can now be regarded as the number one genius in Skycloud Pavilion. Naturally, the sect will value such a genius very much.”

.....

People started their own conversations and discussions. Incapacitating Qu Yuan on the life-and-death stage was a major incident. Anyone could already imagine that the development of this matter would never be simple.

Just then, a powerful momentum rushed towards the inner sect. It was a grey-robed elder that looked fifty-ish and slightly pump, but the aura he radiated shivered people’s soul.

No doubt, this elder was one of the well-known figures, Yang Shu. It seemed like he was the first one to know about this incident. Logically, there was no reason for him not to appear when his true disciple was just crippled.

The atmosphere of the crowd turned incomparably tense after the appearance of Elder Yang Shu. No one dared to breath, even Grand Elder Li Zhong kept his head low and was silent. Everybody on the scene was crystal clear that the current Yang Shu was in serious fury.

“Master!”

When the sprawling Qu Yuan saw Yang Shu, he cried out loudly. Unfortunately, he didn't even have the strength to stand up after being incapacitated.

“Trash.”

Yang Shu darted a casual look at Qu Yuan, and then turned to Jiang Chen. His eyes were just like cold blades, desiring to tear Jiang Chen apart.

Chapter 1190 – The Terrifying Divination Art

As Yang Shu's eyes fell on Jiang Chen; the scene turned cold and chilly. All of them could feel Yang Shu's anger and his strong killing intent. Perhaps, Qu Yuan's life wasn't as important as his face, but crippling Qu Yuan made him lose all of his face.

“It's over. I already felt Elder Yang Shu's killing intent. Do you all think that Elder Yang Shu will kill Jiang Chen straightaway? If he really made a move now, Jiang Chen will surely die in vain.”

“It's hard to say. Pavilion Master will never blame a Golden Immortal elder for killing a true disciple.”

“It seems like Jiang Chen can only pray for his good fortune now. What he did today is exceedingly audacious. I still couldn't believe that he even dared to cripple Qu Yuan.”

.....

A lot of them continued with their conversations but with a softer voice, agreeing that Jiang Chen was currently in a very dangerous situation. After all, the person he provoked wasn't an ordinary figure. It was a Golden Immortal Elder, a late Golden Immortal expert, one of the top figures in Skycloud Pavilion that even Tian Muyun had to show respect.

Jiang Chen met Yang Shu eyes with a slight smile and fearless expression. Yang Shu certainly wanted to kill him, but Tianji Zi surely wouldn't allow that. One should know that defeating Qu Yuan on the life-and-death stage had earned Tianji Zi a tremendous amount of reputation. Furthermore, the fact that Jiang Chen could defeat a half-step Divine Immortal opponent as a half-step Heaven Immortal proved his extraordinary combat strength. Tianji Zi would definitely regard him as a precious talent and wouldn't let someone kill him. When Yang Shu appeared on

the scene, it meant that Tianji Zi wasn't far away from here.

“Jiang Chen, you had the nerve to harm my disciple. How dare you, a puny inner sect disciple be so audacious? How dare you not put this old man in your eyes. Today, I'm going to teach you a good lesson. I will personally cripple you as well, just like what you did to Qu Yuan.”

Yang Shu's tone was icy cold. He was ready to strike after speaking. He was a powerful Golden Immortal expert with a noble position that could ignore the rules and regulations of the sect. According to the rules of the life-and-death stage, it wasn't anyone's business if Qu Yuan was killed in battle and Jiang Chen wouldn't have to bear any consequences and punishment. Despite the rules, no one dared to stop Yang Shu from punishing Jiang Chen.

“I would like to see who has the guts to cripple my disciple!”

As soon as Yang Shu's words faded, another powerful momentum emerged somewhere in the center of Skycloud Pavilion. Subsequently, a divine figure flew past the crowd and halted on the stage, standing next to Jiang Chen. This man wasn't a stranger. He was Tianji Zi.

He glanced at Qu Yuan who was lying on the ground expressionlessly and then turned to Jiang Chen. Instead of reprimanding Jiang Chen, he praised his disciple.

“You did well, boy. You're worthy of being called my disciple.”

Tianji Zi patted Jiang Chen's shoulder. Evidently, what Jiang Chen did today had earned him a great deal of reputation.

“Yang Shu, you have the nerve to cripple my disciple. Who gave you the right to punish my disciple?”

Tianji Zi looked over at Yang Shu and said impolitely.

The whole scene turned silent after the emergence of these two important figures. A scene like this was just the same to what they

had imagined. The conflict between Jiang Chen and Qu Yuan was going to be spread to the higher ups. When Qu Yuan was crippled, Yang Shu had decided to cripple Jiang Chen as well, and naturally Tianji Zi would protect his own disciple.

“Humph! Tianji Zi, that’s easy for you to say. Your disciple has crippled my disciple, shouldn’t he be punished for such a crime?”

Yang Shu harrumphed coldly. Judging from his expression, he didn’t seem to be giving up on taking revenge.

“Haha! Yang Shu, this should already be clear to you. This is the life-and-death stage. It was all because of the incompetence of your disciple. Jiang Chen has already shown mercy by allowing him to stay alive. You should thank Jiang Chen for that instead.”

Tianji Zi laughed loudly, a typical and direct way of beating one’s face.

“What if I insist to attack? Do you think you can stop me, Tianji Zi?”

Yang Shu’s eyes turned cold, seemingly reluctant to give in. In the aspect of cultivation base, Tianji Zi was merely a peak mid Golden Immortal expert, whereas Yang Shu was a late Golden Immortal expert. Tianji Zi wouldn’t be able to gain any advantage in the fight.

“Then you should try and see. I would like to see who has the ability to hurt my disciple in front of me today.”

Tianji Zi’s Qi shook, showing no sign of fear and the intention of backing away.

Jiang Chen nodded secretly. The disposition of Tianji Zi suited his qualities very well. It seemed like he had found the right master.

“I’m going to do it no matter what.”

Yang Shu was a grumpy old man. He had never gotten along with

Tianji Zi. And today, Jiang Chen made him lose all of his face. There was no way that he could swallow this anger. All of a sudden, he struck out a huge palm at Jiang Chen.

Seeing what happened, Tianji Zi also struck. He moved like a banished Immortal. Just as Yang Shu launched his attack, he shot out a ray of golden light with his finger, destroying the half condensed palm.

Swoosh!

Later, Tianji Zi flew skywards and shouted at Yang Shu, “Yang Shu, how dare you attack my disciple in front of me? That’s totally not putting me in your eyes. Since you want to fight, then let’s fight!”

Tianji Zi’s Qi was incredibly strong. Despite the fact that he was only a mid Golden Immortal Expert, he was fearless in front of Yang Shu.

“You want a fight? So be it, Tianji Zi! I would also like to see what’s the extent that your Divination Art has reached.”

Yang Shu’s momentum was overwhelming. Immediately, he launched another attack at Tianji Zi. Both mighty Golden Immortal experts engaged in a fight in the sky above the martial arena, turning the sky to darkness, but neither victory nor defeat could be determined.

All of their attention was focused on the two because it wasn’t easy to watch a fight between two Golden Immortal experts.

Jiang Chen had even put all of his concentration on the battle. He initially thought that Tianji Zi would be no match for Yang Shu, but it seemed like he was seriously wrong.

“Master’s Divination Art is truly amazing. He is able to predict the moves of his opponent. Although Yang Shu’s cultivation base is a grade higher than master’s, master can calculate Yang Shu’s skill and attack before he even struck out. And then, master will kill it

with an attack that collided with Yang Shu's attack before he can even fully condense it out. So, Yang Shu won't be able to achieve the maximum damage in every strike."

Jiang Chen was incomparably astonished. It seemed like the Divination Art was much scarier than his imagination. It wasn't only used to divine misfortune in the future, it could also be used to create a huge advantage for oneself in a fight.

Chapter 1191 – The Master of Law Enforcement Hall

Hong Long.....

The shockwave of the incredible battle spread across, alerting everyone in Skycloud Pavilion.

Numerous core disciples, elders of Law Enforcement Hall and some high and mighty Golden Immortal elders appeared. One should know that it was extremely rare for Golden Immortal elders to have a fight inside the sect.

“It’s Tianji Zi and Yang Shu. Why did fight all of a sudden?”

“Haven’t you all know it yet? The true disciple whom Tianji Zi recently accepted has incapacitated Qu Yuan, a true disciple of Yang Shu. Naturally, Yang Shu won’t be able to stomach this incident.”

“He does have the guts! But since this is the life-and-death stage, there’s nothing Yang Shu can do. The only problem left unresolved now is his face.”

.....

The news that Jiang Chen had incapacitated Qu Yuan was spread to everyone who wasn’t present at the battle very quickly. At the same time, they also knew that Jiang Chen had defeated a half-step Divine Immortal genius with mere half-step Heaven Immortal cultivation base. Such a genius was extremely rare to find even in the whole Ethereal Immortal Domain. The talent and potential that he had could be regarded as first class.

“That explains why. Jiang Chen sure is monstrous. Otherwise, given Tianji Zi’s temperament, why would he suddenly accept this disciple and fight Yang Shu just to protect him?”

“Indeed. But his conduct is somewhat too arrogant. He has

incapacitated a true disciple on his first day of joining the inner sect. Some control is needed for such arrogance.”

.....

Many people thought that Jiang Chen was too pretentious. Regardless of how talented he was, he was still considered weak. As such, in his situation, it was necessary for him to conceal some of his abilities during an intense battle. However, he crippled a true disciple and caused the two great elders to fight instead. Such an incident was no doubt the first in the entire Skycloud Pavilion.

Hong Long...

Tianji Zi was provoked, battling more and more aggressively, but the result of their battle was still unknown.

These two opponents might seem equally matched, but every bystander knew the gap in cultivation between the two.

The thing that made them marvel was Tianji Zi's Divination Art. They were astounded by his ability to predict. Comparatively speaking, Yang Shu appeared to be annoyed as every move of his could be calculated by his opponent. In truth, anyone who was put in his position would have the same feeling, because they couldn't exert all of their power.

“Elder Tianji's Divination Art certainly lived up to his reputation. At first, I thought that Divination Art can only be used to look into one's future. I have never imagined that it could be applied in battle as well.”

“That's right. That's really impressive. Although Elder Tianji is a mere mid Golden Immortal expert, the prestige he has in Skycloud Pavilion isn't any lower to Yang Shu, a late Golden Immortal expert. I'm afraid that Elder Yang Shu will be no match for Elder Tianji Zi once he advance to the late Golden Immortal realm. Currently, only Master and Daoist Yufeng could suppress him.”

“This is a special ability that most people can't cultivate even if

they want to.”

.....

Tianji Zi’s power and ability amazed everyone. The advantage he had over Yang Shu was apparent, he could perfectly apply the ability of foresight in battle.

Jiang Chen’s eyes were fixed at Tianji Zi. Every time Tianji Zi attacked, Jiang Chen was fascinated by his master’s elegant and surreal demeanor. Currently, he had already been completely entranced by the profundity of Divination Art.

“Please stop, elders.”

At this time, a voice was heard. It came from a yellow-robed and skinny elder who was hovering in the sky. He had a very strong cultivation base. Judging from his Qi, he was stronger than Tianji Zi and Yang Shu.

“It’s the hall master of Law Enforcement Hall, Yuwen Ting, the most distinguished figure after pavilion master and Daoist Yufeng in Skycloud Pavilion. I had never imagined that he would appear on the scene.”

“Like I said, this isn’t an ordinary conflict anymore and is likely to alarm the higher ups. Sure enough, it happened. In the entire Skycloud Pavilion, there’s only the Law Enforcement Hall that can stop Tianji Zi and Yang Shu.”

“Agreed. Even though there are some elders who could stop these two great elders, Yuwen Ting alone is enough to stop them.”

.....

The emergence of Yuwen Ting represented the intervention of the Law Enforcement Hall. Normally, the Law Enforcement Hall would rarely interfere with anything, but once they started to take matters into their own hands, it indicated the seriousness of the incident. Today, due to the clash between Jiang Chen and Qu Yuan, the incident had become very serious. There was no way to

solve this problem anymore besides the Law Enforcement Hall.

Seeing Yuwen Ting's presence, Tianji Zi and Yang Shu stopped, not forgetting to show respect to the hall master. Furthermore, the two of them were crystal clear that there would be neither victory nor defeat in the end.

"Elder Yuwen, I suppose you have already heard what happened today. I, Yang Shu, am a person with high prestige. Today, I'm going to gain back my reputation. As long as Jiang Chen is incapacitated, I promise to let this matter rest," said Yang Shu in a very tough tone.

"This is ridiculous. What position do you think you are placing me at? Don't you understand the purpose and meaning of the life-and-death stage? Once the combatants stand on the stage, their lives would solely depend on their fate. When Jiang Chen defeated Qu Yuan, he only incapacitated him. Allowing him to live is a very kind act. Inversely, if Jiang Chen was the one who lost the battle, he would die in Qu Yuan's hands. I won't say another word in this. The only explanation for this is Qu Yuan's incompetence. Yang Shu, don't you think that continuously pestering someone in the public will only bring you more humiliation?"

Tianji Zi retorted in a tit-for-tat way. Currently, Jiang Chen was just like a piece of treasure to him. It was wishful thinking to incapacitate Jiang Chen in front of him.

Yuwen Ting made a few frowns, and then glanced at Jiang Chen below him and Qu Yuan who was lying on the stage with surprise.

Even the hall master of the Law Enforcement Hall found this dispute tricky. He was having a dilemma now. He couldn't ignore Yang Shu's reputation and the hot temper of Tianji Zi. It would be easier to settle if Jiang Chen was merely an ordinary disciple instead of a true disciple. If any of the parties wasn't satisfied with the outcome, he was afraid that not even his prestige would be enough to stop these two elders from fighting.

But since he had already appeared here, he had no choice but to find a settlement to it. Or else, the Law Enforcement Hall would lose its purpose and would be reprimanded by the pavilion master.

“This incident can’t go on like this. Elder Yang Shu, Elder Tianji, bring your disciple to the Law Enforcement Hall now. It’s more suited to settle the dispute there. I would like to know everything that happened during this period.”

Yuwen Ting said to Tianji Zi and Yang Shu.

Chapter 1192 – Discrediting Someone

After Yuwen Ting finished speaking, he vanished along with the other elders of the Law Enforcement Hall. It seemed like all of them were returning to the Law Enforcement Hall. Apparently, whatever would happened next would take place in the hall.

“Humph!”

Yang Shu harrumphed coldly. He grabbed the air with his large hand. A force of attraction sucked Qu Yuan up to his hand.

“Save me, master.”

Qu Yuan sobbed, his face was full of despair.

“Ai!”

Yang Shu sighed, and then shook his head. If it was just a normal injury, Yang Shu would have ways to heal him no matter how serious it was. Unfortunately, Qu Yuan’s Qi Sea had already been destroyed, which made it impossible to recover even if Yang Shu possessed an extraordinary healing power. He was able to turn a fool into a genius, however, a worthless man could only be a normal man.

“The only thing I can do is to seek justice for you and make that Jiang Chen pay for what he did,” said Yang Shu, he then looked away from Qu Yuan.

Qu Yuan closed his eyes, feeling the pain. Tears of regret trickled down from the corner of his eyes. Was vengeance really so important now? To him, it was no longer important whether Jiang Chen would pay the price of it. Even if he could kill Jiang Chen, he could never return to his former state.

Jiang Chen leap upwards, sprouted a pair of divine-looking wings behind his back and came to Tianji Zi’s side. He bowed before Tianji Zi politely. “Master.”

“Good, very good. You have helped master earn a good reputation ever since I accepted you. You don’t have to talk much in this matter. I know the incident very well. Qu Yuan is the one to blame. With my presence, that Yang Shu won’t be able to touch you even in the Law Enforcement Hall.”

Tianji Zi praised Jiang Chen. His impression of Jiang Chen improved once more. Jiang Chen’s power, dominance and outstanding talent were all consistent with his taste. So he couldn’t like this disciple more.

“Let’s go to the Law Enforcement Hall. I would like to see how YuWen Ting is going to handle this matter.”

After a while, Tian Jizi led Jiang Chen towards the Law Enforcement Hall. The crowd in the martial arena suddenly burst into noises of discussion after Jiang Chen and his master left.

“Jiang Chen really has become famous this time. Everyone in Skycloud Pavilion will know him. He has already gotten rid of Qu Yuan on his first day of joining the inner sect. How incredible!”

“I wonder how the Law Enforcement Hall will deal with him. Yang Shu surely wouldn’t let this matter rest. I’m afraid that it won’t be any less favourable even if Jiang Chen has all the reasons. After all, this incident involves Elder Yang Shu’s prestige.”

“The Law Enforcement Hall isn’t a pleasant place. No one in the sect likes to go there because something more problematic will emerge after arriving there. I heard that Elder Yuwen Ting has a good relationship with Elder Yang Shu. As for Elder Tianji Zi, he has a very hot temper and an aloof behaviour, which doesn’t help him get along well with the other Golden Immortal elders. Thus, I’m afraid that he can’t take advantage of the situation this time in the Law Enforcement Hall.”

.....

Plenty of people were already anticipating about what might

happen. In Skycloud Pavilion, from the group of mighty elders to the group of ordinary disciples, the Law Enforcement Hall was the most serious and strict existence in their eyes. No one would be willing to go there to settle a dispute. Even if it was a minor mistake committed by an ordinary disciple, he would suffer unimaginably once he was sent to the Law Enforcement Hall.

The Law Enforcement Hall was located at the centre of Skycloud Pavilion. It was an incomparably grand hall. Seeing it from the outside gave people the feeling of solemnity. The atmosphere inside, however, was awful. This place was very important to Skycloud Pavilion, it enforces the law in Skycloud Pavilion and drew fear from people.

No one in Skycloud Pavilion would dare to challenge the authority of the Law Enforcement Hall. Apart from Tian Muyun and Daoist Yufeng, the Law Enforcement Hall represented the highest authority in the sect.

Presently, a group of elders were in the main hall of the building. Yang Shu was there standing next to Qu Yuan who finally stood on his feet, but his condition was still horrible. His body was shaky and he could fall down at any second. His facial expression was as pale as a corpse.

Tianji Zi and Jiang Chen arrived and walked into the main hall. Tianji Zi's demeanour was imposing. There wasn't a sign of fear on his face despite the fact that he was in the Law Enforcement Hall. The same went to Jiang Chen. A trace of a smile was revealed at the corner of his mouth. A mere Law Enforcement Hall was way too far from scaring him.

Besides the higher ups, Jiang Chen also saw three men. No doubt, they were the three who had gone to the Iron Dummy Array earlier to cause him trouble. The three of them were kneeling on the ground, shivering. Instead of having the chance to rest because of their heavy injuries, they were dragged to the Law Enforcement Hall and were asked to kneel down.

A hundred thousand horses were racing in Gao Yang's heart. He felt that his luck was so bad. Initially, he thought that Qu Yuan would be able to get rid of Jiang Chen and avenge them. He had never thought that Jiang Chen was so powerful to such an extent. Not only was Qu Yuan no match for Jiang Chen, he was also crippled by him. The moment Qu Yuan became nothing more than a cripple, what other good things would his sidekicks get?

The three of them repented gravely in their hearts for provoking the disastrous star which was equivalent to asking for trouble.

"Jiang Chen, why aren't you kneeling down when you have already reached the Law Enforcement Hall?" An elder shouted at Jiang Chen coldly.

"Why should I kneel down when I have all the reasons to roam free across the world? I don't even know why you all want me here. I didn't do anything wrong."

Jiang Chen darted a glance at that elder and said in a plain tone.

"Hubris!"

Jiang Chen's response drew anger from numerous elders. They couldn't accept someone challenging the dignity of the Law Enforcement Hall. All along, every disciple who had reached the hall would kneel down obediently and was even afraid to exhale normally. Jiang Chen, on the other hand, retorted the order of a high and mighty elder directly. None of them had ever seen such an outrageous behaviour before.

"Jiang Chen, you have harmed your fellow disciples. This is a tremendous crime."

That elder widened his eyes and continued. He was a mighty early Golden Immortal expert. His dignity was being violated when a half-step Heaven Immortal disciple disobeyed him. How could he stand to something like this?

"Are you blind? Or you still don't have any idea what the life-

and-death stage mean? I was challenged. It was Qu Yuan who challenged me. Does that mean that I wasn't allowed to kill anyone on the stage, but my opponent is allowed to kill me? Besides, Qu Yuan is still standing there, intact. In truth, I have shown him lots of mercy."

Jiang Chen's words were straight to the point. Obviously, this elder was standing on Yang Shu's side, attempting to find ways to discredit Jiang Chen. Unfortunately, Jiang Chen would never accept such things.

Chapter 1193 – Fierce Opposition

Hong...

As soon as Jiang Chen said it, fiery anger began to flood in the main hall. Many elders became furious. Putting aside the fact whether Jiang Chen had the reasons or not, he had broken the biggest taboo by not putting the elder of the Law Enforcement Hall in his eyes. Everyone in the hall was dignified and highly respected. If Jiang Chen wasn't a true disciple of Tianji Zi, he would already be slapped to death even if he was innocent.

“What an arrogant kid! If a man like you grow up one day, you will surely become a malignant tumor in our sect. You have no respect for the elders. You rebutted one of the elders with rude remarks, this fact alone already gave us all the reasons to punish you severely, and crippling your cultivation isn't even considered a heavy punishment,” said Yang Shu coldly.

Now that he was in the Law Enforcement Hall, he could no longer allow Jiang Chen to act so defiantly. He had to regain his lost face to avenge what Jiang Chen did to Qu Yuan. In any case, Qu Yuan and he were master and disciple. Although he could never restore Qu Yuan's original state, he had to do something for him.

“Bullshit! Do you think my disciple can be bullied easily? Jiang Chen is right. This incident wasn't his fault to begin with. But now, all of you are trying to discredit him, could it be that the Law Enforcement Palace also wants to bring humiliation upon itself?”

Tianji Zi wasn't concerned in all of these. None of the pressure imposed by the Law Enforcement Hall would work on him, and Jiang Chen's personality was very much in line with his appetite, which made him like Jiang Chen so much more. In order for one to be successful, one had to be resolute and steadfast. This was similar to Ouyang He whom no one in the entire One-Line-Sky was able to make him admit his faults.

“Alright, no more argument. I will arbitrate this dispute justly.”

Yuwen Ting waved his hand. Immediately, the main hall quieted down, but the atmosphere was still full of fiery aura.

“Is there anything that the Law Enforcement elder has to say? It was a life-and-death battle, our fates solely depended on our ability.”

Jiang Chen looked at Yuwen Ting fearlessly.

Looking at this composed young man made numerous elders sigh with surprise. Whether they liked Jiang Chen or not, they had to admit that this young man has extraordinary traits. His composure alone already made him incomparable among his peers.

“Indeed, it was a life-and-death battle, but why did you go to the stage to settle your disputes when you and Qu Yuan had no conflict in the past? There’s certainly a reason behind this and we are now investigating it. Jiang Chen, were you the one who injured Gao Yang and the other two disciples? Despite them being disciples of the same sect, you have broken a major taboo by maiming your fellow disciples,” said Yuwen Ting and his gaze fell upon the three miserable disciples.

After listening to this, Jiang Chen harrumphed coldly in his heart. He had already guessed this coming when he saw Gao Yang and the other two were here as well. He could already tell how good the rapport between Yuwen Ting and Yang Shu. No doubt, he was going to receive loads of attack from them, and these three were just the starting point to trigger him.

“True. They were going to kill me, but I just cut off their arms, letting them off easily. So, how could it be regarded as brutal? I should already be considered as overly generous and kind. If they weren’t disciples of Skycloud Pavilion, I would’ve let none of them alive. Moreover, Qu Yuan has sent them to interrupt me while I was repairing the Iron Dummy Array. They deserved some punishment for their offence. On the contrary, if I was no match

for them, I'm afraid that the repercussions will not only be me being injured or killed, but also losing the symbolic array of Skycloud Pavilion as no one could repair them anymore, it would be a much bigger crime and would bring tremendous loss to the sect," said Jiang Chen with fervor and assurance.

It gave Gao Yang and the other two the urge to spurt out blood. That was right, they felt like spewing out blood because what Jiang Chen said made them feel aggrieved. They could temporarily forget their broken arms, but now they were being blamed for the incident, which rendered them speechless.

"I can't only listen to your side of the story. Gao Yang, Qu Yuan, share with us your side of the story." Yuwen Ting looked over at Qu Yuan and Gao Yang.

"Law Enforcement elder, this disciple only asked three of my followers to check the progress of the Iron Dummy Array. After all, the array was the work left behind by Master Ouyang. It will be a great loss to Skycloud Pavilion if something bad happens to it. Disciple was merely concerned about it," said Qu Yuan, despite the fact that he was not in the mood to speak, he still wanted to have his revenge on Jiang Chen more than anything.

"That's right, elder. Brother Qu has asked us to go there with the intention of only checking the progress of the repair. Unexpectedly, when we arrived at the place, we found out that Jiang Chen was letting a dog do the repair of the array. This was definitely a blasphemy and an insult to Master Ouyang. Naturally, we had to stop them, but Jiang Chen was enraged, he then cut off our arms mercilessly."

Gao Yang sobbed out his encounters.

"Jiang Chen, you do have the nerve. How could you let an animal repair the array which you destroyed? This is blasphemy to Master Ouyang. This fact alone is sufficient to pass you a heavy sentence," shouted Yang Shu.

While hearing the word animal, Jiang Chen's eyes turned cold. A surge of faint killing intent rushed out of his body. He shifted his cold gaze to Yang Shu, saying, "Old bastard, you better clean your mouth. Big Yellow's my brother."

"Son of a b*tch! What did you just say?"

Yang Shu was angered that a puny inner sect disciple dared to call him an old bastard. After so many years that he had been in Skycloud Pavilion, this was the first time someone disrespected him. If it wasn't because of the presence of Tianji Zi, what Jiang Chen said could already cost him up to a hundred of his life.

"I said that your mouth is old and stinky."

Jiang Chen showed no sign of fear. He definitely wouldn't be polite to the one who reprimanded him. Even though he knew that this old man had an extremely high status, he also knew that this kind of status was useless here.

Also, although the elder was a late Golden Immortal expert, Jiang Chen would never put him in his eyes. With the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Yang Shu wouldn't be able to kill him. Additionally, Jiang Chen cultivated the dragon transformation skill, which always gave him an edge over his opponents. It would only be a matter of time before his combat strength or cultivation surpassed Yang Shu's.

"Haha! Good, good. You really are fanatic. Elder Yuwen, see, this is a conceited young man who have no respect for the elderly and the rules of the sect. So, how could such a man be of any use to us?"

Yang Shu laughed loudly and spoke to Yuwen Ting.

"Jiang Chen, your attitude is really disappointing. No disciple as arrogant as you has ever appeared in Skycloud Pavilion before."

Yuwen Ting's tone turned colder. A wave of faint pressure drifted towards Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1194 – Tian Muyun Emerged

The pressure radiated from Yuwen Ting was formidable. That was the pressure of a peak late Golden Immortal expert, a pressure not everyone could stand. Of course, Jiang Chen wasn't an ordinary person. With his strong spiritual power together with the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, such pressure was considered nothing to him.

“There's no need to scare me, Elder Yuwen. You don't have to care about what methods I used to repair the Iron Dummy Array, because the array has been fully repaired and it has been perfected as well. I suppose you all have already checked the condition inside the palace secretly,” said Jiang Chen straightforwardly without fear.

After hearing this, many elders couldn't help but nod silently. It was true that they had already seen the condition of the Iron Dummy Array. They too had to admit that the array was nicely repaired and perfected. Although it had lost seven dummies, the overall power of the array had become even stronger than before. So if they talked about the Iron Dummy Array, Jiang Chen should receive praise and rewards for his contribution and effort.

“We will put the matter of the Iron Dummy Array aside for now. The fact of you maiming the three disciples remains. I can forget the life-and-death battle between you and Qu Yuan, but you have spoken arrogantly and shown no respect to the elders, the rules and the Law Enforcement Hall. By putting these two crimes together, I must pass you a sentence to defend the dignity of the Law Enforcement Hall,” said Yuwen Ting solemnly.

When all of these things came out of his mouth, they all sounded perfectly justified.

“Elder Yuwen, I suggest that you hand the punishment part to me. Based on the situation, it isn't excessive to sentence him to

death, but considering that he's a true disciple, I can be kind enough to let him live, but I have to turn him into a cripple just like Qu Yuan," said Yang Shu with a sneer.

"Nonsense!"

Tianji Zi raged. "Yuwen Ting, Yang Shu, are you really treating me as nothing? None of you have the right to decide the punishment of my disciple. With my presence today, I would like to see who has the nerve to touch Jiang Chen."

It was obvious to Tianji Zi that Yuwen Ting and Yang Shu had cooperated to find a reason to punish Jiang Chen. Adding the fact that Jiang Chen had maimed three disciples and had disrespected the Law Enforcement Hall, the whole situation was becoming less favorable.

However, he was fearless and wasn't a person that anyone could easily bully. Since it was impossible to justify with reason, he should stop doing so and just confront them with force.

"Tianji Zi, don't go too far with this. This is the Law Enforcement Hall, it isn't a place where you can turn wild!" clamored Yang Shu.

In fact, once Tianji Zi went mad, the situation would give everyone a headache. Sometimes, even Tian Muyun had no solution to deal with this pioneer and sometimes, even Daoist Yufeng had to lower himself to speak to Tianji Zi nicely. When Tianji Zi was really pushed to the limit, he would listen to no one. Moreover, Tianji Zi had the ability to calculate the future, which was a great help to the growth of Skycloud Pavilion. Although Tianji Zi had only reached the peak of mid Golden Immortal realm, he had a pivotal position in the sect. Even his combat strength wasn't any weaker than a late Golden Immortal expert. This could be seen from his previous fight with Yang Shu.

"What's the big deal about it? Since you all are being unreasonable, don't blame this old man for being impolite. Once

you provoke this old man, this old man will even demolish this whole damn hall!”

Tianji Zi had gotten so mad that even Jiang Chen couldn't help but give a thumbs up to him.

“Humph! Tianji Zi, no one in Skycloud Pavilion has ever dared to come here and create trouble, this place represents the highest authority of Skycloud Pavilion. What you are doing right now is challenging our authority. I have already shown you sufficient quarters. If you continue to mess around, I won't hesitate to punish you as well. Don't even think that you can get away from here with just your Divination Art.”

Yuwen Ting was infuriated. As the highest authority of the Law Enforcement Hall, no one has ever dared to challenge him.

For an instant, the entire hall was filled with fury that would explode into a great war at any second.

Hu... Hu...

At this time, an invisible wave blew across the main hall. It contained a stormy aura that made people around suffocate. Then, everyone saw the void above the hall trembled, and a good-looking man walking out of it.

He was a half-step Immortal King supreme expert who had mastered the spatial force. By utilizing the spatial force, he could emerge anywhere at any time.

He was young, highly-esteemed and stately. When these adjectives combined together, it represented a single person, Tian Muyun.

No doubt, it was Tian Muyun who had suddenly appeared. He was the supreme ruler in Skycloud Pavilion, a half-step Immortal King supreme elder and a legendary figure in One-Line-Sky. As the master of the pavilion, he would normally not show himself in such a situation, however, today's incident had attracted his

attention, it only indicated the seriousness of the matter.

“Master.”

After seeing Tian Muyun, everyone, regardless of their status and cultivation, stood on their feet and saluted him with respect. Although they were much older than Tian Muyun, and some of the elders was even old enough that they had watched him grow up, none of them dared to show any signs of disrespect. This only showed that despite Tian Muyun's young age, he had a very high prestige in Skycloud Pavilion. To put it bluntly, Tian Muyun's prestige had already surpassed Ouyang He's after two years of being the pavilion master.

When Jiang Chen saw Tian Muyun, he couldn't help but show a hint of coldness and disgust deep in his eyes, but it was well-hidden by him. For a supreme expert like Tian Muyun, any changes in your expression would be detected by him.

Tian Muyun nodded casually. There was a faint trace of superiority radiating from his body, which made him look majestic and imposing. He didn't bother looking at the other people, not even Yuwen Ting and Yang Shu. His gaze immediately fell upon Jiang Chen.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

Tian Muyun asked in a very flat tone, but everyone could clearly see the different expression in his eyes when he looked at Jiang Chen. That was the expression of a genius looking at another genius. It was a very complex expression as it consisted of appreciation, praise, jealousy and some hostility.

“Disciple is Jiang Chen, greetings, Master.”

Jiang Chen naturally couldn't show any signs of disrespect in front of him. Immediately, he held his fists and saluted.

“Incapacitating a half-step Divine Immortal while being only a half-step Heaven Immortal? Your talent surely is above mine.”

Tian Muyin said.

Instead of reprimanding Jiang Chen's faults, he praised him.

Chapter 1195 – The Evil Abyss

However, Jiang Chen could see sharpness and a strong sense of jealousy within those praising eyes, as if he wanted to see through everything of Jiang Chen.

No doubt, Tian Muyun was a scary opponent, but Jiang Chen wasn't a small figure either. It wouldn't be easy for Tian Muyun to know everything about Jiang Chen.

“Thank you for master's appreciation,” said Jiang Chen neutrally.

“Jiang Chen, today's incidents happened because of you. I have already known all of them. It's good news for Skycloud Pavilion to have a genius like you, but now that I'm here, I will have to settle this conflict. You have maimed your fellow the disciples and crippled a true disciple as well. Elder Yang Shu certainly won't let this matter rest if you do not receive any kind of punishment. It's always my duty to take care of the emotions of elders. Additionally, you have rebutted with the elders of the Law Enforcement Hall rudely and disregarded the law, you should also be punished for this. So, are you willing to accept the punishment that I'm going to sentence you now?” said Tian Muyun with a slight smile. His tone was soft and light, but it carried an indisputable aura within.

“Master.”

Tianji Zi's facial expression changed slightly. Tian Muyun waved to interrupt him before he could say out a word.

“Elder Tianji, I'm now talking to Jiang Chen, please don't interrupt.”

Tian Muyun darted Tianji Zi a glance then shifted his gaze back to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen had a hint of a cold smile in his heart. Tian Muyun

showed a trace of hostility to him. It might seem pretty uncommon, but this was within his expectation.

Tian Muyun was a person who had a very keen perception. Perhaps he could feel that Jiang Chen's existence was a threat to him. Therefore, he began to display more of his hostility and less of his appreciation.

As a matter of fact, there was a difference between Tian Muyun and Ouyang He. Ouyang He belonged to the old generation. He was hoping that some peerless genius would emerge from his sect and help the sect prosper. This was because Ouyang He had already reached his limit. Getting to the Immortal King realm was basically the limit of his cultivation. It was impossible for him to advance any further, but it was not the same to Tian Muyun who was still young and had lots of potential. There was a common and incurable psychological sickness in someone like him. The sickness was to be malevolent to anyone who had a greater talent than him.

Jiang Chen was the evident example. Jiang Chen's monstrous talent had indirectly outshined him. Although he was already the master of the pavilion who possessed the highest status, his paranoid views on monstrous geniuses still existed.

However, Tian Muyun's unfriendliness didn't concern Jiang Chen at all, because he had already regarded Tian Muyun as his enemy which he would kill in the future. On the contrary, if Tian Muyun admired him and wanted to nurture him like Tianji Zi, he would feel uncomfortable instead and might find it hard to take Tian Muyun's life when the time came. So it became easier when Tian Muyun had taken the initiative to be hostile to him. In the future, Jiang Chen wouldn't have to hesitate even a second before avenging Ouyang He's life.

"I wonder what kind of punishment it will be," asked Jiang Chen with interest.

"Rest assured. I will surely cherish a rare genius like you. After

all, you will represent the future of Skycloud Pavilion. Neither will I hurt you, nor sentence you to any horrendous punishment. Instead, I will give you a chance for tough-trial,” said Tian Muyun with a smile.

“Oh?”

Jiang Chen sounded surprised, but his intuition told him that this wasn't going to be an easy trial.

“Jiang Chen, I will give you the chance of practicing in the Evil Abyss. I reckon this punishment will account for your crimes. If you are able to survive in the Evil Abyss, your future achievements will transcend even mine.”

“Whoa...”

When the name of the Evil Abyss was spoken, the entire main hall was filled with exclamation. This was something that not even Yang Shu had imagined. He never thought that Tian Muyun would give Jiang Chen such a heavy punishment. In fact, this wasn't a punishment at all, but a death sentence.

“Master, you are sending Jiang Chen to death. Don't you think that such a punishment is too heavy?”

Tianji Zi lost his patience and his eyes turned red. It was imaginable how angry he was right now. If it wasn't because of the presence of Tian Muyun, he would have already gone wild.

“Hehe, why is Elder Tianji being so emotional? Master Tian is doing this for the sake of Jiang Chen. A peerless genius like Jiang Chen will surely have great achievements after his trial in the Evil Abyss.”

Yang Shu chuckled. Currently, his mood had turned better. In his point of view, sending Jiang Chen into the Evil Abyss was even more satisfying than incapacitating Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, of course, you can choose not to accept it. I won't force you on this.”

Tian Muyun stared at Jiang Chen with a I-will-not-force-you face.

Jiang Chen understood what Tian Muyun was thinking very well. Although he had no idea what the Evil Abyss was, judging from Tianji Zi and Yang Shu's expression, it had to be a vicious place, otherwise it wouldn't be called 'Evil Abyss'.

"Jiang Chen, don't agree to it." Tianji Zi spoke with haste.

"Master, what kind of place is this Evil Abyss?" asked Jiang Chen with curiosity.

"The Evil Abyss is an independent space that connects One-Line-Sky and a dozen other huge domains. There are demons and all kinds of ferocious creatures inside. In addition, there are also crooked and evil cultivators there. The whole space is full of evil, blood and killings. The only law inside is the law of the jungle. Even I, your master, can't keep myself intact after entering such a place. All this while, countless of sects and empires in those dozen of domains have sent their criminals to that evil place to die. Almost everyone who went into the Evil Abyss died. So if you are going to there, it's basically no different than seeking death," said Tianji Zi with solemnity.

Chapter 1196 – Agreed

The Evil Abyss had a notorious reputation that changed people's expression instantly. Inside that place consisted of powerful ancient demons. No one would dare to step into such a place. Not even the most outstanding genius would dare to use this place for a tough-training. Regardless of how dazzling and proud Tian Muyun's path had been, he had never stepped into this place.

Good, Tian Muyun, for using this trick on me.

Jiang Chen sneered coldly in his heart. It seemed like Tian Muyun had already anticipated that he wouldn't accept this challenge. This was how Tian Muyun would find his sense of superiority by attacking the weakness of his rival.

"Jiang Chen, it's a rare opportunity for you to enter the Evil Abyss for tough-training. As long as you agree to it, I will never go into Qu Yuan's matter anymore," said Yang Shu with a smile.

He was intrigued to know what Jiang Chen's answer would be, but everyone on the scene had already concluded that Jiang Chen would never take this chance. After all, not everyone had that kind of guts to enter the Evil Abyss.

"Whether I enter the Evil Abyss or not has nothing to do with you. Furthermore, Qu Yuan can only blame himself for what happened to him."

Jiang Chen darted a cold glance at Yang Shu, not giving him face.

"You can decline the offer, Jiang Chen." Tian Muyun continued.

However, after hearing the description of the Evil Abyss, he started to feel interested in that place. He was a mortal who had lived two lives. He had faced countless of hardships and had gone to countless of dangerous places.

Challenges would always stir up a man's passion which made one's life more perfect. This was what Jiang Chen had always been

looking for. Whenever he went to such places, miracles would always happen.

Jiang Chen had already achieved his first objective in coming to One-Line-Sky—becoming a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. The second objective was to kill Tian Muyun, it was something that he needed to work hard for because only with a powerful cultivation and combat strength would he be able to achieve this objective. But then again, it was impossible to achieve this in a short period of time as advancing in needed time.

Thus, in order to speed up his growth, a dangerous and tough training was inevitable. Now that he had become an inner disciple and also a true disciple, there were too few places that he could practice in One-Line-Sky. The Evil Abyss was exactly the place that he needed the most for his training. There would be plenty of massacre, bloodshed and cruelty in that place, but this was also what boiled his blood in excitement.

“I accept the punishment.”

Everyone, including Tian Muyun, thought that Jiang Chen would decline the offer, but unexpectedly, he said yes.

“Uh...”

The situation made all the people on the scene dumbfounded. Even Tian Muyun was at a loss of words, he had expected to see the timid side of Jiang Chen.

“Is this kid really out of his mind? How can he even agree to this?”

“A newborn calf is surely not afraid of tigers. Apparently, Jiang Chen has no idea how scary the Evil Abyss actually is. Going into the Evil Abyss is no different than dying.”

“This kid surely is the most arrogant man that I’ve ever seen. He doesn’t even put the Evil Abyss in his eyes, but he’s doomed to be a dead man once he enters that place.”

.....

Many of them shook their heads and sighed. It was beyond their imagination that Jiang Chen would agree to this offer.

“No, Jiang Chen, you will only seek your death by doing this. You have no idea about the terror of the Evil Abyss.”

Tianji Zi disapproved on the spot. As long as he could change Jiang Chen’s mind, he still had ways to keep Jiang Chen intact.

“Master, I have already said yes, and I think we’d better not disobey the orders of the pavilion master,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“You lunatic.”

Tianji Zi shook his head, sensing the craziness of his disciple. No one had ever been able to maintain such calmness and composure when it came to the Evil Abyss. As such, even being a master of Jiang Chen, he had to admit that he was impressed by his disciple.

“Jiang Chen, are you sure with your decision? You still have a chance to rethink your about it,” said Tian Muyun with a frown.

The fact that Jiang Chen agreed with the punishment caused him discomfort.

“Disciple is certain of it, disciple has already promised to undergo the tough-training in the Evil Abyss. However, this disciple humbly requests for three days of time before heading to the Evil Abyss,” said Jiang Chen in a very solemn tone.

He was not scared of the Evil Abyss. No one would have thought that he now had a strong interest in the Evil Abyss.

“You do have the courage. Very well, I will give you three days’ worth of time. Three days later, I will personally open the passageway to the Evil Abyss.”

After that, Tian Muyun vanished in a flash.

At the present moment, the fiery aura in the main hall had

reduced to its lowest. Since Jiang Chen had already agreed to go to the Evil Abyss, there was nothing else Yuwen Ting and Yang Shu wanted to say.

“Jiang Chen, you...ai!”

Tianji Zi shook his head and sighed. He wasn't sure if he should scold Jiang Chen right now. Once Jiang Chen made the promise, it had become a fact. Now, he could only hope that Jiang Chen could really survive the Evil Abyss, even though he knew that there was only a slim chance.

But viewing this from another angle, Tianji Zi was quite proud of his disciple for having the boldness to enter the Evil Abyss. Having such a forthright disciple made his face glow with delight, even though he wasn't the one who trained Jiang Chen from the start.

“No need to worry, master. Disciple already knows what to do. Let's go to Tianji Mountain now,” said Jiang Chen, then he turned and left.

His top priority right now was to learn the Divination Art. That was also the reason he requested three days of time. He had seen how Tianji Zi gained the advantage over Yang Shu just by using the Divination Art. If he was able to cultivate this technique, it would surely be of great help when he arrived at the Evil Abyss.

The elders of the Law Enforcement Hall couldn't help but sigh when they stared at the fading images of Jiang Chen and Tianji Zi. Some of them felt that it was a waste that such a rare genius was gone permanently. Looking at this matter from another angle, it could be regarded as a significant loss to Skycloud Pavilion.

“Elder Yang Shu, you have already achieved your objective. Jiang Chen will surely die in the Evil Abyss,” said Yuwen Ting.

Yang Shu patted Qu Yuan's shoulder. “Master can only help you do this much.”

Chapter 1197 – The Great Divination Art

Comparing to the other elders' private summits, Tianji Mountain seemed a lot shabbier, however, it was incomparably clean and elegant. The top of the mountain was covered with mist, making it look like a fairyland. Anyone who saw it couldn't help feeling refreshed.

At this moment, two people landed on the summit simultaneously. Tianji Zi couldn't help but turn and yelled at Jiang Chen. "Dammit! You callow brat! Do you have any idea how dangerous and scary the Evil Abyss is? How could you agree to it so quickly? Did you know that you have just signed a death contract? It was a DEATH CONTRACT!"

Tianji Zi seemed somewhat emotional. Red-colored light glowed from his eyes.

When Jiang Chen saw how Tianji Zi reacted, he didn't feel angry. Instead, he felt warmth from his master's concerns and worries. This was only the second time they met. Although they were nominally regarded as master and disciple, Tianji Zi had spared no pity for himself to fight Yang Shu and challenge the authority of the Law Enforcement Hall just for Jiang Chen. And now, he was even still concerned of Jiang Chen's safety. It was undeniably a true caring heart of a person.

"There's no need to be too emotional, master. Master knows the Divination Art, right? Why don't you calculate disciple's future to see if disciple will encounter any danger?" Jiang Chen shrugged and said with a smile.

"Humph! You thought this old man didn't want to calculate your fate? Unfortunately, I have no idea what's wrong with you as I can't divine your fate, it's seems like your fate is ethereal and is probably beyond the scope of the Divination Art. That's why I still can't calculate any of your future."

Tianji Zi harrumphed coldly. He had tried more than once to predict Jiang Chen's future, but found nothing in the end. Otherwise, he wouldn't miss the chance of calculating the dangerous encounters that Jiang Chen would face in the Evil Abyss.

“What?”

After listening to this, Jiang Chen almost exclaimed. This was a situation that he totally didn't think of. When even the Divination Art couldn't calculate his future, it only showed how unique his fate really was.

Could this be related to the dragon transformation skill?

Jiang Chen frowned. The only possible explanation right now was his dragon transformation skill. Presently, he had already fully condensed the dragon body and the 14th level of the incredibly divine Ancestral Dragon Pagoda that could surpass everything. In addition, he would never forget the image and the roar of the ancestral dragon that he saw and heard in his innermost soul.

The dragon transformation skill was extensive, profound and endless and was still a mystery to Jiang Chen. Even he himself wasn't able to tell his own future and was still clueless of the relationship between him and the Ancestral Dragon. It also puzzled him that there was an even greater and more profound being that could surpass the Divination Art.

“There's no doubt about it. You are indeed an abnormal being. The mighty Divination Art is a profound art, but because of master's limited cultivation, master has not yet fully mastered it, which was why I couldn't calculate a single thing out of you.”

Tianji Zi couldn't help but sigh as he cared for this miraculous disciple very much. From the moment he took Jiang Chen as his disciple, he had already made up his mind to nurture Jiang Chen into an expert that would make him proud one day.

“Master, men’s life must always be dynamic and full of encounters. Take my life for example, it will be a life filled with plentiful excitements and blood-boiling incidents. In the pathway of every successful cultivator, there will always be countless of obstacles. What I needed to do is to kick those obstacles aside. Under the feet of those who desired to be superior are loads of white bones, and I’m going to be the scariest of them. I want to become the most terrifying thing to my opponent. I love a tough-trial that will put me on the verge of death as it could always stir up my passion and heroic spirit. So even if Master Tian didn’t speak about the Evil Abyss, I will still go there once I found out about it. What I can say is that this has been my choice and decision.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated. Every word he said was punchy and sonorous. A man like him consisted of ardor that sometimes not only attracted women, but also men.

Tianji Zi stared at Jiang Chen in astonishment. He suddenly felt that he had underestimated his disciple again. The tyrannical aura that Jiang Chen’s words radiated had even influenced him.

That was right. That was how men should live, or else life would be in vain.

“Very well, disciple. Master surely has made the right decision. You’re right that we should do things that people are afraid of and we shouldn’t be afraid of other people. So, go into the Evil Abyss with courage. I believe that you will make master proud.”

Tianji Zi’s attitude changed all of a sudden and he stopped reprimanding Jiang Chen’s decision. He now had a slight anticipation of the outcome, anticipating Jiang Chen to create miracles by walking out of the Evil Abyss alive. He could already imagine how glorious that would be.

And for some reason, he had an inexplicable confidence in Jiang Chen. He had the feeling that not even the dangerous and deadly

Evil Abyss could stop Jiang Chen's footsteps and believed that Jiang Chen could survive this trial.

"Disciple definitely won't let master down."

Jiang Chen bowed before Tianji Zi. This was the first ever stranger that he had gotten close to ever since his arrival in this world. This relationship was different from his relationship with Ouyang He. His relationship with Ouyang He was an obligation, whereas the relationship with Tianji Zi was a true relationship between a master and disciple.

"You deliberately delayed your departure for three days so that your master has enough time to impart you the Divination Art, am I right?" Tianji Zi said with a smile.

"Master sure is wise to guess it out."

Jiang Chen chuckled. Previously, he was fascinated by the Divination Art. Since he was going to the Evil Abyss soon, he had to utilize these three days to grasp it, so that he could use it to his advantage the moment he arrived in the Evil Abyss.

"Good. Master has acquired the mighty Divination Art unintentionally when I was young and it has become a part of my life since then. I have never taken any disciple because I couldn't find a genius that I could impart my skills to. The great Divination Art is an incomparably profound technique that is extremely difficult to cultivate. Master has only cultivated the first level after spending a large part of my life cultivating it. To put it in another way, master has only reached the beginning stage of the great Divination Art." Tianji Zi said.

His expression suddenly turned grim when he mentioned the Divination Art. Apparently, he had great reverence and admiration for this supreme skill.

Chapter 1198 – Imparting

“The Great Divination Art.”

Jiang Chen’s facial expression changed. The name of the technique alone indicated the scariness of this secret art. What astounded Jiang Chen was the fact that Tianji Zi had only reached the early stage of the technique. He wouldn’t dare imagine how powerful the art would be once it had been cultivated to the stage of completion.

“Disciple, master will now impart the Great Divination Art to you. Your cultivation in this technique will solely depend on yourself. There’s a very important requirement for practicing this art, that is the strength of the soul. Back in the Iron Dummy Array, when I was observing you, I didn’t think that you could break the array, however, you managed to do so which meant your soul is stronger than any ordinary cultivator. And you also have a very keen perception. These will be your biggest advantages when it comes to cultivating the Great Divination Art.” Said and praised Tianji Zi.

“The Great Divination Art is divided into four realms, namely, the Spiritual Intelligence realm, Heavenly Vision realm, Heavenly Will realm and Divination realm. The Spiritual Intelligence realm is just the introductory stage of the Divination Art. Once you reached this realm, you will be able to predict the good and the bad of the future. As you advance further and reached the Heavenly Vision realm, you will be able to use it in battle. Master has also just broken through to this realm and used it to draw against Yang Shu in battle. This is the terrifying feature of the Heavenly Vision realm.”

Explained Tianji Zi. Comparing Heavenly Vision realm to the Spiritual Intelligence realm, it was a notch higher than the latter, but in the Great Divination Art, the Heavenly Vision realm was merely one of the early stages, as the truly scary stages were the

Heavenly Will realm and Divination realm.

“Amazing. I wonder how powerful the Heavenly Will and Divination realm will be.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered. His interest in the Great Divination Art started to grow again. He initially thought that this secret art was already terrifying enough when it could be used in battles. Unexpectedly, this was only the infant stage of the Divination Art.

“Your guess is right. The Great Divination Art is an ancient secret art. Master has acquired it out of luck. Once you reach the peak of this secret art, you can align yourself with the Heavens. It’s a pity to think that master wasn’t able to get to that level because of my limited potential. I’m already quite satisfied that I have reached the Heavenly Vision realm. As for the later stages of the Divination Art, I suppose I don’t have the luxury to think about it. Moreover, in the records of the Great Divination Art, no one has ever succeeded in this cultivation except for the supreme one who invented this secret art.”

Tianji Zi’s tone became grimmer. It only showed how much he respects the Great Divination Art.

“The Heavenly Vision realm and Heavenly Will realm can be both used in battle. The Heavenly Vision realm allows you to know your opponent’s means and plans in advance. Once you reached the Heavenly Will realm, you can use it to calculate your opponent’s combat technique and cast that combat technique out perfectly, completely catching your opponent off guard.” Said Tianji Zi.

After listening to this, Jiang Chen’s eyes brightened. Even though he was able to copy his opponent’s combat technique in battle using the dragon transformation skill and the Great Soul Derivation Technique, its skill was still limited. If the combat technique he encountered was too complicated, he would fail to copy it out. Moreover, the dragon transformation skill and Great

Soul Derivation Technique can only imitate the form and power of the opponent's combat technique. However, the Great Divination Art is able to fully imitate the opponent's combat technique, this was what made it scarier. In other words, once one reached this stage, the opponent can no longer hide his secrets from the caster."

Of course, there was a limitation to this divination. If the opponent's cultivation and strength was too high, this art wouldn't work. The person would be suppressed by his opponent's strength and killed before he could even try to calculate.

"What about the Divination realm, master?"

Asked Jiang Chen curiously. His eyes were full of anticipation.

"The Divination realm is the highest realm of the Great Divination Art. Otherwise, it wouldn't be named using the word 'Divination'. According to the records of the Great Divination Art, once the person reached this stage, he can control the future of time, calculate the past and future. He can even manipulate the law of space and time, turning himself into the Divination and become one with the Heavens. That is a realm which we can't imagine. Although you have an overflowing talent, it's basically impossible for you to reach that kind of stage as it takes tremendous amount of luck and fortune. Master has a very high hope on you. I will be contented as long as you reach the Heavenly Will realm."

Tianji Zi patted Jiang Chen's shoulder with a smile, feeling very satisfied with this disciple, however, he didn't dare hope that Jiang Chen could advance the Divination Art to the Divination realm, because no matter how monstrous Jiang Chen was, there was no way that he could reach that stage.

The Divination realm!

Jiang Chen's eyes seemed obsessed. He had already immersed himself in imagining the Great Divination Art, which would allow him to control the time and space and calculate the past and

future. It was unimaginable that such a skill could combine with the Heavens.

“Disciple, this is the cultivation method of the Great Divination Art, all of which is written on here. I will now pass it to you, I hope that you won’t disappoint me.”

Tianji Zi turned his palm and an old and yellowish piece of paper appeared in front of Jiang Chen’s face. Tianji Zi’s palm was shaking as he held the paper as though this thin piece of paper weighed a million pounds. This indicated how much Tianji Zi valued it.

Jiang Chen received the paper with care. When he held it in his hand, he instantly felt a different sensation. Although the paper was tattered, it radiated a strong ancient Qi. On top of it was densely written in small characters. Above the characters was a big map of the starry sky filled with lingering aura of the Great Dao and Divination. For an instant, Jiang Chen was completely attracted to it.

“Thank you, master.”

Said Jiang Chen solemnly. He was touched when he saw that Tianji Zi was willing to give out such a valuable secret art to him. The supposedly superficial relationship of a master and disciple has turned into genuine feelings in this moment.

It was always good to have genuine feelings as it could always touch someone’s heart.

“You don’t have to be polite with your master. Now, you only have three days. Three days later, you will enter the Evil Abyss. So utilize the time well to cultivate. Even if you can only comprehend a trace of the Great Divination Art, it will be very useful to you when you are in the Evil Abyss.”

Said Tianji Zi. To him, it was fundamentally impossible for Jiang Chen to master the Great Divination Art, because it wasn’t easy to

cultivate this secret art.

Chapter 1199 – The Divination Map

Spiritual Intelligence > Spiritual Wisdom

Jiang Chen saluted Tianji Zi and went into seclusion. He couldn't wait to explore the Great Divination Art. Although Tianji Mountain wasn't any kind of fancy summit, it had the necessary conditions for cultivation. Being a true disciple, he had his own private place of cultivation – a courtyard with a beautiful scenic view.

After entering the courtyard, Big Yellow flew over and joined. Tianji Zi knew about the relationship between these two, so he didn't stop them. It wasn't anything strange as there were also plenty of disciples who liked to keep demonic pets.

Tianji Zi didn't find Jiang Chen to avoid interrupting his cultivation. In his point of view, it was extremely hard for Jiang Chen to comprehend the content of the Great Divination Art with just three days, let alone stepping into the stage of Spiritual Wisdom. He knew how important time was to Jiang Chen now, so he had decided to create the most serene condition for Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen, have you really promised to go to the Evil Abyss?”

Big Yellow asked immediately after entering the room.

“Apparently, yes. Why? Do you know anything about this Evil Abyss?”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow with curiosity. Big Yellow seemed to have a certain understanding of the Immortal World. He might have knowledge that was far beyond Jiang Chen's imagination.

“I don't know, but judging from that old man's reaction, this Evil Abyss must be an extremely dangerous place.” Big Yellow shook his head.

“When have we ever been afraid of danger? We even went to the

Devil World back then despite the danger and what happened eventually? We gained full control of that place.”

Jiang Chen shrugged and showed a who-cares-look.

“It’s true that we have never been afraid of anything. The more dangerous the place, the more exciting it is. It would be extremely boring to let master dog continue staying in Skycloud Pavilion. However, that Tian Muyun sure was ruthless for sentencing such a heavy punishment on you. Could it be that he has already guessed that you are going to be a threat to him?”

Said Big Yellow curiously. It was the first time that Tian Muyun saw Jiang Chen, but that didn’t make him less hostile to this new disciple. As the master of Skycloud Pavilion, Tian Muyun was supposed to feel happy for having such a genius in the sect. If one thought that Tian Muyu could detect Jiang Chen’s ulterior motive and hostility towards him, it was a serious mistake because Jiang Chen had never shown even the slightest hostility to Tian Muyun. He had never told anyone about the secret of Ouyang He. So, no matter how smart Tian Muyun was, it would be impossible for him to figure out the connection between Jiang Chen and Ouyang He.

“He was just trying to find a sense of superiority from me, which is basically one of the similarities amongst geniuses. However, I’m afraid that not even he would think that I would accept this punishment.”

Jiang Chen smiled. Given his intelligence, he was crystal clear about Tian Muyun’s thought process. Unfortunately, Tian Muyun was destined to be disappointed, there was no way that he could obtain the sense of superiority from Jiang Chen.

“Okay, okay. I can see that your passion for the Divination Art is running high. Master dog won’t disturb you anymore, but give master dog a piece of lotus leaf for my seclusion in preparation for the Evil Abyss adventure.” Big Yellow extended his paw in front of Jiang Chen.

Generously, Jiang Chen took out another piece of lotus leaf and gave it to him. As Big Yellow had helped him repair the Iron Dummy Array, he deserved such a reward.

After receiving the lotus leaf, he swaggered into one of the rooms and started his seclusion. This time, they were heading into the Evil Abyss that was full of evil and killings that it could turn people's face pale at the mention of it. Thus, even Big Yellow didn't dare show neglect to this and wanted to enhance his cultivation base as much as possible within these three days. In order to survive well in this menacing Immortal World, one had to have a strong cultivation base. Everything else besides that would be as insignificant as floating clouds.

As Big Yellow had already gone into seclusion, Jiang Chen naturally wouldn't delay anymore. Despite the simplicity of his room, every essential item and equipment needed for cultivation could be found inside. At the centre of the room was a golden cushion. The concentration of Immortal Qi in here was many folds better compared to the previous places and it was definitely greater than the level of Immortal Qi in the outer sect's Martial Palace. Additionally, with golden cushion acting as the convergence point of the Immortal Qi flow, it made the cultivation process very efficient and effective.

Jiang Chen sat cross-legged on top of the cushion and quickly adjusted his state to the best condition. His pair of bright eyes had fallen on the scripture of the Great Divination Art.

Richly endowed by nature, start circulating the Divination Art.

These charming nine words were written on top of the ancient paper. Below them was the densely written chant. Every chant was profound and difficult for people to understand. After the chant about the Spiritual Wisdom realm, there were the chants of Heavenly Vision and Heavenly Will realm, however, there was no chant of the Divination realm that could be found, except for an imprinted picture of a starry sky.

Jiang Chen certainly wouldn't underestimate this starry sky. The strong aura of divination made him feel that it wasn't similar to any kind of ordinary technique.

"This is a divination map. I would like to know how powerful the secrets of this map has."

Jiang Chen placed all of his attention on the divination map, circulating his Great Soul Derivation Technique that moved like tides across the divination map back and forth. At the same time, he circulated the dragon transformation skill to assist his searching. All along, he succeeded in any kind of combat techniques and cultivation law without encountering any bottlenecks or obstacle during the process with the help of both the dragon transformation skill and the Great Soul Derivation Technique.

Hu... Hu...

Jiang Chen's soul power drifted across for nearly ten minutes. The supposedly stationary divination map began to circulate all of a sudden as if it had been stimulated. Then, he saw a vast expanse of ethereal storm, sweeping marks and colourful luminous spots that looked either real or unreal. They were boundless and were everywhere.

He felt as if his soul had landed on a vast expanse of sea, continuously being overturned and ripped apart.

Barf!

Jiang Chen's body shook, then coughed up a mouthful of blood. Immediately, he withdrew his soul power from it.

"That's a very profound realm that not even I can touch it."

Jiang Chen was shocked. His face was pale, he could feel as if his soul was going to be crushed. Although it was only for a brief moment, his clothes were already drenched in sweat. Thinking back about that dangerous situation, he couldn't help but feel

somewhat frightened. The divination map had turned into a whirlpool that almost sucked in his entire soul. If it wasn't because of his quick response, his soul would have been devoured. After losing his soul, he would end up like a true idiot and faced inconceivable consequences.

“It was my mistake to comprehend the divination map first before even reaching the Spiritual Wisdom stage. This can only work by taking one step at a time. Otherwise, I will enter into a state of Qi Deviation and end up hurting myself.”

Jiang Chen heaved a sigh of relief, he immediately found the key reason of the encounter.

Chapter 1200 – What a Pity!

Spiritual Intelligence > Spiritual Wisdom

According to the records, the Great Divination Art was a supreme secret art that had been passed down to innumerable amazing geniuses over the years, but no one was able to reach the great realm or even touched the last stage—the Divination realm.

Jiang Chen got what he deserved by forcing himself to understand the Divination Map before he even mastered the early stage of the Divination Art. Regardless of how monstrous his talent was, there was no way he could comprehend the profundity of the Divination Art in just a dozen minutes. Despite understanding this fact, he couldn't help but venture into the Divination Map, but fortunately, he reacted quickly. Otherwise, the consequences would be beyond imagination.

However, he might not know that he was the first one who made the Divination Map circulate on itself. Tianji Zi had been studying the Great Divination Art for years, but had never tried to study the Divination Map, let alone cause changes in the map. Jiang Chen however was able to activate it on his first attempt. Undeniably, it was a miracle.

If Tianji Zi knew about this, he would certainly be shocked to death. It was somewhat too ridiculous when Jiang Chen achieved something that he couldn't achieve in his lifetime in just a dozen of minutes.

Jiang Chen didn't dare to put his mind into the Divination Map again. He circulated the spirit of wood and dragon transformation skill to start healing his injuries. He took exactly an hour to be fully recovered. This showed how serious the injuries he suffered was. It was definitely more serious than the injuries he suffered from battles.

If Jiang Chen was replaced by another person, that person would

need at least a month's time to recover from such an injury. So Jiang Chen surely was an abnormal being for taking only an hour to fully recover.

After recovering, he took in a deep breath and concentrated on studying. Taking one step at a time, he immersed himself into the Great Divination Art. His objective within these three days wasn't a big one, he just hoped to reach the Spiritual Wisdom realm.

However, if Tianji Zi knew about this, he would surely laugh at Jiang Chen. It was a joke to declare reaching the Spiritual Wisdom stage in three days' time. Back when Tianji Zi first cultivated the Divination Art, he took a year and a half to advance to the early stage. Given the knack that he had for cultivating the Great Divination Art, it was absolutely impossible to get to the early stage within three days.

Spiritual Wisdom was the symbol of wisdom. It was the combination of a person's wisdom and spirituality. This was the essential prerequisite before cultivating the Great Divination Art.

Everyone had their own destiny and fate. Only those who had great fortune and root of wisdom could cultivate the Great Divination Art. Both were indispensable and essential conditions before cultivating this great art. Therefore, not everyone could cultivate this technique. If someone who lacked the root of wisdom and luck cultivated this technique, he would not be able to make even a bit of progress in his lifetime.

On the other hand, Jiang Chen's fortune and root of wisdom was already evident. Along the path of his journey, he had been the symbol of luck and his potential had undoubtedly gifted him the prerequisite to cultivate the Great Divination Art. Putting it in another way, the Great Divination Art seemed to be invented specifically for Jiang Chen to cultivate. It was only a matter of time before he surpassed Tianji Zi and he believed that it wouldn't be very long.

Soon, Jiang Chen had buried himself in the art, deeply attracted by the chants and its profundity.

During the period of Jiang Chen's cultivation, the news about him spread around in Skycloud Pavilion like wildfire. Ever since Jiang Chen arrived in the pavilion, it had never been peaceful. It began from the uproar in the outer sect, to the Iron Dummy Array in the inner sect, the life-and-death battle with Qu Yuan, and now the Evil Abyss. Adding all these events together, they happened only within a short period of time. They were afraid that only Jiang Chen in the history of Skycloud Pavilion could stir up the pavilion so badly.

Without a doubt, Tian Muyun was the most dazzling figure in the history of Skycloud Pavilion, but Jiang Chen's emergence had almost blotted him out.

However, it was a pity that Jiang Chen was forced to go to the Evil Abyss. In many people's point of view, going into the Evil Abyss was basically no different from going to hell.

"I really didn't expect that Master Tian would sentence such a heavy punishment on Jiang Chen. It's wasteful to lose such an awesome genius just for the sake of Elder Yang Shu's face."

"What else do you know? I heard that it was merely a suggestion from Master Tian and Jiang Chen was given the option to decline, but he had agreed to it unexpectedly. Truly, this is similar to a newborn calf not being afraid of tigers for agreeing to go into the Evil Abyss. It seems like he is clueless of how scary the Evil Abyss is."

"That's right. He's absolutely an idiot to accept such an offer. The Evil Abyss is a dangerous place that gathered all sorts of evils. There was threat and killings every single day. Putting the ancient devil and other ferocious demonic beasts aside, even the humans inside are malicious and violent. This time, Jiang Chen is being overly confident for thinking that he is invincible after defeating

Qu Yuan. He surely doesn't know how powerful the beings in the Evil Abyss are. Not even Golden Immortal experts are willing to go inside. As such, Jiang Chen's only end is death the moment he entered such a place."

"Jiang Chen is going to face his end this time. It will make Skycloud Pavilion peaceful again when this man is gone, however, it's still a huge loss to the sect to lose such a powerful genius."

"I do admire Jiang Chen's courage very much, regardless of whether he can walk out of the Evil Abyss alive. Not everyone could do what he did. Try asking every genius in Skycloud Pavilion and I'm sure none of them will be willing to go through such a punishment."

.....

In the outer sect, inner sect, core disciples and even in various institute of elders, they were all discussing about the matter of Jiang Chen. No one had ever thought that Master Tian would get involved in this incident and that the Law Enforcement Hall would conclude in such a way. Although Master Tian sentenced Jiang Chen a punishment by ordering him to go into the Evil Abyss, Jiang Chen was given the choice to decline the punishment as well. Thus, everyone was puzzled by the fact that Jiang Chen actually accepted the punishment.

As only very few of them thought that Jiang Chen would survive this trial, plenty of them felt that it was a pity for losing such a monstrous genius. The Evil Abyss was a place that could turn people's face pale at the mention of it. It was like a human purgatory. So, it wasn't as easy as it sounded for one to get out of there alive.

Table of Contents

[Dragon-Marked War God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1101 – Dragon Sword’s Storm](#)

[Chapter 1102 – The Fate of Yi Yuan Association](#)

[Chapter 1103 – Trample on the Front Gate](#)

[Chapter 1104 – Make the Choice to Death](#)

[Chapter 1105 – Oppressive Internal Feelings](#)

[Chapter 1106 – The Unyielding Slave](#)

[Chapter 1107 – Kill Unblinkingly](#)

[Chapter 1108 – The Experience](#)

[Chapter 1109 – Night Invasion of the Ore Mine \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 1110 – Night Invasion of the Ore Mine \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 1111 – Leaving the Name after the Matter](#)

[Chapter 1112 – The Untraceable Trace](#)

[Chapter 1113 – Leave after the Kill](#)

[Chapter 1114 – The Divine Ancestral Dragon Pagoda](#)

[Chapter 1115 – The Eight Immortals of One-Line-Sky](#)

[Chapter 1116 – The Dog that Courted Hate](#)

[Chapter 1117 – Fu Hui](#)

[Chapter 1118 – Regenerative Lotus](#)

[Chapter 1119 – The Extreme Courage](#)

[Chapter 1120 – The Desolate Mountain Range](#)

[Chapter 1121 – The Combat Devil Physique](#)

[Chapter 1122 – Mid Earth Immortal realm](#)

[Chapter 1123 – The Yellow Poisonous Scorpion](#)

[Chapter 1124 – The Thirteenth Level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda](#)

[Chapter 1125 – Plunges to Death](#)

[Chapter 1126 – The Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull](#)

[Chapter 1127 – Fighting with the Halberd](#)

[Chapter 1128 – Surrendering](#)

[Chapter 1129 – An Unexpected Harvest](#)

[Chapter 1130 – The Twin Brother](#)

[Chapter 1131 – Subduing another One](#)

[Chapter 1132 – The End of the Demon Kings](#)

[Chapter 1133 – The Fourteenth Level](#)

[Chapter 1134 – The One-Line Mountain](#)
[Chapter 1135 – The Chance Had Finally Come](#)
[Chapter 1136 – The Moment of Crisis](#)
[Chapter 1137 – The Intelligent Move](#)
[Chapter 1138 – The Arrival of the Eight Immortals](#)
[Chapter 1139 – It Was Ouyang He](#)
[Chapter 1140 – Being Tricked](#)
[Chapter 1141 – The Prey](#)
[Chapter 1142 – Enemies Often Cross Each Other's Path](#)
[Chapter 1143 – Trampled to Death by Hoof](#)
[Chapter 1144 – The Unparalleled Divine Pill](#)
[Chapter 1145 – The Refinement](#)
[Chapter 1146 – The Scary Advancement](#)
[Chapter 1147 – Five Successive Advancements](#)
[Chapter 1148 – The Separation](#)
[Chapter 1149 – The Skycloud Pavilion](#)
[Chapter 1150 – The Institute of Outer Sect Elders](#)
[Chapter 1151 – The Martial Palace and the Plan](#)
[Chapter 1152 – It Was All Sucked Dry](#)
[Chapter 1153 – Being Filled with Indignation](#)
[Chapter 1154 – Arrogant and Domineering](#)
[Chapter 1155 – He's Jiang Chen!](#)
[Chapter 1156 – There's No Way We Can Live Our Lives like This](#)
[Chapter 1157 – Being Humiliated by the Dog](#)
[Chapter 1158 – Suing the Man at the Institute of Elders](#)
[Chapter 1159 – Niu Mang Makes the Trip Personally](#)
[Chapter 1160 – Grand Elder Yuan Kui](#)
[Chapter 1161 – Difficult! That's Too Difficult!](#)
[Chapter 1162 – Jiang Chen's Condition](#)
[Chapter 1163 – Breaking the Iron Dummy Array \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 1164 – Breaking the Iron Dummy Array \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 1165 – Breaking the Iron Dummy Array \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 1166 – Encountering Dummies that Only Got Stronger](#)
[Chapter 1167 – Tianji Zi](#)
[Chapter 1168 – Continue with the Fight](#)
[Chapter 1169 – The Primitive Collision](#)
[Chapter 1170 – half-step Heaven Immortal](#)
[Chapter 1171 – Nobody Wasn't Startled](#)
[Chapter 1172 – The True Disciple](#)

[Chapter 1173 – The Flamboyant Master and Apprentice](#)
[Chapter 1174 – Rise to Fame](#)
[Chapter 1175 – Repairing the Iron Dummy Array](#)
[Chapter 1176 – The Trouble Has Knocked the Door](#)
[Chapter 1177 – Bringing Shame upon Oneself](#)
[Chapter 1178 – They Couldn't Afford to Provoke What They Provoked](#)
[Chapter 1179 – Qu Yuan](#)
[Chapter 1180 – Qu Yuan's Fiery Anger](#)
[Chapter 1181 – Life-and-Death Stage](#)
[Chapter 1182 – Surprising the Inner Sect](#)
[Chapter 1183 – If You Can't Afford to Give Ground, then Don't Do It](#)
[Chapter 1184 – Evenly Matched](#)
[Chapter 1185 – Nine Ways to Perish](#)
[Chapter 1186 – The Ace Card](#)
[Chapter 1187 – Fusion of Dragon and Sword](#)
[Chapter 1188 – Incapacitating](#)
[Chapter 1189 – Yang Shu's Anger](#)
[Chapter 1190 – The Terrifying Divination Art](#)
[Chapter 1191 – The Master of Law Enforcement Hall](#)
[Chapter 1192 – Discrediting Someone](#)
[Chapter 1193 – Fierce Opposition](#)
[Chapter 1194 – Tian Muyun Emerged](#)
[Chapter 1195 – The Evil Abyss](#)
[Chapter 1196 – Agreed](#)
[Chapter 1197 – The Great Divination Art](#)
[Chapter 1198 – Imparting](#)
[Chapter 1199 – The Divination Map](#)
[Chapter 1200 – What a Pity!](#)